



Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.



E. H. W. MEYERSTEIN
BEQUEST TO THE
UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

This book
was acquired for the
MEYERSTEIN
COLLECTION
OF THE
ENGLISH FACULTY
LIBRARY
with the help
of a grant made under
this bequest



39351

xm 74.5 $\bar{L}iv$



THE
CABINET CYCLOPÆDIA.

LONDON:
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-Street-Square.

THE
CABINET CYCLOPÆDIA.

CONDUCTED BY THE
REV. DIONYSIUS LARDNER, LL.D. F.R.S. L. & E.
M.R.I.A. F.R.A.S. F.L.S. F.Z.S. Hon. F.C.P.S. &c. &c.

ASSISTED BY
EMINENT LITERARY AND SCIENTIFIC MEN.

Biography.

THE BRITISH ADMIRALS.

WITH AN INTRODUCTORY VIEW
OF THE
NAVAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

BY
ROBERT SOUTHEY, LL.D.
POET LAUREATE.

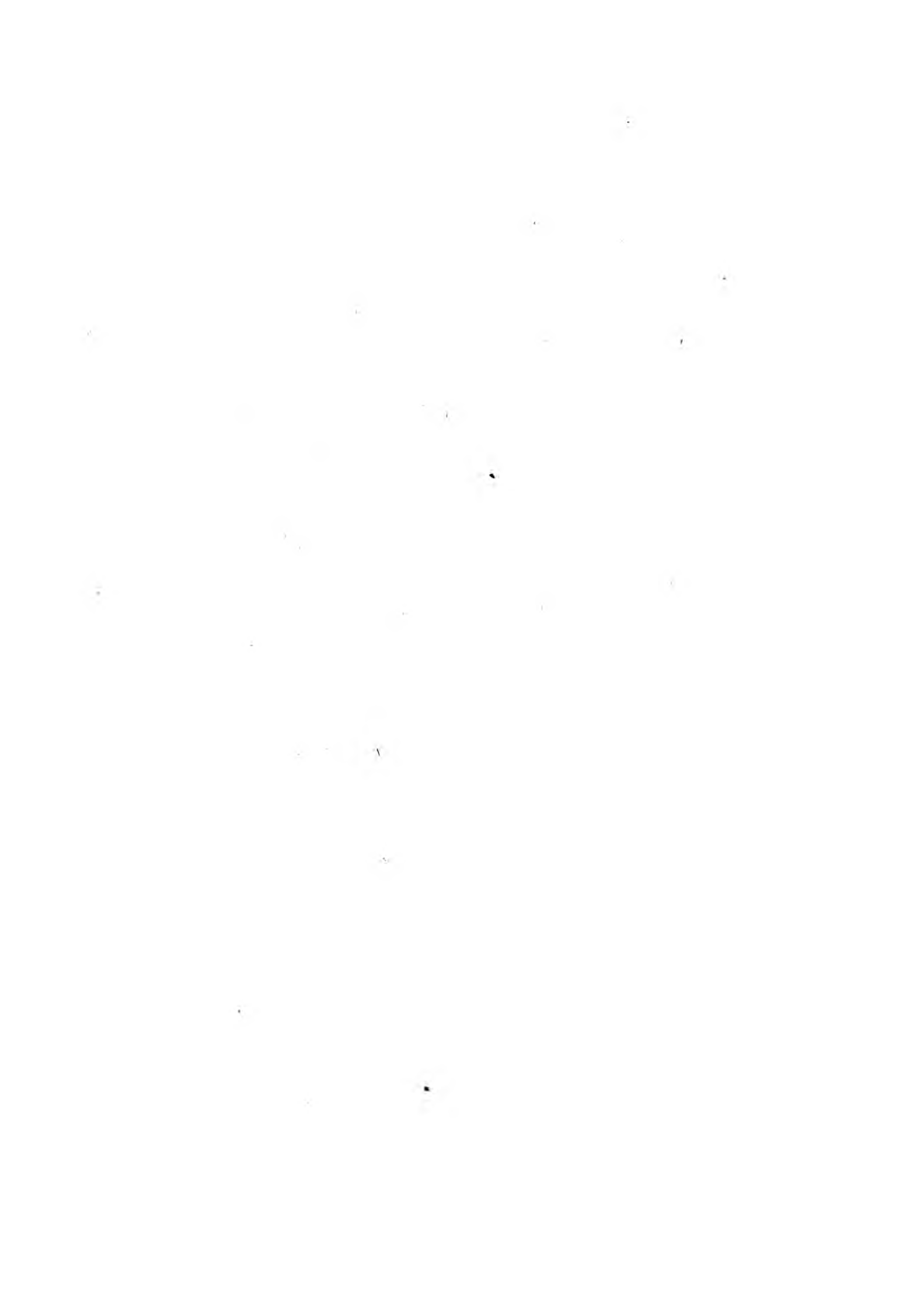
VOL. III.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR
LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, GREEN, & LONGMAN,
PATERNOSTER-ROW;
AND JOHN TAYLOR,
UPPER GOWER STREET.

1834.





LIVES
of the
BRITISH ADMIRALS,
WITH AN Introductory view OF THE
NAVAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

BY
ROBERT SOUTHEY, LL. D.

Poet Laureate.

Vol. III.



London:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, GREEN & LONGMAN, PATERNOSTER ROW,
AND JOHN TAYLOR, UPPER, GOWER STREET,
1834.



ANALYTICAL AND CHRONOLOGICAL

T A B L E

OF THE

NAVAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

GEORGE CLIFFORD, THIRD EARL OF CUMBERLAND. 1558—1666.		Page		Page
	Born in Brougham Castle -	1	Monson's Treatment -	12
	Entered at both Universities	2	Story of Manoel Fernandes -	13
	Married to the Lady Margaret Russell -	2	1592. The Earl's fourth Voyage -	17
1586.	His first Expedition sent out under Withrington -	2	Command transferred to Captain Norton -	17
1587.	He goes too late to the Relief of Sluys -	3	The Santa Cruz runs on Shore, and is burnt by the Crew -	18
1588.	Serves as a Volunteer against the Spanish Armada -	3	Capture of the Madre de Dios -	19
	Commands an Expedition against the Spaniards -	3	This the first East Indiaman that had been taken -	21
1689.	Sails for the Azores -	3	Its Cargo catalogued at Leadenhall -	22
	Arrival of the East India Ships at Terceira -	5	Distribution of the Prize Money -	23
	They escape him -	5	Dimensions of the Prize -	24
	He takes the Town of Fayal Wounded in an Attack upon some Brazilian Ships at St. Mary's -	6	1593. The Earl's fifth Voyage -	24
	Takes a rich Prize from St. Juan de Ulloa -	7	His Expedition to the West Indies -	26
	Wreck of the Prize -	7	1594. His eighth Voyage -	27
	His Sufferings on the Voyage home -	7	Destruction of the Cinco Chagas -	28
1591.	His third Voyage -	9	Another Carrack successfully defended -	33
	The Dutch vindicated for trading with Spain and Portugal -	9	1598. Scourge of Malice built by the Earl, the largest Ship that had ever been built by a Subject -	33
	Monson taken Prisoner -	10	1596. Unsuccessful Action with a Squadron from Lisbon -	34
	The Expedition returns to England -	11	1597. The Earl's last Expedition -	35
			He repairs his Masts at the Berlings -	36
			Waits for the outward-bound Indiamen -	37

	Page		Page
They defer their Voyage for that Year - - -	39	1567. Second Voyage to Guinea and the West Indies -	86
He sails for the Canaries -	39	Slaves taken at Sierra Leone	87
Lands in Lancerota -	41	1568. He trades by force at Rio de la Hacha -	88
The Earl's Views in this Voyage - - -	43	Intercourse at Carthagena refused -	88
He sails for the West Indies	44	He puts into St. Juan de Ulloa after a Storm -	89
Refreshes his Ships at Dominica - - -	45	Negotiations there - - -	89
Harangues his Men - - -	47	Arrival of the Spanish Fleet	90
Lands in Puerto Rico -	49	Agreement with the Spaniards - - -	91
March along the Coast	50	Their Treachery - - -	92
English repulsed at the Causeway - - -	53	Hawkins loses one of his Ships in the Action -	94
They land on the smaller Island - - -	55	The Distress in the remaining Ship - - -	95
The Town taken - - -	56	Half his People are set ashore on the coast of Tabasco -	96
The Fort capitulates -	57	He puts into Pontevedra in Distress - - -	97
Intention of retaining the Conquest - - -	58	Conclusion of his disastrous Voyage - - -	97
Mortality among the English	62	Spaniards and English in this Case both in the wrong -	98
They forsake their Conquest	63	Birth and Parentage of Drake - - -	99
The Earl escapes Shipwreck on his Voyage home -	64	All his former Gaining lost in his last Voyage - -	101
His expensive Habits -	65	A naval Divine tells him he may lawfully right himself upon the King of Spain -	101
SIR JOHN HAWKINS AND SIR FRANCIS DRAKE.			
1530. Hawkins's Father the first Englishman known to have traded to Brazil - - -	67	1572. First hostile Expedition to the Spanish Indies -	101
1562. Hawkins's first Voyage to Guinea - - -	68	Enters Nombre de Dios -	103
Origin of the Negro Slave Trade - - -	69	Wounded, and compelled to retreat - - -	104
1564. His second slaving Voyage	70	Forms an Alliance with the Maroons - - -	105
His good Orders for the Fleet - - -	70	Obtains his first Sight of the South Sea - - -	105
Flitting Islands seen from the Canaries - - -	71	Intercepts some Treasure	106
The Samboses and the Sapiés	72	Effects his Retreat from the Isthmus - - -	107
Unsuccessful Attack upon a Negro Town - - -	73	1573. Arrival at Plymouth -	107
He sails for the West Indies	74	John Oxenham - - -	108
The Spaniards forbidden to trade with him - - -	75	1575. He crosses the Isthmus, builds a Pinnace, and enters the South Sea first of any Englishman - - -	109
Transactions at Borburata	77	Makes some Prizes, and lands all his Booty -	110
Commencement of the illicit Trade with the Spanish Main - - -	78	The Spaniards pursue and defeat him - - -	111
He compels the Spaniards to lower their Customs -	79	He is betrayed by the Maroons, and put to Death at Lima - - -	112
He fixes his own Prices by Force at Rio de la Hacha	81	1576. Andrew Barker - - -	113
Adventures of an unfortunate Spaniard - - -	82	His Property seized by the Inquisition in the Canaries - - -	113
He relieves the French Colony in Florida - - -	84		
Coat of Arms granted him for opening a new Branch of Trade - - -	85		

ANALYTICAL AND CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.

vii

	Page		Page
Fits out two Barks to re- venge himself -	113	Enters the Port of Valparaiso	143
Disputes among his People	114	Takes a Ship there, and plunders the Port -	144
Barker killed by the Spa- niards -	115	Loses a Man in the Co- quimbo -	144
Mutineers imprisoned on their Return -	116	Takes two Ships at Arica	145
Causes of mutual Exasper- ation between the English and Spaniards -	116	Arrives at Callao before it was known at Lima that he was in the South Sea -	146
The Inquisition the chief Cause -	116	Rifles the Vessels in that Port, and sails in quest of the Treasure Ship -	147
Private War -	117	Captures it, and gives the Captain a Receipt in full for the Cargo -	149
Feeling excited by the Con- duct of the Spaniards towards the Indians -	118	Drake dismisses the Portu- guese Pilot -	150
Drake's Expedition to the South Sea -	119	His Letter to Master Winter	150
1577. Smallness of his Force	120	Alarm along the Coast	151
Adventure at Mogadore	121	He determines to seek for a North-west Passage -	152
Lands on the Isle of Maya	122	Repairs his Ships at an Island off the Coast of Nicaragua	152
Takes a Portuguese Pilot out of a Prize -	123	Lands at Guatulco -	153
Doughtie accused of Pecua- tion -	123	Advances to Lat. 48° N. -	154
Drake bleeds his Men when they approach the Equator	123	Gives up the Attempt, puts back, and enters Port St. Francisco -	154
They lay in Seals in the Plata -	124	Transactions with the Na- tives -	155
Intercourse with the Natives	125	Drake names the Country New Albion -	161
Mode of decoying the Amer- ican Ostrich -	125	Sails for the Moluccas	162
Breaks up one of his Ships	126	Transactions in Ternate	163
Two of his People killed at Port Julian -	128	Story of a Chinese Exile	167
Proceedings against Dough- tie -	129	Drake repairs his Ship at an Island near Celebes -	168
His Execution -	133	Narrowly saved from Ship- wreck -	169
Remarks on this Transaction	131	Reaches Java -	170
Falsehoods concerning it	132	Returns to England	171
Drake justified by the Portu- guese Pilot and by the Spaniards -	135	Elizabeth visits his Ship, and knights him -	172
He enters the Strait of Ma- gellan -	136	Bernard Drake of Ash -	172
Renames his Ship -	136	Disputes concerning their Arms -	172
First Description of the Pen- guin -	138	Expedition of 1585 -	174
Possession taken of the South Sea for the Crown of Cas- tille by Vasca Nuñez de Balboa -	139	The Squadron driven by Storms from Bayona -	175
Drake enters it -	139	Treats with the Governor of Galicia at Vigo -	175
One of his Consorts is lost	140	Speculations of the Spaniards concerning Drake's De- signs -	176
The other deserts him -	140	He touches at the Canaries	177
Fate of a Boat's Crew which he loses on the Coast of Tierra del Fuego -	141	Lands at the Cape de Verds	177
Drake driven to Cape Horn	142	Takes Possession of Santiago	178
He leans over the last Point of Land -	142	Burns the Town -	179
He is wounded at the Island of Mocha -	142	Proceeds to the West Indies	180
		City of St. Domingo -	180
		Drake enters it -	183
		The City ransomed -	186
		He proceeds to Carthagena	186

	Page		Page
Takes the Town	- 188	Invasion again threatened	- 224
Mortality there	- 189	Expedition delayed in consequence	- 225
Farther Proceedings abandoned	- 191	Descent of the Spaniards at Penzance	- 225
The Captains give up their Shares of the Ransom	- 192	Expedition sails	- 226
Carthagena ransomed	- 193	Ordered to attack Puerto Rico	- 226
Fleet waters at Cuba	- 193	They touch at the Canaries	- 226
Arrives at the River St. Augustine	- 194	The Spaniards in the West Indies apprised of their Intentions	- 227
Drake enters the Fort of St. Juan de Penos	- 195	Expedition halts at Guadaloupe	- 228
Burns the City of St. Augustine	- 196	One of the Ships captured by a Spanish Squadron	- 228
Brings away Raleigh's Colony from Virginia	- 197	The Prisoners tortured	- 228
Return of the Expedition	- 198	Death of sir John Hawkins	- 229
Tobacco said to have been first introduced into England	- 199	Drake anchors too near the Forts of Puerto Rico	- 229
1587. Drake appointed to command an Expedition against the Coast of Spain	- 199	He attacks the Ships in the Harbour, and is repulsed	- 230
He enters the Road at Cadiz, and takes or destroys about thirty Vessels	- 200	Leaves Puerto Rico	- 231
Sweeps the Coast to Cape St. Vincent	- 201	Burns Rio de la Hacha and Santa Martha	- 232
Sends a Defiance to the Marquis of Santa Cruz in the Tagus	- 202	Enters Nombre de Dios	- 232
Sails for the Azores, and captures the San Philipe	- 202	Baskerville attempts to march to Panama, and is compelled to retreat with Loss	- 233
Drake supplies Plymouth with fresh Water	- 203	Nombre de Dios burnt	- 233
Drake Vice-admiral in the Fleet fitted out against the Armada	- 204	Sickness in the Fleet	- 234
1589. Journey of Portugal	- 205	Death of sir Francis Drake	- 234
Attempt on Corufia	- 206	The Fleet sails for England	- 236
Miracle by Santiago	- 209	Action with a Spanish Fleet	- 237
Honourable Conduct of the Spaniards	- 211	Rejoicings of the Spaniards for Drake's Death	- 238
Maria Pita	- 212	Popular Tradition concerning Drake	- 239
Spaniards defeated at Puente de Burgo	- 213	His Family and Character	- 241
Slaughter of the Fugitives	- 214		
The Siege raised	- 215	THOMAS CAVENDISH, ESQ.	
Sickness in the Fleet	- 215	Early Prodigality	- 243
Ill Consequence of having expended Time there	- 215	1586. He fits out an Expedition for the South Sea	- 243
Peniche surrenders to Antonio	- 216	Transactions at Sierra Leone	- 243
Drake sails to Cascaes	- 217	At Brazil	- 244
Failure of the Expedition	- 217	Cavendish enters the Strait	- 245
Vigo burnt	- 219	Finds the Remains of a Spanish Colony there, and leaves them in their Misery	- 246
Reply to the Complaint of the Hanse Towns	- 221	History of that Colony	- 246
1594. Expedition to the West Indies, under Hawkins and Drake	- 223	Sarmiento sent from Peru to survey the Strait	- 247
Improved State of the Spanish Navy	- 224	Alva opposes the Intention of fortifying it	- 247
		Valdes sent from Spain to establish a Colony there	- 248
		Disasters on the Way	- 249
		Sarmiento founds in the Strait la Ciudad de Nombre de Jesus	- 250

ANALYTICAL AND CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.

ix

	Page		Page
Leaves it to go in search of Succours - - -	251	Kind Usage of a Portoguzeze Prisoner - - -	295
The Colonists are left to their Fate - - -	251	He burns one of his Ships for want of Hands - - -	295
Cavendish names their deserted Settlement Port Famine - - -	255	Another deserts him - - -	296
He enters the South Sea - - -	255	The Dainty proceeds alone - - -	297
Lands on the Isles of Mocha and S. Maria - - -	255	Penguin Islands - - -	297
Hernandez makes his Escape Cavendish at Arica - - -	257	Penguin Hunt - - -	298
Tortures his Prisoners - - -	258	Ducks' Nests - - -	298
Burns Paita - - -	259	Difficulties in the Straits - - -	299
Isle of Puna - - -	260	He enters the South Sea - - -	301
He loses some of his Men there - - -	261	Touches at the Isle of Mocha - - -	302
The Place laid waste in Revenge - - -	261	Ransoms some Prizes at Valparaiso - - -	303
Guatulco burnt - - -	263	Difference concerning the Distribution of the Booty arranged - - -	305
Story of the Cross there - - -	264	Preparations against them at Lima - - -	307
Water obtained by digging in the Sands - - -	266	Hawkins saved from an Action by the Weather - - -	309
The S. Anna Galleon taken Prisoners landed in the Peninsula of California - - -	268	The Spaniards insulted at Callao on their Return - - -	310
Their Escape - - -	270	Hawkins tarries too long on the Coast - - -	311
Cavendish at the Philippines - - -	271	The Spanish Squadron come up with him - - -	313
His Reception at Java - - -	273	Desperate Action - - -	315
St. Helena - - -	274	Hawkins surrenders on the third Day of the Fight - - -	320
Letter to the Lord Chamberlain on his Return - - -	275	The Spanish Commander acts generously - - -	321
1596. Cavendish sails on a second Expedition - - -	277	Opinions concerning the Prisoners and the Usage of good War - - -	323
Time wasted at Santos - - -	277	The Dainty carried to Panama, and there named La Visitacion - - -	324
Sufferings in the Straits - - -	278	The Terms broken - - -	325
Disputes in the Fleet - - -	279	Sir Richard changes his Religion - - -	326
Davis parts Company - - -	279	He obtains his Release, in conformity to the Terms, at last - - -	327
Eighty men lost at Espiritu Santo - - -	280		
The Roebuck deserts - - -	280		
Cavendish's dying Letter - - -	281		
SIR RICHARD HAWKINS.		SIR RICHARD GREENVILLE.	
Commercial Projects of the Government - - -	283	1540. His Birth and Family - - -	328
Instructions to Fenton - - -	283	1566. Serves against the Turks at the Battle of Lepanto - - -	328
Ill Success of his Voyage - - -	284	Serves in Ireland - - -	328
Sir Richard Hawkins projects a Voyage to the East Indies - - -	285	1585. Sails with Raleigh for Virginia - - -	328
He builds a Ship, which his Mother-in-law names the Repentance - - -	285	Lands at Mosquito Bay - - -	329
Elizabeth re-names it the Dainty - - -	286	Takes a Spanish Frigate - - -	329
Mishap in the Thames - - -	287	Sails for Hispaniola - - -	330
Departure from Plymouth - - -	289	Mutual Courtesies of the English and Spaniards in Hispaniola - - -	330
Scurvy in the Fleet - - -	291	Departure of Sir Richard Greenville. He reaches Virginia - - -	331
Cure for Swearing - - -	291		
Courteous Transactions at Santos - - -	292		

X ANALYTICAL AND CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.

	Page		Page
His Vengeance for the Theft of a Silver Cup by an Indian - - - -	331	His desperate Valour	334
His Return to England	331	His Wounds and State of his Ship - - - -	335
1586. He revisits the new Colony	331	The Gunner by his Orders about to blow her up	336
His Return to England	331	He is prevented by the Cap- tain and Master, who strike	336
1591. He sails for the West Indies with Lord Thomas Howard	332	Reception of Greenville on board the Spanish Admiral	336
The English Squadron sur- prised by the Spanish Fleet at Flores - - - -	333	His dying Words and Death	337
Greenville in the Revenge separated from the Squad- ron - - - -	333	Wreck of the Revenge with seventy Spaniards on board	338
		Ascribed in the Azores to Greenville's Ghost - - - -	339

LIVES
OF
THE BRITISH ADMIRALS,
ETC.

GEORGE CLIFFORD, THIRD EARL OF
CUMBERLAND.

1558—1606.

AMONG the naval adventurers who distinguished themselves during queen Elizabeth's reign, there was no one who took to the seas so much in the spirit of a northern sea king as the earl of Cumberland. Some of his most noted contemporaries were sailors by their vocation, some became so incidentally when called upon in the queen's service, and others pursued that course with the hope of repairing a broken fortune, or of raising one: but it was this nobleman's mere choice, which he followed to the great injury of his own ample estates, and to the neglect of all his private and domestic duties.

George Clifford, in the male line of his family, fourteenth baron Clifford of Westmorland, and sheriff of that county by inheritance, and in the same descent thirteenth lord of the honour of Skipton in Craven, and also lord Vipont and baron Vesey, was born in his father's castle at Brougham, on the 8th of August, 1558. Few names are more conspicuous than that of

Clifford in the York and Lancaster wars, none more distinguished for fidelity to the cause it had espoused ; and Shakspeare has given it a wider renown than could have been conferred by genealogists and chroniclers. To this family, also, Fair Rosamond belongs ; and the Shepherd Lord, whose memory is embalmed in everlasting verse. Lord Clifford was yet a boy when his father began to treat concerning his marriage with a daughter of Francis, second earl of Bedford ; and he was in the twelfth year of his age when his father died. Upon the first intelligence that such an event was likely, Bedford, upon the alleged ground of this marriage-treaty, made suit to the queen for the wardship, and it was
1570. granted him. The boy was at Battle Abbey when the earl died at Brougham : no doubt he had been placed there to receive the first part of his education in the family by whom that venerable edifice was then possessed. It seems not to have been unusual in those days for youths of rank to connect themselves with both universities ; thus this earl is said to have been educated at Peter House, Cambridge, and also to have studied at Oxford, under the tuition of Whitgift, afterwards archbishop ; “ and here he obtained some knowledge in the arts, and especially in the mathematics, which did not only incline him thereto, but rendered him more fit for maritime employment.” Before he was nineteen he was married in St. Mary Overy’s church, Southwark, to his long-engaged spouse, the lady Margaret Russell, who was some two years younger.

The earl is said to have excelled all the nobles of his time in tilting, so that in such exhibitions he was always the queen’s champion ; and in this and other costly recreations he consumed much of his ample patrimony. Elizabeth made him knight of the Garter, and appointed him to be one of the forty peers by whom the queen of Scots was tried, and one of the four earls who were present at the catastrophe of that tragedy. His first maritime adventure was designed for the South Seas : he did not embark in it himself, but fitted out at his

own cost the Red Dragon of 260 tons, and the bark Clifford of 130: a pinnacle of Raleigh's and another ship completed the force, and master Robert Withrington was the commander. Instead of passing the Straits of Magellan, Withrington thought he might make a more profitable venture by plundering Bahia; but the Jesuits, with their Indian archers, preserved that city; and the expedition having committed much havoc upon the coast of Brazil, with little gain, he resolved upon returning home,—a resolution which was “taken heavily of all the company,” and heard by them in silence, “for very grief to see my lord's hopes thus deceived, and his great expenses cast away.” *

In the ensuing year he sailed for Sluys, hoping to assist sir Roger Williams in the defence of that town against the duke of Parma; but it had surrendered before his arrival. He bore his part in the defeat of the armada, on board the Bonaventure, captain George Raymond, when, says Purchas, “they won that honour that no sea can drown, no age wear out.” The queen was so satisfied with his behaviour, that she gave him a commission to go the same year to the Spanish coast as general; and for his greater honour and ability, was pleased to lend him the Golden Lion, one of the ships royal, to be the admiral; but he victualled and furnished it at his own cost. After some fight he took a merchant ship in the narrow seas; but it was now late in the autumn: contrary winds baffled his course: he was compelled to cut away his mainmast in a storm, and returned when it was impossible for him to prosecute what Purchas calls his true designs. †

“His spirit remaining, nevertheless, higher than the winds, and more resolutely by storms compact and united in itself,” he obtained of the queen one of the royal navy called the Victory; with which, two small ships, the Meg or Margaret, and a caravel, set forth at his charges, and with 400 men on board he sailed

* Sarracoll, 100. Hakluyt, iii. 769—778. History of Brazil, i. 377, 378.

† Purchas, part iv. 1142.

from Plymouth in June, 1589. The Margaret being not able to endure the sea, was sent home in a few days, with two French ships, which, belonging to the party of the League, were deemed fair prizes. The earl was not very scrupulous on such occasions. He fell in with eleven ships from Hamburg and the Baltic: after a few shot, they sent their masters on board, showing their passports; these were respected for themselves, but not for some property belonging to a Jew of Lisbon, which they confessed was on board, and which was valued at 4500*l*. He then made for the Azores, hoisted Spanish colours when he came in sight of St. Michael's, and in a night expedition succeeded in cutting four ships out of the road; one of them, however, proved to be a Londoner, trading there under the Scotch flag, and with a Scotch pilot. His great object was to intercept the carracks, and so reimburse himself for all his costs. At Flores he manned his boats, and obtained refreshments as being a friend to the prior Don Antonio, whose pretended title to the Portugueze crown was acknowledged by England. "From thence rowing a ship-board, the boat was pursued two miles by a monstrous fish, whose fins many times appeared about the gills above water four or five yards asunder, and his jaws gaping a yard and a half wide, not without great danger of overturning the pinnace, and devouring some of the company." But from this, which was as formidable to the earl's boat as his ship was to a harmless trader, they at last escaped. Here he met and "accepted into consort" captain Davies, with his ship and pinnace, captain Markesbury, in a ship of Raleigh's, and the bark Lime.

The earl knew not at this time how narrowly the homeward-bound fleet from the East Indies had escaped him. Seven of its huge and richly laden vessels had sailed for Europe early in the year, separately, as they were ready, but with orders to rendezvous at St. Helena, and from thence to proceed in company, no danger being apprehended from cruisers on the first part of the voyage, but much afterwards. The richest of these

vessels suffered, on the coast of Natal, one of the most lamentable shipwrecks of which the details have been recorded; the others reached the Azores in the middle of July; and some of the smaller cruisers fell in with them when they were ill able to defend themselves. What with the length of the voyage (for they had been six months on the way), the scarcity of water and of provisions, and the bad quality of the stores that were left (for every kind of knavery was practised in the equipment of the Portugueze ships), the scurvy was making great ravages on board; and every day men who had been some days dead were discovered in the places whither they had crept that they might lie down and die in peace.* If the light vessels which played about them and harassed them, in the hope, as it seemed, of delaying them till others should come up, had been aware of their condition, they might have carried some of them almost without resistance; for there was the utmost confusion as well as misery on board. Those who were in the best plight showed no disposition to assist their weaker comrades, all seeking to secure themselves with all speed under some of their own fortresses; while the English insulted them with reproaches for their cowardice, and annoyed them with musketry, and with such small pieces as vessels of thirty tons could carry. The Portugueze, however, made their way good to Tercera, and anchored in the road before the city of Angra: there, to their dismay, they found that the island was in arms, expecting to be attacked by Drake, and that instructions had arrived from Portugal, ordering them to remain there till they should receive further directions. The alarm occasioned by the destruction of the Armada, the attempt upon Lisbon, and the activity of the English privateers, was such, that it was thought better to expose these rich ships to the danger of an unsheltered road in the worst season of the year than let them run for the Tagus. Luckily for the Portugueze officers they were not expected to

* Linschoten, c. 96.

render more obedience to the government than they could exact from their men; after a gale from the south had driven one of the ships on shore, the other captains ventured to act upon their own judgment, and sail for Lisbon, where they happily arrived.*

Some English prisoners who stole from Tercera in a small boat, having no other yard for their mainsail than two pipe staves, fell in with the earl, and gave him the unwelcome tidings that these carracks had sailed from that island a week before. This induced him to return to Fayal (where he had just taken some small Guinea ships and sent them to England): he now landed there, and took possession of the town, consisting of about 500 well-built houses. It was abandoned at his approach. He set a guard to preserve the churches and monasteries, and staid there four days, till a ransom of 2000 ducats was brought him, mostly in church plate. He shipped from the platform fifty-eight pieces of iron ordnance; and the governor of Graciosa, as if to deprecate such a visit, sent him sixty butts of wine. Here a Weymouth privateer, which arrived with a Spanish prize worth 16,000*l.*, brought news that the West India fleet was expected; and after plying three or four days to and fro in rough weather, he saw it, fifteen sail in number, enter Angra roads; but he being "too far to leeward, and they being strong and fortified with castle and fort," he could make no attempt upon them; and the pinnace which he left to observe them returned with information that they had "taken off their sails and down their topmasts, with the intention of longer stay." The earl then made for St. Michael's, and was there repelled from watering; next he went to St. Mary's, where he found two Brazilian ships laden with sugar. The islanders endeavoured to bring them ashore; but Lister, the earl's captain, "hastening the attempt in the face of the enemy, and in danger of continual shore-shot, boarded the one, cut her cables and hawser, and

* Linschoten, *Schip-vaert naer Oost, ofte Portugaels Indien*, c. 96. Linschoten was in the fleet, and he congratulates himself on having escaped *millort Cammerlandt*, p. 146.

rowed her away." Captain Davies entered the other, which was aground, and had been abandoned; but he was forced to forsake her by a fire from the shore, with the loss of two slain and sixteen wounded. In bringing out their prize the bar detained them in a position exposed to an enemy, whose force had been rashly undervalued: eighty men were killed; the earl received three shot upon his target, a fourth wounded him slightly in the side, "his head, also, was broken with stones, so that the blood covered his face," and both his face and legs were burnt with fire-balls. The prize, however, was brought off, and "the Meg being leaky," was sent with it to England.

The earl himself held his course for Spain. On the way he fell in with a Portugueze ship laden with sugar, from Brazil, and afterwards with one of the fleet which had taken shelter from him in Angra roads. It proved to be a ship of 400 tons, from St. Juan de Ulloa, laden with hides, cochineal, sugar, and silver, and the captain had with him a venture to the amount of 25,000 ducats. Full of joy at their good speed, they now resolved upon returning home. "But sea-fortunes," says Purchas, "are variable, having two inconstant parents, air and water;" and, in the words of one of the adventurers*, "these summer services and ships of sugar proved not so sweet and pleasant as the winter was afterwards sharp and painful." Captain Lister was sent in the Mexican prize for Portsmouth. She was wrecked at Helcliff, in Cornwall: every thing was lost in her, and five or six only of the people were saved. Contrary weather delayed the earl so long upon his homeward passage, that drink began to fail, and he endeavoured to make some Irish harbour, but there, too, was beaten off by the wind; and the beer and water being by that time all spent, three spoonfuls of vinegar were allowed to each man at a meal, with some small relief, squeezed out of the lees of their wine vessels. During fourteen days they had no other drink than this,

* Sir William Monson. Churchill's Coll. iii. 161.

except what they could collect in rain and hail storms, in their sheets and napkins. "Some drank up the soiled running water at the scupper holes ; others saved, by device, the running down the masts and tarred ropes ; and many licked the moist boards, rails, and masts with their tongues, like dogs. Yet was that rain so intermingled with the spray of the foaming sea, in that extreme storm, that it could not be healthful ; yea, some in their extremity of thirst, drank themselves to death, with their cans of salt water in their hands."—"By this time, the lamentable cries of the sick and hurt men for drink were heard in every corner of the ship." Many perished for want of it — "ten or twelve every night ;" and in this manner more were lost "than otherwise had miscarried in the whole voyage." The mortality, indeed, was so great, "that the like befell not any other fleet during the war.* The storm continuing added to their misery, tearing the ship in such sort that his lordship's cabin, the dining room, and the half-deck became all one, and he was forced to seek a new lodging in the hold." Such circumstances call forth, in such men, the qualities by which alone, with God's blessing, they can be overcome ; the earl, upon all occasions, encouraged his men by his promptitude, his presence of mind, and his example ; and the small store of provisions was distributed equally to the prisoners and to his own people. On the last of November they spoke a vessel, which promised them some barrels of wine the next morning ; but their hopes were disappointed, for the vessel went on shore during the night. The next day, however, he fell in with another, which helped him with some beer, but not enough for him to venture

* Sir William Monson. Churchill's Coll. iii. 162. "All these disasters," Monson says, "must be imputed to capt. Lister's rashness, upon whom my lord of Cumberland chiefly relied, wanting experience himself. He was the man that advised the sending the ships of wine for England ; otherwise we had not known the want of drink. He was as earnest in persuading our landing in the face of the fortifications of St. Mary's, against all reason and sense. As he was rash, so was he valiant : but paid dearly for his unadvised counsel ; for he was the first man hurt, and that cruelly, in the attempt of St. Mary's, and afterwards drowned in the rich ship cast away a Mount's Bay." He values that ship at 100,000*l*.

upon making for England: so as the wind served, he put into *Ventre haven*, on the west coast of Ireland. There their sufferings ended, and on the 20th of December he sailed for England. On arriving in London, he learned the recent death of his eldest son; but was comforted a few weeks after by the birth of a daughter, the lady Anne Clifford, afterwards the famous countess of Pembroke.

In this voyage he had taken thirteen prizes; and although the one which was lost was worth more than all the rest, yet the profit doubled the outlay of his adventure. Encouraged by this success, as well as inflamed by former disappointments, and being thoroughly possessed by the spirit of the age, he obtained a ship of 600 tons from the queen, with which, and with four other vessels, he set forth in 1591, at his own charge, for the coast of Spain. On the way he met with several Dutch ships, coming from Lisbon, and with spices on board, which were Portuguese property:—"So greatly," says Monson, "were we abused by that nation of Holland, who, though they were the first that engaged us in the war with Spain, yet still maintained their own trade into those ports, and supplied the Spaniards with ammunition, victuals, shipping, and intelligence against us." They who regarded the conduct of the Dutch merchants in this point of view, and made it a ground for reproaching the nation, did not bear in mind that the struggle in which the Low Countries were engaged with Spain was, in its origin, purely a religious war, and that many of these merchants might be of the Romish religion, consequently Spanish at heart, and acting as much in conformity with their own sense of duty, as Roman catholic christians and loyal subjects, as with their own immediate interest. Still less were Englishmen likely to consider, what certainly was the case, that some of the Dutch, who thus endeavoured to save Portuguese property from the privateers, were Jews of Portuguese birth or blood, trading with their brethren who secretly held the same faith, and many of whom were

desirous of removing themselves, as well as their property, from a land where they were in perpetual danger of the Inquisition. Least of all did our licensed sea rovers make allowance for the views of commercial men, who, in continuing a long-established trade with their old connections, had fair intentions, though they were compelled to use false colours, and knew that the commerce which they carried on was beneficial to their own government, and, in fact, received from that government all the secret encouragement that it could give. *

Proceeding to the coast of Spain, the earl "took good purchase," but to little profit. One prize, laden with sugar from St. Thomas's, he was forced to cast off because of an irremediable leak: another, which he sent for England, was, after long contrary winds, compelled to put into Coruña for want of victuals, and his men to render themselves to the enemy's mercy. He was not more fortunate with the spices which had been taken from the Hollanders. These were put on board a ship for England, the squadron convoyed her to the Berlings, from whence captain Monson, who was on board, was to see her safely despatched. But the other ships did not observe the directions given them: the night fell calm; and in the morning six galleys from Peniche, seeing that this

* Charnock, who hated the Dutch, says, the rapid progress of their naval power "was effected by a steady and uniform perseverance in one system, from which they never suffered themselves to be diverted for a single moment by any supposed and imaginary evil attendant on the prosecution of it. This fundamental principle (for so it might truly be deemed, being the point or centre stone from whence all their maxims of government sprang, and on which alone, according to the mode in which the fabric was constructed, they depended for support) consisted in an unalterable resolution, that public hostilities should never be permitted, even for a single moment, to interrupt private commerce. So completely bigoted were the people and the government to this opinion, that in the very height of the war the Dutch vessels entered the Spanish ports with their commodities (the want of which would have distressed their enemies extremely) with as much cordiality and unconcern as though they had been in perfect amity with them. They are even reported to have carried this idea, which by all other nations has been deemed extravagant and improper, to such an extent, as to have supplied their antagonists with ammunition and stores of different kinds, which, had they not obtained from some quarter or other, it would not have been possible for them to have carried on the war." — *Hist. of Marine Arch.* ii. 168.

Charnock did not perceive how much might be alleged in defence of the system which he thus condemns; and he has altogether overlooked the other motives noticed in the text, powerfully as they must have influenced the Dutch at that time.

vessel was at a distance from her companions, and that, by reason of the calm, they could not come up to her assistance, attacked her. A brave resistance was made: but captain Bayly and the principal men being slain, both ship and spices were taken; and Monson, with all the others who survived, made prisoners. Luckily for himself, Monson, but a little before, having surprised two vessels, merely for the sake of obtaining information, had let them go again without offering any injury to the people on board. His reason for dismissing the ships was, that they were not worth taking; but the men, thankful for their deliverance, made a favourable report of the usage which they had received at his hand*, and he now found the benefit of this good character. "Whether it was," he says, "the respect they had to the queen's ship, which was admiral of that fleet, or honour to my lord that commanded it, or hope by good usage of our men to receive the like again, I know not; but true it is, that the ordinary men were treated with more courtesy than they had been from the beginning of the war."† Some effect may also have been produced by a letter which the earl sent to the archduke Albert, at that time governor of Portugal, requesting that the prisoners might be well used; and intimating that upon their treatment would depend that of the Spaniards and Portugueze, "of whom, he presumed, he should take store."‡ This led to an agreement, by which the other prisoners were released upon terms, for the performance of which Monson was detained as hostage.

The intelligence which the earl had obtained was of some importance. The Spaniards had, with great exertions, fitted out a formidable fleet.§ As soon as he learnt this, he despatched one of his ships with the advice to lord Thomas Howard, who was then off the Western Islands, waiting to intercept the West Indian fleet; and it arrived just in time to put him upon his guard, and enable him to avoid the danger.|| But

* Monson, 460.

† Ibid. 164.

‡ Purchas, iv. 1144.

§ "Little inferior," Monson says, "to that of 1588."

|| Monson, 163, 164. Purchas, 1144.

having sent off this vessel, and being weakened by the loss of another with its crew, and especially finding the queen's ship "but ill of sail, it being the first voyage she had had to sea, he durst not abide the coast of Spain, but thought it more discretion to return to England. Thus ended the third of his maritime adventures, and nothing whatever was taken in it toward defraying the great charges of its outfit."

The naval history of England is so much beholden to sir William Monson, that it would be treating him with ingratitude, as well as disrespect, if the story of his captivity were pretermitted. For some months he was kept on board the galleys at Cascaes and Lisbon, which "was most grievous to him;" and while lying in the Tagus, he planned means of escaping, by aid of a good-natured Dutchman, the master of a Dutch vessel, which had come from Brazil; "for at that time the Portugueze freighted Holland ships in most of their long voyages, though they pretended to be in war one with another:"—The war, however, was more than a pretence, as both nations found to their cost, and nowhere more dearly than in Brazil itself. But the day before this scheme was to have been put in execution, the galleys were ordered to sea. In September, when the galleys were commonly laid up for the winter, he and eight other Englishmen were sent to the castle at Lisbon, "there to be imprisoned till a course was taken for their redemption." Each man had for his maintenance a daily allowance of $7\frac{1}{2}d.$, — "a proportion," he says, "that did not equal three-pence, according to the rate of things in England." The humanities of war will always be in proportion to the established standard of military honour, one as it were regulating the other; and in wars which are exasperated by religious hatred both are disregarded. Monson and his comrades in captivity were closely confined all the time of their imprisonment; only in the morning they resorted to the castle walls, with a guard of soldiers, — even decent privacy being refused them. "It happened," says this officer, "on

St. Andrew's day, being upon the walls at our usual hour, we beheld a great galleon of the king's turning up the river in her fighting sails, being sumptuously decked with ancients, streamers, and pendants, with all other ornaments, to show her bravery. She let fly all her ordnance in a triumphant manner, for the taking sir Richard Grenville in the *Revenge*, at the island of Flores, she being one of that fleet, and the first voyage she ever made. I confess it was one of the greatest and sorrowfullest sights that ever my eyes beheld, to see the cause the Spaniards had to boast, and no remedy in me to revenge it but in my tongue." He expressed, however, to his countrymen a hope of such future comfort, and offered to give them one on condition of receiving ten, should he live to be at the taking of that triumphal galleon: its name was not likely to escape his memory, for it was *St. Andrew*,—and some of the gala bravery which he attributed to the joy of this victory was no doubt intended in honour of its patron saint upon his festival. This passed only as an idle desire to see his word come to effect: to effect, however, it came, five years afterwards, in the *Cadiz* expedition; for the *St. Andrew* was one of the five galleons which were run ashore, and one of the two that were brought off by the conquerors, and Monson commanded in the boat that saved and took possession of her.*

A Portugueze, by name Manoel Fernandes, was at this time a prisoner in the castle. He had been in the service of the prior Don Antonio, and having emigrated with him, had returned, as his emissary, to encourage the hopes of his party, and prepare them for taking up arms in his favour when opportunity might offer: in this he was discovered, and must have suffered death, if influence and money, which have always been all but all-powerful in Portugal, had not been employed with such effect in his behalf, that after seven years' imprisonment he was now on the point of being enlarged.

* Monson, 466.

Among the persons who visited him in prison was a pilot, who was usually employed to meet the Indian fleets, with letters directing them what course they should hold, according as information had been obtained concerning the English cruisers. It occurred to Monson, that, by means of Fernandes, it might be possible to corrupt this man, and give such intelligence to the queen's ships as should enable them to fall in with the treasure fleet. He made no scruple of proposing this design to Fernandes, whose political feelings were in no degree mitigated either by time or the mercy that had been shown him ; and the pilot, who, if he were an Antonian at heart, would be hardly the less villain for betraying his trust, entered into the scheme. Monson then wrote letters to lord Burleigh, and to the lord admiral, informing them of the train which he had thus laid. As he had a page who was allowed to wait on him in his confinement, this boy was to convey the letters, and they were secreted in the soles of his shoes. Unfortunately for all parties, Monson had been obliged to use an Englishman as an interpreter. No Englishman could then reside in Portugal unless he professed the Portugueze religion ; and this person thought that he consulted best for his conscience, and safety, and interest at the same time, by disclosing the plot. The boy was seized, and marched to Belem Castle, through one of those violent rains, which can hardly be imagined by those who have never witnessed them : to that rain both he and his master were indebted for their lives ; for it was not till they had lodged their prisoner at Belem that they ripped the soles of his shoes, and the letters had by that time been so thoroughly soaked that they were quite illegible, so that no proof whatever could be drawn from them.

The government, however, had such good reason for believing the informer's story, that they proceeded against Fernandes for his old treason, and a day was appointed for executing his sentence of death. He consulted with Monson, and was provided with a cudgel and a

rope: by fixing the cudgel across two of the battlements of the wall, he might let himself down by the rope, and thus, it was hoped, take sanctuary in a church hard by: but upon closer enquiry it was found that this could not be done in the day-time. They then called to mind, that over the room in which he lay was a chamber wherein soldiers had been lodged, but which had been just left unoccupied. They cut a trap door through the ceiling of the one room, which was the floor of the other; and when night came, Fernandes, who had procured a scabbard and a wooden sword, ventured from the upper apartment, passed through the guards, who seeing the sword by his side took him for a soldier, to the wall, let himself down, and reached a place of concealment. Ere long the watch, or round as it is called, passing about the castle, espied the rope by which he had descended; the alarm was given; the prisoners were questioned; all agreed that Monson was the likeliest person to have been privy to the escape, and Monson accordingly was brought before a judge to be examined on the following morning. Every artifice was used that could either intimidate or tempt him to confess his part of the transaction; but he denied all knowledge of it; pretended that it was impossible for him to plot with a man with whom he could carry on no conversation, because each was ignorant of the other's language; and argued, that if he had done what he was accused of it could not be deemed an offence, for not having come into that land by his own will to carry on any designs against the state, but having been brought there as a prisoner of war, it was lawful for him to seek his own liberty, and to neglect no occasion wherein he might do service to his own prince and country. They could prove nothing against him that deserved punishment by the universal law of honour and arms; and he bade them be wary what violence they offered him, for he had friends in England, and was of a nation that both could and would revenge any cruelty that might be used towards him. The boldest defence was the best, and Monson took the right

ground when he spoke of the strength and spirit of the English people: though the plea would have availed little if Fernandes had been taken, for he had provided him with a letter addressed to all English captains at sea; the design being that the fugitive should put himself into a fishing boat and look out for a man-of-war to transport him to England. When the judge found that nothing could be drawn from him, he was remanded to the castle, with orders to be more strictly watched: no violence was used towards him, but no art left unattempted by which he might be entrapped.

Fernandes had faithful friends: among them he was concealed till the eagerness of the search for him had abated, and means could be taken for engaging a fishing-boat. At length he embarked, but with such ill fortune, that, having been a fortnight at sea without meeting an English ship, and wearied with sea-sickness, he was forced to return to shore, where he "lived some time among poor shepherds and herdsmen," till he thought that, disfigured as he was by fatigue, and sufferings, and exposure, and disguised also, he might venture to show himself, and ask alms. It so happened, however, that he begged at the house of one who had been fellow-prisoner with him. This person recognised him, and immediately called a servant; and Fernandes not waiting to ascertain with what intention his old comrade had done this, ran into the church thereby, and took sanctuary, thus betraying himself by his own fears. Information was immediately despatched to the cardinal prince, and he, paying no regard to the sanctuary, ordered him to be reconveyed to his old lodging in the castle; the law then proceeded against him, and he was condemned to death, not without grief to many of the beholders; for Monson says, "he was a man of much goodness and great charity." The day of execution arrived, the last acts of religion were performed, and he was brought out of prison "with a winding-sheet lapped bandelier fashion about him." Many gathered around to give him their last adieu; and on taking leave of the soldiers he re-

quested that in return for all his former kindness to them, one of them would with all speed hasten to the Misericordia, and inform the brethren of that institution of the injury done to God, themselves, and the holy Church, by taking perforce a penitent sinner out of sanctuary. Fernandes had made himself so well liked during his long imprisonment, that happy was he who could make most speed upon this errand ; and some of the brethren making no delay hastened on horseback to the place of execution, " where they found poor Senhor Fernandes ready to commend his spirit to God, and the hangman as ready to perform his office." Their interference was effectual, under a government which implicitly conformed to whatever was required of it in the name of the Church ; and thus his life was saved. Before this occurred Monson had been released ; the conditions, for the performance of which he was detained in pledge, having been performed.*

The queen had given command " not to lay any Spanish vessel aboard with her ships, lest both might together be destroyed by fire ;" and in this injunction the earl found so much inconvenience, that he chose rather " to seek out amongst the merchants than to make farther use of the ships royal." So he hired the Tiger of 600 tons, for 300*l.* a month wages, in which, and with his own ship the Samson, the Golden Noble, and two small vessels, he set forth. The winds proved so adverse, that three months' victuals were spent in harbours before they could get to the westward of Plymouth. This frustrated his chief design, which was to intercept the outward-bound carracks, and it consumed also the stores that had been provided for a West India voyage : the earl therefore transferred the command to captain Norton, with orders to go for the Azores, and returned to London. The voyage proved a most eventful one. They called at Flores, where the English cruisers used to take in water and refreshments at will, because the islanders had no means of resisting them ; learning there

A. D.
1592.

* Monson, 461, 462.

that the homeward bound East India ships must be near, they spread themselves in quest, and ere long came in sight of the Santa Cruz, which was some days' sail a-head of her comrades. The Portugueze made all sail for Angra; and the pursuers, when within half a league of her, discovered an English ship standing to cross her way, so that she was fain to luff up, the wind being westerly, and make for the road of Lagens on the south of the Isle of Flores. The English vessel proved to be the Roebuck of 200 tons, sir John Burroughs, commander, the admiral of a squadron which Raleigh had fitted out. The wind soon fell, so as not to yield breath for spreading a sail; and, as no way could then be made on either side, Burroughs took his boat and rowed near enough the enemy to ascertain what she was, of what burden, force, and countenance; having "made her exactly," he consulted with Norton, and they agreed to board her in the morning. A storm in the night forced them all to weigh anchor. "Yet their care was such in wrestling with the weather, not to lose the carrack, that, in the morning, the tempest being qualified," they recovered the road and saw the carrack warped as near the shore as she could be brought, with all her sails up and flags flying. The Portugueze had carried all they could on shore, and then, at sight of the English, set fire to her, "that neither glory of victory nor benefit of ship might remain to their enemies." The guns went off as the fire reached them; and lest the English should endeavour to extinguish the fire, some of the Portugueze entrenched themselves near enough for defending the approach. Burroughs ordered 100 men to disperse them: the surge was so high, that, for fear of losing their boats, the men were up to the neck in water, and some over head and ears, before they could reach the shore; and then they were forced to climb on hands and knees up a steep hill, from the top of which the islanders rolled great stones upon them; but all difficulties were overcome by resolution and hope: they entered the town without farther opposition,

and then possessed themselves of what little had been landed, or was drifted on shore from the wreck.

What was of more consequence, they obtained from some prisoners, by threats of torture, information that three larger carracks, at little distance, were holding the same course. By this time more of Raleigh's vessels had come up, with sir Robert Cross in the Foresight, a queen's ship; their united numbers were now sufficient, by spreading from north to south, yet keeping in sight of one another, to discover the space of two whole degrees. On the fifth day the Madre de Dios came in sight, one of the largest carracks belonging to the crown of Portugal. Thomson, who came up with her first, in a ship of sir John Hawkins's, "again and again delivered his peals as fast as he could fire, and fall astern to load again, thus hindering her way, though somewhat to his own cost, till the others could come up." Burroughs and the Golden Dragon came up next, and the former received a shot under water in the bread-room, which made him bear up to stop the leak. Sir Robert Cross then "coming to give his broadside, came so near, that, becalming his sail, he unwillingly fell aboard the carrack, which lashed his ship fast by the shrouds, and sailed away with her by her side." The earl's ships, being the worst sailors, came up last, about eleven at night, and captain Norton had no intention to board the enemy before daylight, if there had not been a cry from the Foresight, "An you be men, save the queen's ship!" Upon this he laid the carrack aboard on one side, while the Tiger boarded her on the other, through the Foresight. That ship took the opportunity to free herself. A desperate struggle ensued when the men had entered into the fore-chains, "the fore-castle being so high, that without any resistance the getting up had been difficult; but here was strong resistance, some irrecoverably falling by the board, and the assault continued an hour and half, so brave a booty making the men fight like dragons." But when the fore-castle was won, the Portuguese sought where to hide themselves. The English

turned to pillage, "and were ready to go to the ears about it, each man lighting a candle;" and by this they had nearly lost their prize, for by their carelessness they fired a cabin, in which were some hundred cartridges, and they were as eager then to forsake the carrack as they had been to board her, if Norton and some others had not "adventured the quenching of that flame."

When the prisoners were secured, the general "first had presented to his eyes the true proportion of the vast body of this carrack, which," says the writer in Hakluyt, "did then, and may still, justly provoke the admiration of all men not formerly acquainted with such a sight. But albeit this first appearance of the hugeness thereof yielded sights enough to entertain our men's eyes, yet the pitiful object of so many bodies slain and dismembered could not but draw each man's eye to see, and heart to lament, and hands to help, those miserable people, whose limbs were torn with the violence of shot. No man could almost step but upon a dead carcass or a bloody floor, but especially about the helm; for the greatness of the steerage requiring the labour of twelve or fourteen men at once, and some of our ships beating her in at the stern with their ordnance, oftentimes with one shot slew four or five labouring on either side of the helm; whose room being still furnished with fresh supplies, and our artillery still playing upon them with continual volleys, it could not be but that much blood should be shed in that place. Whereupon our general, moved with singular commiseration of their misery, sent them his own chirurgeons, denying them no possible help or relief that he or any of his company could afford them." It may be feared that such humanity, at that time, deserved this special commendation; but sir John Burroughs acted towards his prisoners with a generosity which was not less rare; for, "moved with compassion of human misery, and not to add too much affliction to the afflicted, he dismissed the captain and most of his followers freely to their own country, and for that purpose bestowed them in one of the earl's

vessels, furnished with all things necessary. The captain, Don Fernando de Mendoza, was "a gentleman of noble birth, well stricken in years, well spoken, of comely personage, of good stature, but of hard fortune. Twice he had been taken prisoner by the Moors and ransomed by the king; and he had been wrecked on the coast of Sofala, in a carrack which he commanded, and, having escaped the sea danger, fell into the hands of infidels on shore, who kept him under long and grievous servitude." The prisoners who were thus released were not searched: so rich a prize, indeed, might well content the captors; and they who had lost so much might be permitted to carry with them such of their own valuables as they could. They had, however, the ill hap to fall in with other English cruisers, who took from them, "thus negligently dismissed," says our narrator, "900 diamonds, besides other odd ends."

About 800 black men (if that number be not overstated) were landed on the island of Corvo. Having thus disposed of their prisoners, contention about the prize was "well-nigh kindling in the commanders, being so many and so diversely employed." But Burroughs, "to cut off the unprofitable spoil and pillage," to which he saw that many were inclined, promptly and prudently took charge of the whole in the queen's name, the others consenting; for, indeed, it appeared, upon "a slender rummaging of such things as first came to hand, that the wealth would arise nothing disanswerable to expectation, but that the variety and grandeur of all rich commodities would be more than sufficient to content both the adventurer's desire and the soldier's travail. And here," says our narrator, "I cannot but enter into the consideration and acknowledgment of God's great favour towards our nation, who, by putting this purchase into our hands, hath manifestly discovered those secret trades and Indian riches, which hitherto lay strangely hidden and cunningly concealed from us; whereof there was among some few of us some small and unperfect glimpse only,

which now is turned into the broad light of full and perfect knowledge. Whereby it should seem that the will of God for our good is (if our weakness could apprehend it) to have us communicate with them in those East Indian treasures, and, by the erection of a lawful traffic, to better our means to advance true religion and his holy service. The carrack being in burden, by the estimation of the wise and experienced, no less than 1600 tons, had full 900 of those stowed with the gross bulk of merchandise; the rest of the tonnage being allowed, partly to the ordnance, which were thirty-two pieces of brass of all sorts, partly to the passengers and the victuals, which could not be any small quantity, considering the number of persons,—between 600 and 700,—and the length of the navigation. To give you a taste, as it were, of the commodities, it shall suffice to deliver you a general particularity of them, according to the catalogue taken at Leadenhall, the 15th of September, 1592. (It is remarkable that this should have been the place where an account was taken of the first East Indian cargo that was ever brought to England.) Upon good view it was found that the principal wares, after the jewels, (which were no doubt of great value, though they never came to light,) consisted of spices, drugs, silks, calicoes, quilts, carpets, and colours, &c. The spices were pepper, cloves, maces, nutmegs, cinnamon, green ginger. The drugs were benjamin, frankincense, galingale, mirabolans, aloes, socotrina, camphire. The silks, damasks, taffatas, sarcenets, altobassos, that is, counterfeit cloth of gold, unwrought China silk, sleaved silk, white twisted silk, curled cypress. The calicoes were book calicoes, calico-lawns, broad white calicoes, fine starched calicoes, coarse white calicoes, brown broad calicoes, brown coarse calicoes. There were also canopies and coarse diaper towels, quilts of coarse sarcenet and of calico, carpets like those of Turkey; whereunto are to be added the pearl, musk, civet, and ambergris. The rest of the wares were many in number, but less in value, as elephants' teeth, porcelain vessels of China,

cocoa-nuts, hides, ebon wood as black as jet, bedsteads of the same, cloth of the rinds of trees, very strange for the matter, and artificial in workmanship. All which piles of commodities, being by men of approved judgement rated but in reasonable sort, amounted to no less than 150,000*l.*, which being divided among the adventurers, whereof her majesty was the chief, was sufficient to yield contentment to all parties."*

But, in truth, the parties were not contented: they had expected far too much, and they received somewhat too little. The earl of Cumberland's share had been estimated by his friends, "according to his employment of ships and men," to two or three millions, so extravagant were their notions! "But because his commission, large enough otherwise, had not provided for the case of his return, and substituting another in his place, some adjudged it to depend on the queen's mercy and bounty."† The queen's adventure in this voyage was only two ships, one only of which, and that the least, was at the capture, and would have been carried off by the carrack, like a lark in a hawk's talons, if the earl's ships had not come to the rescue; yet of this title, "joined with her royal authority," she made such use, that the adventurers were fain to submit themselves to her pleasure, and "she dealt but indifferently with them," says Monson‡;—rather, indeed, any thing but indifferently. The lioness took her share; and the jackals also helped themselves well, as well at her cost as that of the other claimants. The queen had not "the account of the fifth part of her value, by reason of some men's embezzling, and the earl was fain to accept of 36,000*l.* for him and his, as out of gift."§

The size of the carrack excited great admiration. She had nearly been wrecked on the Scilly rocks, and having put into Dartmouth, was unladen there, and the goods sent to London in ten vessels. "But to the end that the bigness, height, length, breadth, and other

* Hakluyt, ii. 198.

† P. 165.

‡ Purchas. 1145.

§ Purchas.

dimensions of so huge a vessel might by the exact rules of geometrical observations be truly taken, both for present knowledge and derivation also of the same unto posterity, one M. Robert Adams, a man, in his faculty, of excellent skill, omitted nothing in the description which either his art could demonstrate, or any man's judgement think worthy the memory. After an exquisite survey of the whole frame, he found the length from the beak head to the stern (whereupon was erected a lantern) to contain 165 foot. The breadth in the second close deck (whereof she had three), this being the place where there was most extension of breadth was forty-six foot ten inches. She drew in water thirty-one foot at her departure from Cochim in India, but not above twenty-six at her arrival in Dartmouth, being lightened in her voyage by divers means some five foot. She carried in height seven several stories, one main orlop, three close decks, one fore-castle, and a spar-deck of two floors apiece. The length of the keel was 100 foot, of the main mast 121, and the circuit about at the partners ten foot seven; the main yard was 106 foot long. By which perfect commensuration of the parts appeareth the hugeness of the whole, far beyond the mould of the biggest shipping used among us either for war or receipt."*—"Being so huge and unwieldy a ship," says another writer, "she was never removed from Dartmouth, but there laid up her bones."†

The success of this last voyage encouraged the earl to more adventures; and he imputed his former failures more to the negligence or unfaithfulness of those whom he had employed to lay in his stores, than to any other cause. His objection to the queen's ships seems to have been removed by the bravery with which the Foresight had run aboard the great Madre de Dios; and planning now two expeditions at the same time, he obtained two ships royal, which he victualled himself, and with seven others in company sailed for the coast of Spain, from whence he despatched three of these to

A. D.
1593.

* Hakluyt, 199.

† Purchas, 1145.

the West Indies. On the Spanish coast he had the good fortune to fall in with two French vessels from St. Maloes: that port held for the League; the ships therefore were accounted Spaniards, and they were rich enough to repay the costs of his voyage more than threefold. One day, being separated from the rest of his fleet, off Peniche, he met with twelve hulks in the same place where Monson had been captured by the galleys exactly two years before on the same day. He required from them that respect which was due to her majesty's ship; and they, presuming upon the strength of twelve against one, not considering how much better that one was prepared for war, refused to render it. After two hours' fight he brought them to his mercy; and they to obtain it delivered up a great quantity of ammunition which they carried for the king of Spain's service. And here the earl committed an error that might have cost him dear; for, standing out to sea with some of these hulks, he left Monson in his long boat with fifty men to rummage the others. Towards evening, those which he had under his custody gave him the slip, and returned to their comrades; and Monson would again have been made prisoner in his turn if he had not leaped out of the vessel into his boat on one side as they boarded him on the other; and in so doing he received a hurt in the leg, which annoyed him during the remainder of his life.

The earl, upon the intelligence which he obtained here, made for the Western Islands, hoping to fall in with the carracks before they should meet the Portugueze fleet which had been ordered thither to convoy them. One of that fleet he captured off the Isle of Flores; but being far too weak to encounter their whole force, of which he obtained sight the next day, he stood off to avoid them, and hovered about for three weeks, till he learned that the carracks had passed safely. By this time he had been taken ill; and his life is said to have been saved by cow's milk, Monson having ventured ashore on Corvo, and there obtained a milch cow, what with threats and

what with promises of reward. They then made homeward; and the whole fleet were so parted during a calm, which lasted several days, that they never saw each other again till they met in England some four or five weeks afterwards. This was the most gainful voyage that the earl made "before or after."*

Meantime the three ships, which had been despatched to the West Indies reached St. Lucia, refreshed themselves there, and made for the pearl fishery at Margarita. That fishery was carried on in four *rancherias*, or assemblages of huts: six or seven such villages were erected on different parts of the coast, though only one at a time was occupied; and when the fishery failed in one place, the persons engaged in it removed to another, the empty huts being always ready for them. The pearls, for safety, were carried monthly to Margarita, which stood about three leagues from the shore. Langton, who commanded the privateers, having taken a Spaniard, and learned from him the situation of the inhabited *rancheria*, surprised it by a night march with twenty-eight men, and carried off about 2000*l.* worth of pearls. Afterwards, he brought the ships there, and compelled the inhabitants to ransom their huts and canoes for as many pearls as were valued at 2000 ducats. The alarm had now been given, and when they tried a landing at Cumana they were fain to retire, not without loss. They had no better fortune on any part of the Spanish main. Making then for Hispaniola, they were glad to provide themselves with water upon the little island of Savona, procured by digging a hole not twenty paces from the wash of the sea, and setting a hogshead therein with the head knocked out, by which means, water, "losing its saltness in that passage," was plentifully taken. They now coasted along, exacting contributions from the different *estancias* and *ingenios*, that is to say, breeding farms and sugar works, as they went. After eight months spent to little profit in hovering about Hispaniola, Jamaica, and Cuba, they made for

* Monson, 166. Purchas, 1146.

the bay of Honduras, and within four leagues of Porto Cavallo descried seven ships in the road. Though they were then only two in company they anchored within caliver shot, moored their ships head and stern, and bent their broadsides unto them, and there fought all that day with those seven ships, and all night now and then a shot. The next day they brought a vessel of twenty tons from the shore, set her on fire, and endeavoured with their boats to bring her across the Admiral; but when the Spaniards saw their intent they got into their boats and made for the land, carrying the rudders with them, that none should sail away with the ships. The English laded the Admiral with the best out of the other vessels, and sent ashore to ask if the Spaniards would ransom the rest; and as the answer was delayed, they first fired one which was laden with hides and logwood, and then another with a cargo of sarsaparilla; but all such ransoming had been forbidden by the king, and the privateers were left to take their own course. Nothing more is related of their proceedings, except that they heaved the ordnance overboard, saving two or three brass pieces, in hope some Englishmen might be the better for them afterwards, brought away the Admiral of 250 tons, and carried this prize safely to Plymouth.*

In the ensuing year, the earl set forth on his eighth voyage, at his own charge, with the help of some adventurers. The force consisted of the Royal Exchange, 250, captain George Cave; the May Flower of the same burden, vice admiral captain William Antony; the Samson, rear admiral captain Nicholas Downton, a caravel, and a small pinnace. Early in April they sailed from Plymouth, came in sight of St. Michael's at the beginning of June, and ten days afterwards they descried a great Indian ship, whose burden they estimated at 2000 tons; and which, indeed, was one of the largest ships ever employed in the Indian trade.†

* Purchas, 1147.

† Ibid.

The fate of this unhappy ship has been fully recorded by the Portugueze as well as by the English.

The name of this carrack was the *Cinco Chagas*, or Five Wounds, in reverential honour of which it had, with the usual Romish ceremonies on such occasions, been named. The Capitam Mor Francisco de Mello embarked in her from Goa, in 1593, at the same time that the other ships of the fleet sailed from Cochim; all, according to the customary and fatal improvidence of the Portugueze, deeply overladen. After vainly endeavouring to make the Cape, the Chagas, with much difficulty, put back to Mozambique, and wintered there. Thither also the Nazareth put back, arriving in such a state, that it was found impossible to repair her. She had been built of ill-seasoned timber, and, in consequence of over-freight, had suffered so much in bad weather, that her reaching the island was considered little less than miraculous; and there also arrived 117 Portugueze and 65 slaves, being the remainder of the crew of the ship St. Alberto: that ship had been wrecked upon the Penedo dos Fontes; and Nuno Velho, formerly commandant at Sofala, taking command of the people, directed their course so well, that, by an inland journey of 300 leagues, he brought them in three months to the Isle of Inhaca, and from thence found means of embarking them for Mozambique. Of all the other Portugueze ships, many as they were, which had been wrecked upon that fatal coast, the people, though in very many cases they got to shore, had always perished; and there are no tales of shipwreck more deeply distressful than the faithful relations which have been preserved respecting their sufferings. Many of these people deemed it better to return to India than pursue a voyage which had so miserably begun. For others who persevered room was made in the Chagas; and that ship, taking on board the jewels of the other two vessels, (for this part of the St. Alberto's treasures had been saved,) and the whole lading of the Nazareth,

sailed once more for Europe, her crew consisting of about 1400 persons, of whom 270 were slaves.*

Before this ill-fated vessel passed the Cape it encountered long and frequent storms, which compelled it to throw overboard much of its cargo, and some of its provisions also. All on board expected that they should have made for St. Helena, when the captain produced his instructions, whereby, upon a report that the English would be there, he was forbidden to touch at that place; and ordered, in case his food or water ran low, to put into St. Paulo de Loanda. These orders, though against his own judgement, he thought it his duty to obey: to Loanda therefore he went, remained there a few days, took many slaves on board, and meeting soon afterwards with the usual calms in that pestilential region, the fatal disease known by the name of the Mal de Loanda carried off about half the crew, and left the survivors in a state of miserable weakness. His farther instructions were to make for the Isle of Corvo, where there would be a fleet to protect him: but at Mozambique he had learnt the destruction of the Santa Cruz, and the capture of the Madre de Dios; and having held a council when they came in the latitude of the Azores, it was resolved that they should avoid those islands altogether. Before, however, three days had elapsed, a mutinous representation against this determination was got up among the soldiers; and upon enquiring into the state of the stores, the report was, that it was absolutely necessary to touch at the islands, and there take in provisions and water. Accordingly they steered for Corvo; and being fully aware that privateers would be cruising in that direction, they prepared, as well as their debilitated state would permit, for battle. A little while fortune favoured them. They came in sight of Corvo; but the wind prevented them from coming

* *Historia Tragico-Maritima*, ii, 507—511. In the same volume (p. 217—313.) there is a full and most interesting relation of the shipwreck of the *Santo Alberto*, and the subsequent march of the crew, till they embarked for Mozambique: the account was drawn up by Joam Baptista Lavanha, the king's chief cosmographer.

to anchor there: they stood therefore for Fayal, and off that island fell in with the earl of Cumberland's squadron.*

“ The *May Flower* first got up to her, and received an unwelcome salutation. In the night, the *Samson* came in, and continued the fight, and at last the admiral. They agreed that the admiral should lay the carrack aboard on the prow, the vice-admiral on the waist, and the rear-admiral on the quarter; but it fell out that the admiral, laying her aboard at the loof, recoiled astern, the vice-admiral being so near, that she was fain to run with her bolt-sprit between the two quarters, which forced the rear-admiral to lay her aboard on the bow.” The Portugueze had pledged themselves to each other that they would defend the ship to the last, and rather perish with her in the sea or in the flames, than surrender so rich a prize to the heretics. There were many brave and honourable men on board of the old Portugueze stamp, capable of adhering to such a resolution; but those who had no honour to lose, and lives at stake, were so greatly the majority, that if there had been an alternative they would not have been allowed to choose. One of the most distinguished persons, Don Rodrigo de Cordoba, had both his legs shattered; and, as he was carried below in a dying state, he exclaimed, “ Sirs, I have got this in the discharge of my duty. Be of good heart: let no one forsake his post; and let us be consumed rather than taken.” According to the Portugueze, the privateers twice boarded the carrack, and were twice driven out: a third time they boarded, one of them bearing a white flag, as expecting that the Portugueze would gladly accept the proposal of surrendering: in fact they had begun to waver; but the Englishman who carried this flag was the first of that party who was killed; and when a second pilot hoisted another flag at the poop, Nuno Velho threw it over board, and would have killed the man if he had not

* *Historia Tragico-Maritima*, ii. 511—514.

escaped by speedy flight. The English, indeed, suffered considerable loss: they had one and twenty slain. Antony, their vice-admiral, was killed; Downton, the rear-admiral, crippled for life; and Cave, who commanded the earl's ship, mortally wounded by a shot through both legs. But the privateers, in the heat of action, seem to have forgotten that booty was their object, and, instead of endeavouring to take possession of the carrack, aimed at destroying her. "After many bickerings," says the writer in Purchas, "fire-works flew about interchangeably. At last, the vice-admiral, with a culverin shot at hand, fired the carrack in her stern, and the rear-admiral her fore-castle, by a shot that gave fire to the mat on the beak-head, from thence turning to the mat on the bolt-sprit, and so ran up to the topsail-yard; they plying and maintaining their fires so well with their small shot, that many of those which came to quench them were slain. These fires increased so sore, that the vice-admiral's fore-sail and fore-topsail were both burnt; the rear-admiral being in like predicament; while the admiral, with much danger and difficulty, quenched the fires thrown into her from the carrack. To save themselves in this heat and fury, the admiral and vice-admiral fell off, leaving the rear-admiral foul of the carrack's spritsail-yard, in great danger to have been consumed with her, had they not helped her off with their boats."*

A scene more dreadful than the action itself ensued. P. Frey Antonio, a Franciscan, was seen, with a crucifix in his hand, encouraging the poor wretches to commit themselves to the waves and to God's mercy, rather than perish in the flames. The greater part threw themselves overboard, clinging to such things as were cast into the sea for them to float by. The English boats, it is said, made no endeavour to save any of them: it is even affirmed that they butchered in the water those who came near and entreated to be taken on board. The rear-admiral's boat must, however, be ex-

* *Historia Tragico-Maritima*, ii. 515—519. Purchas. 1147.

empted from this atrocious charge ; for by that boat Nuno Velho was picked up, Braz Correa, the captain of the Nazareth, and three other persons : ten more, it appears by the Portugueze account, were in like manner saved. Among the passengers in this unfortunate ship were two Portugueze ladies of high birth, Doña Isabel Pereira, a widow, whose father had been chief captain of the island of Goa, and whose husband, Diogo de Mello Coutinho, had held the command in Ceylon : her daughter, Doña Luiza de Mello, a young and beautiful damsel, was with her. They had been wrecked in the Santo Alberto, and had performed a journey of nearly 1000 miles after that wreck, through Caffraria, on foot ; and when many of their fellow-sufferers returned from Mozambique to India, they had resolved on resuming their voyage, because the young lady was going to take possession of her entailed property at Evora. Mother and daughter, when they saw that no help was to be hoped for from the privateers, and that they had to choose between the fire and the water, fastened themselves together with a Franciscan cord ; and their bodies, thus fastened, were cast ashore upon the island of Fayal. According to the Portugueze statement, about 500 persons perished in the ship ; according to the English, there were more than 1100 on board when she left Loanda, of whom only fifteen were saved ! Nuno Velho and Braz Correa were brought prisoners to England, where the earl is said to have treated them well, and to have entertained them a whole year as his guests : they were then ransomed for 3000 cruzados, which Nuno Velho paid for both.*

It was not, however, immediately after this deplorable action that the earl sailed homeward : he continued cruising among the islands about a month longer, when they came in sight of another carrack of 1500 tons, homeward bound from India. They took her for a Spanish ship of war, and under that mistake began a more cautious action. After a while a boat was sent

* *Historia Tragico-Maritima*, ii. 520—526. Purchas, 1148.

to summon her to surrender to the queen of England's ships under the earl of Cumberland's command, unless she would undergo the same fate as the Chagas; to bear testimony of which two prisoners were put in the boat, and, the Portuguese say, bound. The Portuguese captain returned a brave answer: he acknowledged Don Philip, king of Spain, he said, not the queen of England; and if the earl of Cumberland had been at the burning of the Cinco Chagas, so had he, D. Luis Coutinho, been at the defeat and capture of sir Richard Grenville in the queen of England's ship the Revenge. Let the earl do what he dared for his queen, and he, D. Luis, would do what he was able for his king: his ship was homeward bound from India, laden with riches, and with many jewels on board; let the English take her if they could!" The fight was then renewed*, but intermitted by the calm, and remitted (as the English relater allows) by the remisser company; their captains being slain and wounded; whereupon they gave over," and sailed for England, "having done much harm to the enemy, and little good to themselves."†

"The earl, not liking his ill partage in the Madre ^{A. D.} de Dios, nor this unhappier loss of two carracks for ^{1595.} want of sufficient strength to take them, built a ship of his own of 800 tons‡ at Deptford, which the queen,

* The Portuguese account states, that the English attempted to destroy this ship, by converting the earl's vessel, which was an old one, into a fire-ship; but that they were prevented from grappling the carrack, first, by a shot that carried away the earl's foremast, and then by a thunder-storm, during which Coutinho got so much ahead of the disabled ship, that the other two dared not pursue them farther.—(p. 527.) This is less probable than the English account. It is unlikely that the earl would have sacrificed his own ship; and still more so, after the recent fate of the Chagas, that he should have sought to destroy the carrack, instead of attempting to capture it.

† Purchas. 1148. Hist. Trag. Marit. ii. 526—528.

‡ Purchas says 900; but Monson is better authority; she was "proportioned in all degrees to equal any of her majesty's ships of that rank, and no way inferior to them in sailing, or other property or condition of ships." Monson states the earl's motives for building her. "At last my lord," he says, "began discreetly to consider the obligation he had to the queen or the loan of her ships from time to time; and withal weighed what fear of danger he brought himself into, if, unluckily, any of those ships should miscarry; for he valued the reputation of the least of them at the rate of his life. Upon these considerations, no persuasions being of force to divert him from attempting some great action on the sea, where he

A. D.
1596.

at her launching, named the Scourge of Malice*, the best ship that had ever before been built by any subject." In this, with three other vessels in company, he would have made what is called his ninth voyage; but when he had reached Plymouth, the queen recalled him; and the ships took only three Baltic vessels laden with Spanish property of little value. He set forth again in the ensuing year, but sprung his mainmast, and was forced to return. His next enterprise was upon a smaller scale; for Essex and the lord admiral going to the coast of Spain with a large fleet of the queen's, together with a squadron of Flemish men of war, "his lordship thought good to await some gleanings in so great a vintage." So he sent out captain Francis Slingsby, in the Ascension of 300 tons, carrying thirty-four guns and 120 men, "chiefly to look for such ships as should come from Lisbon." The captain got sore wounded in a vain attempt made with his boats against a caravel: after which the Spanish admiral set forth six ships against him; and himself and another ship, falling in with the Ascension, laid her aboard, one on the bow and the other on the quarter; 'and now the mouths of the great ordnance, being near in place to whisper, roared out their thunders, and pierced thorow and thorow on all hands; which ended, the Spaniards leaped into the fore chains and main chains, thinking to have entered the ship, but were bravely repelled. And the English, seeing many together under the admiral's half deck, discharged among them a fowler laden with case shot, to their no small harm, so that the Spaniards were content to fall off. Of ours, two and twenty were slain and hurt; which loss lighted as much on them which hid them-

had spent much time and money; and thinking thereby, as well to enrich himself, as to show his forwardness to do his prince and country service, he resolved to build a ship from the stocks, that should equal the middle rank of her majesty's: an act so noble and so rare, it being a thing never undertaken before by a subject, that it deserved immortal fame." — (p. 189.)

* The Malice-Scourge, Monson calls it; "for by that name, it seems, he tasted the envy of some that repined at his honourable achievement." — (p. 189.)

selves, as those which stood to the fight. To prevent the like afterwards, they put safe in hold the chirurgeon, carpenter, and cooper, for the public dependence on them ; and made fast the hatches, that others should not seek refuge. But the Spanish admiral tacked about and went in for Lisbon ; and the Ascension, continuing till they had but a fortnight's provision left, returned, with hurt to themselves and loss also to his lordship."

From the conduct of the men in this action, and from other instances, it appears that an English sea captain could not, in those days, rely with that perfect confidence upon his crew, which has uniformly been felt within our remembrance. The national character was always brave ; but that national spirit had not yet been formed among our sailors, which renders courage as much a moral principle as an animal impulse.

The earl's success in so many adventures had not been such as would have encouraged a prudent man to repeat them ; but a prudent man would not have engaged in them at first. He now obtained letters patent authorising him to levy sea and land forces, and prepared for the greatest expedition that had ever been undertaken by a subject without the assistance of the sovereign, both in number of ships and land forces. The force consisted of eighteen sail ; and the earl "having by several voyages before attained to a perfect knowledge in sea affairs," took the command in person. "Besides his general design to take, destroy, or any way else to impoverish and impeach the king of Spain or his subjects, he grounded his voyage upon two hopes." The first was that of intercepting the outward-bound East Indiamen as soon as they should sail from the Tagus. The time of their departure was certain ; it could not be later than April ; and as in burden they exceeded all other European ships, and went out full freighted with commodities for the East Indies, and much money also was sent out in them, they would have abundantly enriched him and the other adventurers. This was his first hope. His other was, if this should fail, to make an

A. D.
1597.

attempt with his land forces upon some island or town "that would yield him wealth and riches, being the chief end of his undertaking,"—a most unworthy one for one born of such a line, in such a station, and to such an inheritance! The success of his first object depended greatly upon the secrecy of the expedition; and if he had done well and providently, "his fleet," says Monson, "should have been furnished, without rumour, noise, or notice, in several harbours; and the men should not have known the design of their voyage, nor that they were to meet and compose a main fleet." The whole fleet, however, assembled at Plymouth, and sailed from thence on the 6th of March.

The wind being prosperous, though there was much of it, their passage was so fair as to put him in hope that God had prepared them an unlooked-for fortune, if it were well handled, and that he might get sure intelligence concerning the departure of the carracks; "the doing of which undiscovered," says he, "though hard, yet I knew was not impossible for him that could well work;" and considering the mighty importance, he resolved to do it himself, taking with him two other ships; which two only he meant should be seen on the coasts; and accordingly he left the rest of the fleet, appointing them where to lie till he should rejoin them. "But God," says he, "whose will is beyond man's resolutions, forced me to alter this; for my masts, not made so sufficiently as I expected, both now began to show their weakness, especially my mainmast, which I continually looked would have gone overboard. My mariners were at their wits' end; and I protest I would have given 5000*l.* for a new one; the greatest part of my strength both by sea and land having been lost, if that ship had returned in this extremity. Hearing all that would, I heard many opinions to little purpose." So he resolved for himself (though many thought it dangerous, lest the wind should with a storm come up at W.N.W.), to go to the Berlings, and there ride till his masts were fished. He knew the road, which no

one else in the ship did ; and his fear was not of the wind, but lest he should be discovered, being within three leagues of Peniche, from whence caravels came off to fish. "Go thither," says he, "I must, hopeless otherwise to repair those desperate ruins. My ship was black, which well furthered my device ; and though she were great, yet showed not so afar off. Wherefore I came in about eight of the clock at night upon Thursday, when I was sure all the fishermen were gone to sell their fish at Lisbon, and from the main they could not make me. Before the morning I had down my topmasts, my main yard unrigged, and all things ready for my carpenters to work. The small ships with me I made stand off to sea all day, that, not having any in my company, I should be the less suspected ; and thus with a strange flag dancing upon my poop, I rid, without giving chase to any, as though I had been some merchant, every day divers ships coming by me that were both good prize, and had been worth the taking." By working night and day, he was ready to sail on Saturday night. The fishermen would return to their fishing ground on the night following ; and his hope was to get away undiscovered by them, and rejoin his fleet, which he had appointed to wait for him in the same latitude, between twenty and thirty leagues off.*

At night, however, he heard firing between him and the shore, and rightly guessed that it was his own small ship and little pinnace in action with a vessel which they had seen them chasing to windward before the night closed ; and judging, also, that she was above their strength, he slipped his anchor, and "soon came to help the poor little ones, much over-matched." He took her for a Biscayan, and therefore concluded that she would fight well ; and, in fact, she returned such an answer to his broadside, that he had three men killed, six or seven hurt, and his ship shot in six or seven places, some of them very dangerous. But, upon

* Purchas, 1150.

boarding and taking her, she proved to be a Hamburger laden with prohibited commodities. Much as this action exposed him to discovery, he got out of sight of land by daybreak ; succeeded, by stratagem, in capturing a fishing boat from the Tagus ; and learned from the men, that, with the next fair wind, five carracks would sail, "with more treasure on board than ever went in one year for the Indies, and also twenty-five ships for Brazil. This welcome news," says the earl, "was accompanied with the meeting again of my whole fleet, which at that very instant I descried : so now being joined, I wished for nothing but a happy hour to see those long looked-after monsters, whose wealth exceeds their greatness, yet be they the greatest ships in the world." Not doubting to meet them now, and well knowing the way they would come, and being made restless by the joy of such hope, the earl and his fleet "continued gazing for that which came not," till disappointment stared them in the face ; then the commander stood for the Tagus in one of his smaller vessels, captured a boat, and learned, that at the time he took the first fishing boat, a ship, with Spaniards on board, from England, had arrived at Lisbon, which ship was in Plymouth* when he sailed from the sound, and had given intelligence that he was at sea, and that his object certainly was to intercept the Indian fleet. He learned, also, that caravels had been sent out to search every where for him ; one of which, when he returned to his fleet, he understood had come by them to windward, and discovered them all. †

It was now evident, that the carracks would alter their course, if they put to sea at all ; and, in despair of winning them by any other means, the earl went

* Monson might justly censure the earl for want of secrecy in his preparations ; but the earl's own narrative shows that another part of his censure was undeserved. "He worthily deserved blame," says Monson, "to present himself and fleet in the eye of Lisbon, to be there discovered, knowing that the secret carriage thereof gave life and hope to the action. By a familiar example of a man that being safely seated in a house, and in danger of an arrest, knows that catchpoles lie to attack him, so fared it with the carracks at that time, who rather chose to keep themselves in harbour, than venture upon an unavoidable danger."—(p. 190.)

† Purchas, 1151.

again to the Tagus, to see whether they were come so low down the river that it might be possible to board them in the night. The wind favoured him ; he got in between the *Cachopos**, and saw them riding in the bay of Oeyras. "Here," says he, "had I too much of my desire, seeing what I desired to see, but hopeless of the good I expected by seeing them ; for they were where no good could be done upon them, riding within the castle of St. Julian, which hath in it above 100 pieces of great ordnance ; so as though I could have got in (which I verily believe I could), it had not been possible to have returned, the wind being ever very scant to come forth withal, and hanging, for the most part, so far northerly, as that, for fear of the *Cachopos*, I must of force have run close by their platforms. With this unpleasant sight I returned for my fleet." † Here ended his hope of enriching himself by this enterprise. To the Spaniards, however, or rather to the Portugueze, the injury was very great ; for rather than put themselves in hazard of him and his fleet, they chose to give over their voyage, and lose the excessive charge they had been put unto in furnishing their ships ; and these carracks lay at home without employment the whole year after." Sanguine adventurers had carried their hopes at this time very far : they thought that the Indians, or rather the Portugueze in India, could not subsist without those commodities which they received from Portugal ; and that, if the outward-bound fleet were intercepted, or prevented from sailing for three or four years, the Portugueze Indians must have been compelled to trade with England, rather than endure the want of European goods ; and that in time the Indies might have been divided from Portugal, especially if a younger son of the Prior D. Antonio had been carried out, "whom, no doubt," says Monson, "they might have been forced to accept as king."

The earl sailed now for the Canaries ; and having

* The *Cat-ships* they are called in Purchas, and Oeyras is called *Wiers*.

† Purchas, 1151.

been informed by some Spaniards, and by some of our own people who had been prisoners there, that there dwelt a marquis on the island of Lancerota, whose ransom would be worth 100,000*l.*, he determined upon attempting to surprise him. But these persons, who undertook to pilot him into the road, and then guide him to the castle, even in the darkness, had nearly carried him upon a ledge of rocks in the road; so he was fain to cast anchor till the morning; and then, though he had "no hope left to catch the marquis," unless he were to shut himself up in the castle, yet the earl thought it meet to set all his soldiers on shore, seeing that he had never till then given them any training, and "well knew many of them to be very raw, and unpractised to service at land." The day selected for the service was Good Friday. The earl, in fear of an ague from the cold which he had taken in the last night's watching, confined himself to his cabin, "took some strong physic, and was let blood;" and sir John Berkeley was sent in command of the men, it being certain that the place could make no resistance against such a force. They landed near Porto de Naos. The guide said the chief town upon the island, Cayas, or Rubicon (from whence the bishops of the Canary islands were stiled bishops of Rubicon, till the island of Gran Canaria was conquered), was but three miles from the landing-place; it proved more than three leagues, and of "the most wicked marching for loose stones and sand." The town was abandoned before they reached it; only, as they marched, "the mountaineers would watch if any straggled, and desperately assault them with their lances*, being so swift of foot that none could come near them." The castle was about half a mile from the town, within and about which were now some four or five score men;

* "When a piece is presented to them, so soon as they perceive the cock or match to fall, they cast themselves flat to the ground, and the report is no sooner heard, but they are upon their feet, their stones out of their hands, and withal they charge with their pikes; and this in scattered encounters, or single fight (for either they knew not, or neglect orderly battalion) oftener giveth than receiveth hurt."—*Layfield in Purchas*, 1156.

but they retired without fighting, and the privateers took possession of it. They found within it twelve or more brazen guns, . . . “the least bases, the most culverins and demi-culverins, and an innumerable company of stones laid in places of greatest advantage. The house itself, built of squared stones, flanked very strongly and cunningly both for offence and defence; the entrance thereunto not, as in our forts, of equal height with the foundation ground, but raised about a pike’s length in height, so that, without the use of a ladder, there could be no entering. Some of our wisest commanders said, that if they had drawn in their ladders, and only shut the door, twenty men might have kept it against 500.”*

Lancerota was the first of the Canary islands upon which the Europeans established themselves. A party of Norman adventurers, under Jehan de Betancour, landed there in 1400; and their history is the exact prototype of Columbus’s. They were hospitably received; they took advantage of that hospitality to construct a fort; they left a garrison there; and that garrison behaved “in such a licentious and cruel manner towards the king and the nation,” that their commander and many others were deservedly cut off, and the survivors reduced to the last extremity when the conquerors returned there.† We know not enough of the Canarians, to perceive how far they deserved the misery which the Spaniards brought upon them; but for the Spaniards here, as in the West Indies, and along the coast of America, the sins of the fathers were visited upon the children; and the English, the buccaneers, and the Algerines‡, were to them what they had been to the indigenous inhabitants. The earl of Cumberland’s object in touching at these islands was no better than that of the Algerines; but it was not worse than what the warfare of the age, by common consent, allowed of; and nothing occurred here to fill him with compunction in his latter

* Purchas, 1151, 1155, 1156. Glas. 219, 220. † Glas. iv. 11, 12.

‡ In 1618, the Algerines carried off above 1600 persons, being nearly the whole population of the island. They were ransomed by the king of Spain, and sent back. — *Glas.* 218, 219.

days. "No further harm was done to the town or castle, than that of borrowing some necessaries,"—for which no payment was intended. The town is described as consisting at that time of somewhat more than 100 houses, rudely built, and commonly of one story; the roofs with just sufficient sloping to cast off the rain, "covered only with canes or straw laid upon a few rafters, and very dirt cast upon them, which, being hardened by the sun, becometh shower-proof." There was an old church,—which was, indeed, the mother church of those islands,—a poor structure, having "no windows, nor admitting light otherwise than by the door;" it had no chancel, but was one undivided room, with stone seats along the side, and at the one end an altar, with the appurtenants." There was also an unfinished convent, which was a neat quadrangular building, "with more commodities of fresh water and garden than any other place in the town, even the marquis's house. "Nothing, in a manner," says the chaplain, "was left in the town, saving bulls, and pardons, and divers houses, and good store of very excellent wine and cheese." Of the quality of the wine, Dr. Layfield was probably a more competent judge than the earl, who upon that Good Friday kept an involuntary fast: his lordship says, that "some little wine only was found, which little was too much; for it distempered so many, that if there had been a strong enemy to have attempted, they should have found drunken resistance; the meaner sort being most overthrown already; and the commanders, some distempered with wine, some with pride of themselves, or scorn of others; so as there were very few of them but that fell to most disorderly outrage one with another. It was, in fact, a mutinous disorder of drunkenness*;" and sir John Berkeley, "with much grief, told the earl, that if he took not some severe course to remedy these things, it would be the ruin of their voyage." The earl, therefore, went out here the next day to see the men trained, the greater part of whom he found "both rude and raw;" and calling all the commanders

* Monson, 192.

before him, he rebuked them for their yesterday's conduct, and gave articles both for their courses at land and sea, reading to them his commission, that they might know he had full power to execute the punishment which he had set down for every offence, and assuring them he would not be slow in so doing if they offended.

One of the fleet, which had not been ready to sail with them from England, joined company between Gran Canaria and Teneriffe, and brought some English prisoners who had escaped in a fishing boat from Lisbon. These men reported that the carracks, in consequence of his departure from the coast, were to sail in a few days; and some days accordingly were spent in waiting for them, till it became certain either that they had gone by, or (as was afterwards ascertained) had given up the voyage for that year. The captains and masters then having agreed that it was not fit to tarry any longer upon that hope, counsel was held concerning their further proceedings, and some were for an attempt upon Pernambuco, which had been so far contemplated from the beginning, that the earl had brought with him his old Portugueze pilots, well acquainted with the Brazilian ports. These pilots thought the season too far spent, for they had often at that season been obliged to put back to Lisbon, and, "on their last passage, had been six or seven weeks in getting one degree:" some of the adventurers, however, replied, "that it might fall out otherwise, and that though they might be long in getting thither, yet they were sure of winning the place easily, and gaining wealth enough by the conquest. The earl felt it was now time to disclose his own intentions, being "so far shot to the southward, that he was sure not to meet with any going to the northward, so that no news of him could reach Spain till it came from the Indies." "Then laid I before them," said he, "how our men were already many of them sick, and that undoubtedly the crossing the line would keep them from recovering, although the passage were as good as man could wish. Besides, I remembered them of intelligence given us, both upon the coast of Spain and the island, that the

king had sent thither, to defend the place against me, 600 soldiers ; and also it was likely he had given order, that if they saw themselves not strong enough to resist, they should flee with their portable goods into the mountains, and set their sugar and Brazil wood on fire : then were we sure to have nothing. And lastly, if we beat long under the line, undoubtedly most of our men would fall sick, and then should we be forced to return without doing any thing ; for to no other place could we go, once bearing up upon that occasion." Perceiving by their silence that what he said had produced the desired effect, he proceeded to say, that, not to conceal longer what hitherto had been kept secret for the good of all, the truth was, he had " never any intention to go for Brazil, after he found that they could not leave England before Christmas ; but that the West Indies was his object," where there were many probabilities to make a voyage by, — as, first, the sacking of Margarita, which they knew was rich ; then Puerto Rico ; after that St. Domingo ; then, in July, the outward-bound fleet would be in the Acoa, where we could not miss them ; and if these gave us not content, in the end of July or August we should meet the fleet at Cape S. Antonio. Some of these projects, he mentioned, " more," he says, " to carry the men with good liking thither, than for any thought he had of them himself."

All entering unto his views " with greedy desire and hopeful expectation," he directed them each to make the best of his way for Dominica, thinking it better to go straggling thither, there being possibility to meet some purchase by the way, which they were most in likelihood of when they spread furthest." There they had all arrived on the 23d of May, and then they carried their sick on shore. The island was inhabited only by Indians, who hated the Spaniards, and liked the French no better, but were well pleased with English visitors. They brought great store of potatoes, plantains, pines, pepper, and tobacco, for which they most desired to have swords, hatchets, and knives in exchange ; clothes,

also, were very much in request with them ; but if they could get none, beads or any gaudy baubles were accepted. They spoke some Spanish words, . . . probably enough for all the intercourse that was required. They showed a great desire to obtain the same sort of acquaintance with the language of their new friends : " some of them," says the chaplain, " would point to most parts of his body, and having told the name of it in the language of Dominica, he would not rest till he were told it in English ; which having once heard, he would repeat, till he could either name it right, or at least till he thought it was right ; and so commonly it would be, saving that to all words ending in a consonant they always set the second vowel ; as, for chin they say *chin-ne*, so making the monosyllables dissyllables." The chaplain thought their " wits were able to direct them to things bodily profitable ;" he describes them as using either a broad sheet of basket-work, or a very broad leaf in its stead, to shelter them against the rain, because it washed off their red paint, which was so laid on, he said, that if you touched it, you found it on your fingers. They made a drink of the cassava or mandioc root ; " better of their pines (and it should seem, says Layfield, that might be made an excellent liquor) ; but the best, and reserved for the king's cup only, was of potatoes." The earl brought the squadron into a goodly bay, able to receive a greater navy than had been together in the memory of that age : it was at the N. W. end of the island ; and his information directed him to seek for a hot spring there, which he found fast by the side of a very fine river. " The bath," says Layfield, " is as hot as either the Cross bath or the King's bath in the city of Bath in England ; and within three or four yards runneth into the river, which, within a stone's cast, disburdeneth itself into the sea. Here the sick men specially found good refreshing ;" and here they remained till the 1st of June. It was thought convenient to take a muster of their companies here, " and something better to acquaint every one with his own colours ;" but the

weather proved so unfavourable that this could not be done.

But notwithstanding the ill weather, the beauty of the country made a strong impression upon those whose hearts were not wholly set upon schemes of plunder. It is "so mountainous," says Layfield, "that the valleys may better be called pits than plains; and withal so unpassably woody, that it is marvellous how those naked souls can pull themselves through them, without renting their natural clothes. Some speak of more easy passages in the inland of the island, which makes it probable that they leave those skirts and edges of their country thus of purpose for a wall of defence. Their hills are appareled with very goodly green trees, of many sorts. The tallness of these unrequested trees makes the hills seem more hilly than of themselves happily they are; for they grow so like good children of some happy civil body, without envy or oppression, as that they look like a proud meadow about Oxford, when, after some irruption, Thames is again couched low within his own banks, leaving the earth's mantle more ruggy and flakey than otherwise it would have been; yea, so much seem these natural children delighted with equality, and withal with multiplication, that, having grown to a definite stature, without desire of overtopping others, they willingly let down their boughs, which, being come to the earth again, take root, as it were to continue the succession of their decaying progenitors; and yet they do continually maintain themselves in a green good-liking, through the liberality, partly of the sun's neighbourhood which provideth them, in that nearness to the sea, of exceeding showers; partly of many fine rivers, which, to requite the shadow and coolness they receive from the trees, give them back again a continual refreshing of very sweet and tasty water. *

The weather, and the difficulty of finding an open piece of ground of sufficient extent, having rendered it impossible for the earl to muster his people here,

* Purchas, 1158.

he sailed, on the 1st of June, for the Virgin Islands, and on the afternoon of the 3d, came to an anchor. A fit place having been discovered on one of these uninhabited islands that evening, the land forces went ashore betimes on the following morning, being Whit Sunday. There he took a perfect muster of them. The companies, indeed (though after much sickness), were "goodly in number, one might well say, not so few as a thousand." When they had been trained "into all sorts and faces of fights," the earl, who found it, he says, "for many respects meet to speak to them, commanded the drums to beat a call; and the troops being drawn in the nearest closeness that conveniently they might be, that he might be heard of all, his lordship, standing under a great cliff of a rock, his prospect to the seaward, stepped upon one of the greater stones, which added to his natural stature, gave him a pretty height above the other company; and so commanding audience, made a speech to them." We have the harangue preserved, as nearly as he could remember it, in his own unfinished relation. "Kind countrymen and fellow soldiers," said he, "I am sure there is none here but have marked, and the wisest wonder at my light regarding the many gross faults committed among you, suffering every man to do what he would, and urging no man further than he listed. Many courses drew me to this patience; only one I will now utter, the rest being fitter to conceal to myself than to make so many acquainted with. The great hope of meeting the carracks made me hope for a short journey; which if it had happened, I thought it better to return with every man's good word, than by punishing of any to have their ill word at my return. But that hope is altogether past; and now we are settled to another course, which, though it may be will not prove altogether so rich, and must of force keep us longer abroad, yet I assure you, upon my honour and conscience, I do constantly believe there will spring out of it more glory to God, more service to our prince and country, and more honour to ourselves, than could have

been done by the carracks if we had taken them all. For the better performance we must fall to another course; I in governing, you in obeying; I in directing you what to do, you in following my directions; to which end I have already delivered you certain articles. And though these twenty days at the least you have had them amongst you, yet fear I there are some which wish they could but light upon so much as they would conceal from me. Base conditions be hateful things in men professing arms; there is none baser than theft, and no theft so base as for a man to steal from his own companion: and he that concealeth any thing gotten in this journey, stealeth from every man in it, . . . all going to have their part of whatsoever is gotten. This I thought not unfit particularly to touch, because the speech hath given great offence to the whole army, and no doubt may encourage some of lewd and base humours among us to do the like. But let the warning I now give you drive these thoughts out of their thoughts that hold them; and be also a warning that they heedfully observe the rest of the articles. For, I assure you, my over-patient and forced sluggish humour is shaken off; and I will neither oversee, nor suffer to pass unpunished, ill deservers." *

As they were now within a day's sail of Puerto Rico, he appointed officers for the field. Twelve companies were made up, whereof if any "wanted the full number of eighty, they were plentifully supplied by a large overplus of gallant gentlemen that followed his lordship's colours, borne by captain Bromley; and sir John Berkeley also had another eighty; so that the whole army appointed to land was near upon a thousand, especially seeing that the officers of several companies were not reckoned in these numbers." It was now debated whether to pass through the Virgins, which many of the masters and sea captains would have preferred as the nearer way, and there were divers on board, both soldiers and mariners, who had gone this way with

* Purchas, 1153, 1159.

Drake; or to hold the old course through the Passages. The first was the nearer but more dangerous way, being, says Layfield, very narrow, about the breadth of the Thames near London, and they durst not promise themselves the continuance of a leading wind. The earl however determined upon the further and safer course; more desiring, he said, to be the first that took Puerto Rico, than the second that past through the Virgins. On the morning of the 5th, two small pinnaces were sent forward to explore the landing, captain Knotsford, who was in one of them, having been sir John Hawkins's pilot, and esteemed to be very expert in those countries. The fleet lingered till it was dark, and then putting out all sails, came to them undiscovered a little after midnight. But the pinnaces had found the distance more than had been supposed; it was dark before they reached the place which they went to discover, and for fear of carrying the earl to leeward, they had tarried for him and done nothing. He stood off and on till morning, and then descried what appeared to him a smooth landing place; but all who had been with Drake insisted that it was impossible to get there, "the wind over-blowing all day out of the sea." The earl, however, and sir John Berkeley rowed thither, and found it not only smooth but a most goodly sandy bay, and that they might march all along by the sea-side till they came to the town. Well pleased with this, he gave orders that every captain and ship should put their men in boats, and follow his bloody colours, which he would have presently landed. But some of the commanders objected that the march seemed to be great, that none knew the way, and that if the town, as they had often heard, stood on an island, they should be forced to return to their ships, not having means to get unto it. "Gentlemen," said the earl, "a willing mind makes long steps with great ease. I have been sick, and am not now strong; you shall go no farther nor faster than I will do before you. For guides, we need no better than our eyes; the town standing by the sea-side, and we land-

ing from the sea, see no other but fair sandy bays all the way thither. We might land much nearer, if we were sure there were any where to leeward such a headland as this, that maketh smooth landing within it; but that being uncertain, I mean to take this, which I do assuredly believe God hath directed us unto; for I am sure it is better than any ever told me of. And for your last argument, that if it be an island we shall not get into it, that reason is nothing; for you see our boats may row by us; and when we shall come to any water, they may set us over if it be deep; in shallow places we shall pass ourselves. So all you have said or can say being thoroughly answered, let me have no more speaking, but get your men all into your boats and follow in order as I have directed you." Farther, he told them, that in taking Puerto-rico, they should possess the keys of all the Indies, and that though there were not so many millions in the town as when a greater force failed to take it, it was nevertheless rich, and there were gold mines in the island. And if men of judgement thought it was too strong for their strength to carry, because it had already resisted a much stronger force, that consideration ought to encourage them, seeing the more cause would they have to be proud of taking it; "and believe me," he pursued, "assured we are to take it, now we see where to land quietly; the Indian soldiers live too pleasantly to venture their lives; they will make a great show, and perhaps endure one brunt, but if they do any more, tear me to pieces!"*

By eight in the morning the whole force was landed, about 1000 men, "in a most fine place, says the earl, where not any wet his furniture nor saw an enemy; by which means all our troops were put in good order, and were made much stronger than a small resistance before we were marshalled would have made us." The landing was about four leagues from the town, toward which they marched in the extreme heat of the day; this, and the way being sandy, would, he says,

* Purchas, 1153, 1154.

“no doubt have tired many, but that going all along by the sea, they marched at pleasure in it when they listed; and besides, had the place whither they were going still in sight, which, standing upon the top of a hill, showed much nearer than it was.” Commonly on firm sometimes on loose sand, yet it was a fair march for three leagues, when a few horsemen who had been sent to view their strength, came near enough to reconnoitre them; then turned their horses and galloped away. They soon fell in with a negro who was willing enough to be their guide, but he neither spoke good English nor good Spanish; and moreover was in great fear, as well he might be, at finding himself exposed to imminent danger on one side or the other, whether he led them right or not. “Through most unpassable rocks and cliffs,” he brought them to the entrance of an arm of the sea, by which the little island on which the capital stands is separated from the main one. The earl had expected to get over in his boats, but this he saw was hindered by a bulwark on the island side, close at the mouth of the entrance, with five pieces of great brass ordnance. The entrance was not above sixty yards over, and a little within stopped quite across with piles; so that while the Spaniards occupied this fort it was not possible to get in there. There were some who proposed to plant musqueteers among the rocks, that they might beat those in the fort from their guns; but though this was thought feasible, it was not determined on, because, if the fort had been silenced, they were ignorant of the depth; and the boats had not yet found any landing place. And here,” the chaplain says, “we were at a flat bay, even at our wits’ end.” The earl, however, was sure there must be some good passage by which the horsemen had come; “and with much ado the negro being something comforted, and partly with threatening, partly with promises, brought to the little wits he had,” was made to understand whither they wanted to be guided. “When,” says the earl, “I perceived he understood me, I followed him through the most wick-

edest wood that ever I was in in all my life." The troops went on "with as nimble minds as weary bodies, for they had marched from morning till it was even on the edge of the evening, but they would not be weary; and, at length, through such untrodden paths, or rather no paths, as would have taught," the chaplain observes, "the most proud body to stoop humbly," they came upon the footing of the horsemen, and following their beaten track, came just at sunset to a long and narrow causeway, leading to a bridge, which connected the great island with the lesser one. The causeway was wide enough for three persons abreast, and the bridge was drawn up: on the opposite bank was a strong barricade, and a little beyond it a fort with ordnance. They learnt from another negro, that at low water the passage was fordable beside the causeway; "but their own sailors could say little to the ebbing and flowing here;" and the only way to know the fit time of assault was to set a continual watch, to give present information of the ebb. Two in the morning was the time which the negro stated. The troops, therefore, were ordered to rest and refresh themselves, for the better enabling them to fight in the morning.*

* Purchas, 1154. 1160. Thus far the earl's own narrative of the voyage extends:—"The same honourable hand," says Purchas, "hath been our actor and author; but here, when he comes to doing, he breaks off speaking, and (*tam Marte quam Mercurio*) exchangeth words for swords, and mercurial arts into martial acts." He then often declares the reason which induced him to leave out a political discourse, and state-moral mystery of this history, written by the same noble commander. "The times," he says, "are altered, and howsoever planets have their peculiar course, fixed stars must move with their orb, and follow the first moveable. The men of Bethshemesh bought dearly their prying into the ark; and I know not how I may be tolerated to utter now in public those state-mysteries which he then in private counselled for his country's good. I could also be willing, as I know the world would be greedy of such morsels; but Æsop's dog, snatching at the shadow of a morsel in the water, lost that which he had in his mouth; and his crow, gaping to sing to please the fox, displeased herself with loss of all her other wealth and purchase. Everywhere in this vast work we have been wary, and yet scarce wary enough of this danger in our wariest wariness; wherein yet (if any such fault be) it is not an itching finger, busy in things above us, but store of business in so multiform a task, perhaps, hath occasioned oversight to eyes, otherwise dim enough. Once, whatsoever the king and state disclaim, I disclaim also as not mine, because I and mine are theirs, and no farther desire to be, or see mine own than in the public; of which, and for which (under God) I am, have, can, write, do, speak, acknowledge all things. I will pry in the East and West Indies, rather than state it at home." P. 1154.

They retired to a piece of open ground over which they had past. The negro guided them to some fresh water; some had brought bread with them, and the earl "was no niggard of what he had." His lodging that night was his target. "I," says the chaplain, "lay at his head, and to my remembrance never slept better. Two hours before day the alarum was given very quietly, and was readily taken, for we needed not but to shake our ears." There grew a question concerning the command that day, between Berkeley and the earl, arising from a honourable desire, on both sides, to have the post of danger. the earl yielded to a fair plea, becomingly urged, and to the representation, that being the general, it behoved him, for the sake of the army, to consider his own preservation; nevertheless he persisted in being at the service in person, though he left sir John with the command; and he put himself in armour, as did all the commanders, and who else had armour, for they looked that the service should be hot." So, indeed, it proved; the enemy's sentinels discovered them as they approached; the Spaniards were perfectly prepared; and the member of the church militant, when he declares it may be well said that it was well fought by his comrades, says also, that if it had been day, and every one could have seen what he did, so many would probably not have deserved so much commendation. The assault continued about two hours; and "though the assailants left no way in the world unattempted, yet no way could they find to enter the gate." The causeway, he says, had been purposely made so rugged, that the adventurers, in order to keep their feet, chose to wade in the water beside it. The earl's shieldbearer stumbled, and, falling against the earl, overthrew him into the water, where, being by reason of his armour unable to rise, he was in great danger of drowning. It was not till a second attempt, that the serjeant-major, who was next him, succeeded in getting him out, and not till he had swallowed so much salt water, as to cause such ex-

tremity of sickness, that he was forced to lie down in the very place, upon the causeway, till being somewhat recovered, he was able to be led to a spot of more ease, where the bullets made him threatening music on every side ; and there he remained till the end of the action, lying upon the ground, " very exceeding sick," in a place so perilous, that it would have been as safe to be at the entry of a breach by assault.*

The assailants had the advantage of numbers, but they were in a position where that advantage could not avail them. " Not less than 3000 English bullets were sent among the Spaniards, who, on their part, were not much behind the invaders, in sending these heavy leaden messengers of death ; for besides six pieces of great ordnance which played just upon the causeway, and some pretty store of musqueteers, at a port fast by the gate there lay a fowler, or cast piece that did more scathe than all the rest, for this shot at once many murdering shot, wherefore the piece is also called a murderer." Yet the English came to the gate, and some two or three began to hew at it with bills, for want of fitter instruments ; others meantime were at the push of the pike at the ports and loop-holes, and having broken their own pikes, seized those of their enemies with their naked hands and broke them. With all these exertions they could not force an entrance, and Berkeley, attempting to discover if a passage could be found on either side of the gate, twice waded so far that he got into deep water, and must have perished if he could not have swam. The end was that the tide came in ; and when day began to break, the water, which had been knee-deep, was up to the waist ; day-light would have enabled the Spaniards to sweep the causeway with their guns, and the English were brought off in good time to the place where they had passed the night. " God," the chaplain says, " would not have more bloodshed, nor our troops as yet to have their wills." The loss in killed and wounded was some-

* Purchas, 116l.

thing less than fifty. As soon as the surgeons had looked to the wounded, the men were marched to the sea-side, where the boats had been ordered to meet them with food.*

While they refreshed themselves there, the earl went on board, being still so sick that some danger was apprehended. His intention had been to rest on board that night, but his thoughts were so busied and restless that in a few hours he had digested another plan of operations, and came on shore again to put it in execution. The resolution was to attack the fort at the entrance of the channel; and believing it necessary to carry this, at whatever cost, he ordered one of the ships to bear in close to the shore, though the danger of her driving upon the rocks was apparent. Some fifty musqueteers were stationed upon the broken ground opposite; from whence it had before been noted that they might beat the enemy from their guns. At the same time 200 men were embarked in boats, that they might effect a landing between the forts and the town. In the course of an hour, the ship and the musqueteers had so beaten the fort that the boats landed at leisure, and this advantage was gained with the loss of only one man killed and three wounded; but as it had been apprehended, the ship went upon the rocks, and finally was cast away. The Spaniards met them after they were landed, and skirmished awhile gallantly, till, finding themselves the weaker party, they effected an honourable retreat into a wood, on the skirt whereof they had made their stand: the invaders then advanced to the fort, which had been forsaken, and there they established themselves for the night. By the time the boats returned for a second embarkation it was late at night, and the water so low that there could be no passage till the next flood; so the companies were again marched to the safe ground on which they had taken up their lodging before; there they rested and refreshed themselves, waiting for the tide, crossed there as soon as it served, and being thus

* Purchas, 1161.

in the smaller island, they now made little doubt of complete success. The distance was about a mile and half from the town, the way woody on either side, and so narrow that not more than three men could march abreast; yet though the ground was so fit for ambuscades, "or, says Layfield, for the Irish manner of charging, by sudden coming on and off," no attempt was made to oppose or annoy their march. By day-break they reached the town, and found none but women there, and men whom either age or infirmity or wounds had disabled; the rest had betaken them to one of their forts to the seaward, called Mora.*

The city of San Juan de Puerto-rico is described at that time as less in circuit than Oxford, "but very much bigger than all Portsmouth within the fortifications, and in sight much fairer." There was not much lost ground within that space, the buildings having increased one fourth within the three preceding years. The streets were large, the houses built after the Spanish manner, of two stories height only, but very strongly, and the rooms "goodly and large, with great doors, instead of windows, for receipt of air." "The cathedral was inferior to the poorest of our cathedral churches; and yet," says the chaplain, "it is fair and handsome; two rows of proportionable pillars make two aisles, besides the middle walk, and thus all along up to the high altar. It is darker than commonly country churches in England, for the windows are few and little, and those, indeed, without glass (whereof there is none to be found in the town,) but covered with canvass, so that the most of the light is received by the doors." The earl, as soon as he had taken full possession of the town, set sufficient guard, and quartered his companies, summoned the fort, requiring the governor to deliver it up to him for the queen of England, who had sent him thither to take it; the governor returned for answer that the king of Spain had sent him thither to keep it,

* Purchas, 1161, 1162.

and keep it he would as long as he was able. It was now a great object with the earl to reduce it with the least possible loss, for he considered that he was to leave a strong garrison, and yet must himself go home well guarded. His first care was to cut off all their means of supply; and for this purpose boats were stationed between the fort and the main; two batteries also were provided, in case the enemies' food should last longer than he wished. They were ready on the ninth day after the capture of the town too late to be then opened; and the morrow being Sunday, he would not begin on that day; so it was deferred till the next morning*

“The noise of war meantime was not so great, but that the still voice of justice was well heard.” “It is no news,” says Layfield, “that in such companies there will be outrages committed.” One very good soldier the earl publicly disgraced for “over-violent spoiling a gentlewoman of her jewels.” But as this example did not prove terrible enough to the rest, he called a court-martial, that justice might be armed with the authority of all the commanders; and two were condemned to death upon the article of defacing churches and offering force to women. “He that did violence to a Spaniard's wife, was a soldier, and had given very good proof of his valour; so far, that his lordship had taken special notice of him; but being convicted of this crime, there was no place left for mercy; but hanged he was in the market-place, the Spaniards, as many as would come, being suffered to be present at the execution. The other, who had defaced a church, was a sailor; great intercession was made for him by the importunity of the sailors.”† According to Monson, “there was occasion at that time to please them above the soldiers: twice he was taken from the gallows, while endeavours were used in vain to obtain his pardon, but when he was brought out the third time the earl allowed himself to be entreated. It was, indeed, a case in which the feelings of his people went with the offender, for the

* Purchas, 1164. 1162.

† Ib. 1165. Monson, 193.

soldiers "could not be held from defacing unorderly the images of the saints. They were, however, brought by these examples to much better terms of rule and obedience."*

On Monday "the batteries began to speak very loud ; and whereas till then four or five soldiers could not appear within reach of the fort, but that a shot of great ordnance would be sent to scatter them, scarce a Spaniard was now to be seen upon any part of their wall." In the course of one day it was perceived that the cavalier was sufficiently beaten, and that with the next rain (which at that season was neither seldom nor little) it would fall ; being of a sandy earth, it did but crumble into dust. The cannoneers were directed therefore to "beat the other point nearer the sea, for that so flanked the gate and the breach already made, that without great danger there could not any approach be made, and his lordship was grown exceedingly niggardly of the expense of any one man's life." By the middle of the ensuing day the Spaniard demanded a parley, and proposed to give up the fort, on condition that "with colours flying, match in their cocks and bullets in their mouths, they should be set without the point of the bridge, and go whither they would ; that all prisoners should be delivered without ransom, and no man's negroes or slaves be detained." The earl utterly refused any such composition ; but told him that because he took no pleasure in shedding Christian blood, he would deliver them terms, which, if they liked, he would receive them to mercy. These articles were sent to the governor in the earl's own hand, and in these characteristic words:—

"A resolution which you may trust to.

"I am content to give yourself and all your people their lives : yourself with your captains and officers to pass with your arms ; all the rest of your soldiers with their rapiers and daggers only.

* Purchas, 1167. 1164.

“ You shall all stay here with me, till I give you passage from the island, which shall be within thirty days.

“ Any one of you which I shall chuse shall go with me into England, but shall not stay longer there than one month, but being well fitted for the purpose, shall be safely sent home into Spain without ransom.”

It was doubted whether there were any in the fort who understood English, and therefore some advised that the articles should be translated into Spanish: “ but his lordship peremptorily refused to seek their language, but would have them to find out his.” He gave them respite for deliberation till eight the next morning, and at that time the conditions were accepted, the Spaniards only desiring farther, that they might have two colours left them, in lieu of which they promised that nothing should be spoiled in the fort. The governor and his company dined with the earl: after dinner he returned to the fort, brought out the men, nearly 400, and delivered the keys to the earl, who immediately brought in his own colours and sir John Berkeley's, and placed them upon the two points of the fort. Every thing hitherto had been conducted not only honourably but courteously on either side: the Spaniards took all their property with them, and were secured in the Fortaleza, a strong castle in the city, which they had not attempted to defend. On the following day the fleet entered the harbour, the fort Mora “ being to the sea very strong, and fitted with goodly ordnance, and bestowed for the most advantage to annoy an enemy that possibly could be devised, insomuch that it was thought impossible for any vessel to pass that point if its passage were opposed by her guns. Yet was it very dangerous to ride without, as the invaders found by the loss of many anchors and cables, and of one of their ships.”

The prisoners were sent to Carthagena, as a place so far to the leeward that they neither, in haste, could make any preparation for the recovery of Puerto-rico, nor send news to Spain. The governor and some few others

who deserved some respect, were put on board the ships that convoyed them, and were permitted to proceed in those ships to England. The earl's "honourable resolution and intendment," as the chaplain called it, "was not to come so far for the sake of taking and spoiling some place in the new world, and then run home again, but to keep Puerto-rico, by God's leave, if it pleased God to give it into his hands. That was the place he meant to carry, whatsoever it might cost him, being the very key of the West Indies, which locketh and shutteth all the gold and silver on the continent, and America, and Brazil:" such was his* opinion of its importance. He knew, says Layfield, that St. Domingo might, with much less loss, be taken, and would bring much greater profit for the present; in regard thereof, and of the desire he had his adventurers should become gainers, his thoughts sometimes took that way, but finally they stayed at Puerto-rico, and there settled themselves. As this was his resolution before he had it, so was it also after he had it, and then not only his, but every man of worth or spirit saw such reason in his lordship's designment, that some thought themselves not graciously dealt with in being passed over, while others were named to stay. He was indeed persuaded that though the "eminent and known

* Sir William Monson had formed a very different opinion. "Whereas," he says, "all men's actions have a reasonable shew of likelihood of good to redound to them in their intended enterprises, yet cannot I conceive how a land attempt upon towns could yield my lord any profit, or the merchants that adventured with him. For my lord by experience well knew, having been himself at the taking of some towns, that they afforded little wealth to the taker, because riches of value will be either burned or secretly conveyed away. And for merchandises of great bulk which that poor island yielded, it was only some few hides, black sugar and ginger, which would not amount to any great matter, to countervail the charge of so costly a journey. Commonly that island sends out two or three ships of a reasonable burthen to transport the yearly commodities it yieldeth; for though it bears the name of being in the Indies, yet it is a place remote and unfrequented with traffic, either from the Indies or any other place: or though the island should be surprised at such a season of the year as their commodities were ripe and ready for transportation, yet the value is not to be esteemed, where so many people that adventured with my lord were to look up for a dividend according to their adventure." P. 191.

profits" of the place were ginger, sugar, and hides*, yet the island was rich in gold mines, and that the king of Spain, in his policy, had ceased to work them, because of their very productiveness; "the sweetness he found made him unwilling to have any copartners:" and seeing that this island lay nearest the Indies to those people of whose interloping he stood most in fear, "he would not lay such a bait" to attract them, lest having once set foot there, "they should not only gild their fingers, and pay their soldiers for the present with his treasure," but "make it their halting-place on the longer journey to the other islands and continent, which were the coffers from whence his wars were fed." Another view of reconдите policy was imputed to the Spanish king, who was supposed to reason thus,—that if in a shorter voyage and less time his subjects were sure to make themselves masters of as much gold as if they went farther, few would fetch it from Peru, or the other more inland parts of the Indies. Moreover, it was reported to the conquerors as a certain truth, that Joachin de Luyando†, formerly a mint master in the island, had sent the king a mass of pure gold, which was found to be worth 3500 ducats;

* "There is so incredible abundance of horses," says the chaplain, "that it is lawful for any man to kill what he needeth for his use, if only he be so honest as to bring the skins to the proper owners. Now these hides must rise to a huge sum of riches, considering that their cattle are far larger than any country that I know in England doth yield; for their kine that I have seen here are for goodliness, both of heads and bodies, comparable with our English oxen. And I wot not how that kind of beast hath specially a liking to these southerly parts of the world above their horses, none of which I have seen by much so tall and goodly as ordinarily they are in England. They are well made and well mettled, and good store there are of them; but methinks there are many things wanting in them which are ordinary in our English light horses. They are all trotters; nor do I remember that I have seen above one ambler, and that a very little fidling nag." P. 1171.

† This man, says Layfield, may be judged to have been of no great either wit or care; for it is certainly reported, that oftentimes meeting his own slaves coming out of the country to his house in Puerto-rico with store of gold, he did not know them to be his own, till themselves told him so; and yet this man died so very rich, that he left every of his three sons 100,000 ducats. Insomuch, that the youngest of them being in Spain upon the despatch of some business which his father had left unsettled, was there thought of state so good that a marquis thought his daughter well bestowed upon him in marriage. But see how nothing will last where God, with his preserving blessing, doth not keep things together. For at this day scarce is there any remainder left of all his riches; and this now most poor though great lady, not being able to proportion herself to the lowness of her fortune, and besides vexed with her husband's ill condition, hath, by authority, left him; and having entered religious profession, is at this present in a nunnery in St. Domingo. Page 1170.

and "divers times he had found such pieces of pure ore, that only by splitting them he made himself trenchers of gold to eat his meat on."* Perhaps the military chaplain was as little likely as any of those who were under his spiritual care to consider how much happier this rich Joachin might have been, if he had remained in his own country, where he might have eaten from a wooden trencher with as good an appetite, and a better conscience.

The English apprehended no ill from the climate. From three in the morning till six was the coolest part of the day: "a man might then well endure some light clothes upon him; from six till about eight it was very 'sweltering;'" then a fresh breeze usually sprung up and continued to blow till four or five in the afternoon, during which time the houses were comfortably cool: the hottest hours were from thence till midnight; and it was thought dangerous to be abroad then because of the *sereno*, which Layfield translates "the rainy dew:" the soldiers who lay abroad in the fields awoke wet with it. "Books had their glued backs melted and loosened by the heat: flowers or fruits candied in England lost their crust there, and English comfits grew liquid;" but after some little acquaintance he thought it likely to prove a very healthful place, for they found hale people there who were eighty or ninety years old. The report of some mortality that had lately prevailed there seems not to have disquieted them. "What place," said the chaplain, "is always free from that scourge of God?" But he soon discovered that the great rains in July and August "must needs be very dangerous to bodies already rarefied by the heat of the sun then over them, and yet rather where vehement exercise hath more opened the pores whereby inward heat is exhaled." Early in July more than 200 had died, there were twice as many sick, and "no great hope to recover the most of them." The disease was a flux, "sometimes in the beginning accompanied with a hot

* Purchas, 1165. 1170.

ague, but always in the end attended by an extreme debility and waste of spirits, so that for some two days before death the arms and legs would be wonderful cold, and this was held for a certain sign of near departure." From this mortality the earl "saw it was not God's pleasure that this island as yet should be inhabited by the English;" and as soon as he became conscious that it was not in his power to keep the city which he had taken, he made overtures to the Spaniards for ransoming it. They entertained these overtures without any intention of coming to an agreement, but in hope of prolonging the time, till the prevailing distemper should have so far weakened the invaders, that they should be unable to destroy the place before they abandoned it. This, the chaplain affirms, had never been his lordship's purpose; and it appears that on his part he had not much expectation of obtaining the ransom: but he thought such a negotiation the likeliest way of deluding the islanders, "whom he could not so well rule with any other bit, his own strength being now grown weak."*

Meantime all the hides, ginger, and sugar, which could be collected were forthwith shipped, and so was all the ammunition in the city and all the ordnance which had been taken; "which amounted," says Layfield, "in all and of all sorts very near the full number of fourscore cast pieces, some of them the goodliest that ever I saw." He also put on board some specimens of the sensitive plant in pots, hoping that he might succeed in conveying to England what appeared to him and his people the most extraordinary production of the island.† This done,

* Purchas, 1167, 1168.

† "This herb," the chaplain says, "is a little contemptible weed to look upon, with a long wooden stalk creeping upon the ground, and seldom lifting itself above a handful high from the ground. But it hath a property which confoundeth my understanding, and perhaps will seem strange in the way of philosophers who have denied every part of sense to any plant; yet this certainly seemeth to have feeling. For if you lay your finger, or a stick, upon the leaves of it, not only that very piece which you touched, but that that is near to it, will contract itself, and run together as if it were presently dead and withered; not only the leaves, but the very sprigs being touched, will so disdainfully withdraw themselves as if they would slip themselves

he left the strength of the navy with sir John Berkeley, to follow him as soon as they were ready, and sailed himself with two of the larger ships and seven smaller ones. "The true reason of his desire to be gone from Puerto-rico quickly was a desire he had to be at the Azores, for he had so plotted the voyage, that still he would have a string left in store for his bow, and he hoped to be there before the Mexican fleet." The instructions which he left with every ship, under his own hand, were in these words:—' You shall steer in with the southward part of Flores. If you find me not in that course, then seek me between ten and fourteen leagues of Fayal, west-south-west. If there you find me not, then come through betwixt Fayal and the Pike, and seek me in the road at Graciosa. If you find me at none of these places, you may be assured I am gone from the islands to England.' He left order with Berkeley to leave the city undefaced, saving only that Fort Mora should be rased to the landward." Both the earl's division and Berkeley's were scattered in a storm; the earl, however, when he came off Flores, met with enough of his ships to form a respectable force; but he learnt that the homeward-bound carracks were passed by, and that the Mexican fleet was not expected: and upon this disappointment a council was held, and it was determined to return to England without delay. They would probably have all been wrecked upon Ushant and the rocks, if the earl had not, in opposition to his master, judged from the soundings that they were near the coast of France, and given orders therefore to take a more northerly course; for the next morning that coast was seen.*

rather than be touched; in which state both leaf and sprig will continue a good while before it return to the former green and flourishing form. And they say, that so long as the party which touched it standeth by it, it will not open, but after his departure it will; this last I did not myself observe, and if it be so, it must be more than sense whence such a sullenness can proceed; but for the former, I have myself been often an eye-witness, to my great wonder, for it groweth in very many places in the little island."

Page 1174.

* Purchas, 1168. 1176.

This was his last expedition. No other subject ever undertook so many at his own cost; and Fuller gives him the distinction of being "the best born Englishman that ever hazarded himself in that kind;" adding, that his fleets were "bound for no other harbour than the port of Honour, though touching at the port of Profit in passage thereunto; I say *touching* (says the old worthy), for his design was not to enrich himself, but impoverish the enemy.—He was as merciful as valiant, (the best metal bows best), and left impressions of both in all places where he came." Fuller eulogizes him as "a person wholly composed of true honour and valour." There were some other ingredients in his character; and when the earl of Cumberland bore "next to his paternal coats three murdering chain shots," such an addition to his armorial bearings was more significant than he intended it. The desire of gain must have influenced him in his privateering speculations as much as the desire of honour; for a prodigal expenditure, and losses in horse-racing (which species of gaming had in his days begun to be one of the follies of the great), had embarrassed his affairs. Next to his voyages, this passion, and the display which he made at tilts, and in all other expensive sports, "were the great occasion of his selling land;" and he is said to have "consumed more than any one of his ancestors."* The large expenditure which his station required his own ample means could amply have supported; but no means are adequate to the demands of prodigality.

When James came to take possession of his new kingdom, this nobleman "attended him with such an equipage of followers, for number and habit, that he seemed rather a king than earl of Cumberland. Here happened a contest between the earl and the lord president of the north, about carrying the sword before the king in York: the office, upon due enquiry, was adjudged to him; and whilst Clifford's Tower," says Fuller, "is standing in York, that family will never be therein forgotten."

* Hist. of Westmoreland, 290.

He died in the 48th year of his age, and was buried at Skipton. His armour may still be seen in Appleby Castle. His two sons died in infancy; and the only daughter whom he left experienced little of his love, for bequeathing to her 15,000*l.* he cut off the entail of his estates and settled them upon his brother. She contested the settlement without success; but on the death of that brother without issue the estates reverted to her. This daughter, by her second marriage countess of Pembroke, was one of the most high minded and remarkable women of her age; and seems to have been the last person in England by whom the old baronial dignity of feudal times was supported. All the good connected with it was manifested in this instance without any of the evil. Daniel was her tutor,—and she had the honour of erecting Spenser's monument.

**SIR JOHN HAWKINS AND SIR FRANCIS
DRAKE.**

SIR JOHN HAWKINS, the second son of master William Hawkins, and Joan Trelawny his wife, was born at Plymouth. His father is said to have been much esteemed by Henry VIII. as a principal sea-captain, and is the first Englishman who is known to have traded to Brazil, having made two voyages thither in his own ship, the Paul of Plymouth, in the years 1530 and 1532.* Plymouth was already a port so famous, that the biographer of Devonshire extols it as presenting “ a kind of invitation from the commodiousness thereof to maritime noble actions †;” and the youth was brought up to his father’s calling, and gained much experience by making early in life several voyages to Spain, Portugal, and the Canaries, “ which were, in those days, extraordinary adventures.” Being “ grown in love and favour” with the Canarians by his good and upright dealing, and enquiring from them concerning the state of the West Indies, he was assured “ that negroes were very good merchandise in Hispaniola; and that store of them might easily be had upon the coast of Guinea.” He resolved upon trying his fortune in this trade; and having communicated that desire with his worshipful friends in London, sir Lionel Ducket, sir Thomas Lodge, his father-in-law, master Gunson, sir William Winter, and some others, they liked so well

* Hakluyt, iii. 700.

† Prince’s Worthies.

of his intention, that they became liberal contributors and adventurers in the action.

1562. Three good ships were accordingly provided, the Solomon, of 120 tons, the Swallow, of 100, and the Jonas, of 40, "in which small fleet Hawkins took with him not above an hundred men *, for fear of sickness and other inconveniences, whereunto men in long voyages are commonly subject." He sailed in October, 1562, touched at Teneriffe, where he received friendly entertainment, and proceeded to Sierra Leone; which place is said to have been called Taggarin by the natives. There he stayed some time, "and got into his possession, partly by the sword, and partly by other means, to the number of 300 negroes at the least, besides other merchandise which that country yieldeth." With this prey (so it is properly denominated) he sailed for Hispaniola, and arrived first at the port of Isabella, "where he had reasonable utterance of his English commodities, and of some part of his negroes, trusting the Spaniards no farther than that by his own strength he was able to master them." At Puerto de Plata he made "like sales, standing always upon his guard;" and at Monte Christo, on the north side of the island, "made vent" of the remainder of his negroes, receiving for them, at these places, by way of exchange, some quantity of pearls, and hides, ginger, sugar, and "other like commodities," enough, not only to load his own vessels, but for freighting two other hulks †; and so "with prosperous success, and much gain to himself and the aforesaid adventurers, he came home, and arrived in September, 1563."

It is now no honour to have been the first Englishman who engaged in the slave trade. ‡ But it is not

* "Such," says Campbell, "were the beginnings of Britain's naval power!" With how little reflection must that inept observation have been written!

† Hakluyt, iii. 500.

‡ This is ascribed to Hawkins; but a sentence in Camden's history (honourable to the historian) seems to throw some doubt upon it. "Blackmoor slaves," he says (108.), "were now commonly bought in Africa by the Spaniards, and, from their example, by the English, and sold again in America; how honestly I know not."

generally known how so iniquitous a trade grew up without being regarded as in the slightest degree repugnant either to natural justice, or to the principles of Christianity. At a time when European warfare had been mitigated by the courtesies of chivalry, and by the frequent changes of political relations, more than by any growing sense of humanity, the wars between Mahomedan and Christian were carried on with as much ferocity as in the days of Cœur de Lion: only where the contending parties, as in Spain, were continually opposed to each other, such unrelenting butchery was disused by mutual though tacit consent, because it would have reduced the land to a desert; and there, those who fell into the hands of their enemies were made slaves. The Portugueze, having cleared their own territory, invaded the Moors in Barbary; the same system was there pursued with the same people. Their first discoveries were made as much in the spirit of conquest as of adventure; and the same treatment which usage had allotted to the captured Moors was extended, as of course, to the negroes who were taken along the same line of coast. To so great an extent did this prevail, that negro slavery was almost as common in Portugal in the early part of the sixteenth century as it afterwards became in the sugar islands. And so entirely were all persons possessed with the opinion that slavery was the condition to which this unhappy race was destined, that Las Casas, when he proposed the substitution of negro for Indian slavery, as a measure of humanity, never suspected himself of acting inconsistently, nor dreamed that the injustice and cruelty were as great to the one race as to the other.

Hawkins, then, is not individually to be condemned, if he looked upon dealing in negroes to be as lawful as any other trade, and thought that force or artifice might be employed for taking them with as little compunction as in hunting, fishing, or fowling: this was the common opinion of his age, and not a solitary voice had

Oct. 1564. been raised against it. In the ensuing year he sailed upon a second trading voyage, with the *Jesus of Lubeck*, which was a queen's ship of 700 tons, the *Solomon*, of 140, and two barks, the one of 50, the other of 30, well stored, and manned with 170 men. They fell in and joined company with another queen's ship, the *Minion*, captain David Carlet, and the *St. John Baptist*, of London, bound to Guinea. Their consort, the *Minion*, was blown up by the carelessness of a gunner; but most of the people were saved. Hawkins's instructions were thought worthy of being recorded as "good orders for a fleet on a long voyage." They were in these words:—
 "The small ships to be always a-head and a-weather of the *Jesus*, and to speak twice a day with the *Jesus* at least. If in the day the ensign be over the poop of the *Jesus*, or in the night two lights, then shall all the ships speak with her. If there be three lights aboard the *Jesus*, then doth she cast about. If the weather be extreme, that the small ships cannot keep company with the *Jesus*, then all to keep company with the *Solomon*, and forthwith repair to Teneriffe, to the northward of the road of Sirroes. If any happen to any misfortune, then to show two lights, and to shoot off a piece of ordnance. If any loose company, and come in sight again, to make three yawes, and strike the mizen three times. Serve God daily; love one another; preserve your victuals; beware of fire, and keep good company."*

They touched at the Canaries †, "the fruitfulness of which island," says the historian of this voyage ‡, "doth surely exceed far all other that I have heard of. For they make wine better than any in Spain: they have grapes of such bigness, that they may be compared to damsons, and in taste inferior to none: for sugar, suckets, raisins of the sun, and many other fruits, abundance; for rosine and raw silk there is great store:

* Hakluyt, iii. 501.

† "Here we took fishes with heads like conies, and teeth nothing varying; of a jolly thickness, but not past a foot long; and is not to be eaten without flaying, or cutting off his head."—*Hakluyt*, 503.

‡ John Sparke.

they want neither corn, pullets, cattle, nor yet wild fowl. They have many camels, also, which, being young, are eaten of the people for victuals, and being old, they are used for carriage. About this island are certain flitting islands, which have been oftentimes seen, and when men approached near them they vanished; as the like hath been of these islands now known, by the report of the inhabitants, which were not found of long time one after the other; and therefore it should seem he is not yet born to whom God hath appointed the finding of them." From thence they made Cape de Verd, where the natives are described as "more civil than any other, because of their daily traffic with the Frenchmen," and as being "of nature very gentle and loving." This they had shown by their treatment of some shipwrecked Frenchmen a little before. Yet, though Hawkins knew the disposition of these people, and had taken on board one of the men who had been so kindly used, that he was not, without difficulty, persuaded to leave them, he endeavoured to kidnap some for slaves, and laid snares for them accordingly. But the crew of the ship which had been blown up revealed the intended treachery, and thereby frustrated it: perhaps, having lost their ship, they were not entitled to share with the rest; for it is not to be supposed that they had any better sense of right and wrong than their comrades.*

Hawkins could not enter the Rio Grande as he wished, for want of a pilot; he proceeded, therefore, to "one of the islands called Sambula," and staying there certain days, went "every day on shore to take the inhabitants, with burning and spoiling their towns." It is no extenuation of this conduct that it appeared to the natives as legitimate a consequence of the law of the strongest as it did to themselves: nevertheless, when we contemplate the course of history, it is a consolatory consideration, that the evil produced by invasions and conquest is not all additional evil; but that, as in this case, barbarous tribes or nations have endured from strangers such

* Hakluyt, 502, 503.

miseries as they would otherwise have inflicted upon each other. A people, whom the relater of this voyage calls Samboses, and whose own country was beyond Sierra Leone, had conquered these islands three years before from the Sapiés, a tribe who inhabited about Rio Grande. "These Sapiés," he says, "be more cruel than the Samboses; for, whereas the Samboses live most by the spoil of their enemies, both in taking their victuals, and eating them also, the Sapiés do not eat man's flesh, unless in the war they be driven by necessity thereunto; which they have not used but by the example of the Samboses, but live only upon fruits and cattle, of which they have great store. This plenty is the occasion that the Sapiés desire not war, except they be thereunto provoked: whereas the Samboses, for want of food, are enforced thereunto, and are not wont only to eat them that they kill, but also keep those that they take until such time as they want meat, and then they kill them." The desire of gold was another motive; for the Sapiés buried the dead with their golden ornaments, and the fiercer tribe plundered the graves, the use of gold, as a medium of exchange, being almost the sole practice of civilised society, "in which the Portugueze had instructed the natives of the coast." *

The Sapiés were in appearance the more barbarous people of the two: they filed their teeth, "for a bravery to set out themselves" (a fashion, however, which is likely to have originated in manners as ferocious as those of their neighbours); and "they do jagg their flesh," says the writer, "both legs, arms, and bodies, as workman-like as a jerkin-maker with us pinketh a jerkin." These people were kept by their conquerors to till the ground; and by their labour it had been brought into a more productive state than any other part of the country. Poor wretches, the arrival of the English brought with it nothing but evil to them, for upon them it was that the whole evil fell: their habitations were burnt, their plantations wasted; and, while the Samboses escaped in

* Hakluyt, 504.

their canoes to the main, they fell into the invaders' hands, and exchanged the easiest of all states of slavery for the worst. "We took many in that place," is the statement of one of these freebooters, "and as much of their fruits as we could well carry away." This booty was obtained at the cost of a single life: a man, at their departure, having tarried rashly to gather pom-pions, was watched by the negroes, who came behind him, overthrew him, and cut his throat; thus taking no undue vengeance upon the only white man that fell into their hands.*

Flushed with this "prosperous success," Hawkins was easily persuaded by some Portuguese, whom he fell in with after leaving the island, to attack a negro town called Bymebea, where, they told him, there was great quantity of gold, and not above 40 men, and 100 women and children; so that if he would "give the adventure, he might get 100 slaves." He was provoked by his ruling motive, the desire of gain; and also by a determination "that the Portuguese should not think him to be of so base a courage, but that he durst give them that, and greater attempts." Accordingly, forty well-appointed men set forth upon this adventure, guided by certain Portuguese, "who brought some of them to their deaths." A marginal note in the original narrative says, here, "Portugals not to be trusted;" but the narrative itself shows, that misconduct, and not treachery, brought upon this party what they well deserved. They dispersed, contrary to the captain's orders, every one thinking to secure what gold he could for himself: the negroes took advantage of this, attacked the stragglers, and drove the whole party to their boats, pursuing them to the water. Seven of the kidnappers were killed, including master Field, captain of the Solomon, and twenty-seven wounded. The people were somewhat discomfited at this; but Hawkins, "in a singular wise manner, carried himself with countenance very cheerful outwardly, as though he did little weigh the death of his men, nor yet the great

* Hakluyt, 505.

hurt of the rest ; although his heart inwardly was broken to pieces for it." " But he assumed this cheer to the end, that the Portugals, being with him, should not presume to resist against him, nor take occasion to put him to farther displeasure."*

After this the two ships anchored at Taggarin, while the smaller craft went up " a river called the Casseroes," about their traffic. There they learnt from the Portugueze, that a great battle was about to be fought; the people of Sierra Leone having prepared 300 canoes to invade them of Taggarin. A day was appointed for the battle, " which we would have seen," says the narrator, " to the intent we might have taken some of them, had it not been for the death and sickness of our men, which came by the contagiousness of the place." The canoes carried threescore men apiece, and the towns up the river were large, so that they had looked for a good booty in prisoners ; but the fatal climate compelled them to make haste away ; and they were informed by a Portugueze, that they had narrowly escaped from the king of Sierra Leone, " who had made all the power he could" to take some of them, partly for the desire he had to see what kind of people they were. An attempt to surprize them failed, for they took alarm at him, though not thinking there had been such a mischief pretended toward them as there was indeed. " If these men," says the writer, " had come down in the evening, they had done us great displeasure, for that we were on shore filling water : but God, who worketh all things for the best, would not have it so, and by him we escaped without danger: his name be praised for it."†

These adventurers resembled the Spaniards as much in their sense of religion as in their want of any sense of justice or humanity. Making for the West Indies, they were becalmed for the space of eighteen days, " having now and then," says the writer, " contrary winds and some tornados, amongst the same calm ; which hap-

* Hakluyt, 506.

† Ibid.

pened to us very ill, being but reasonably watered for so great a company of negroes and ourselves. This pinched us all; and, that which was worst, put us in such fear, that many never thought to have reached the Indies, without great death of negroes and of themselves; but the Almighty God, which never suffereth his elect to perish, sent us the ordinary breeze." The first land which they made was Dominica, happening fortunately upon the most desolate part of the island; whereby they escaped all danger from the cannibals, whom the Spaniards represented as the most desperate warriors in the Indies, and "very devils in respect of men." Proceeding to Margarita, the alcaide entertained them hospitably, and gave them both beeves and sheep for refreshing their men; but the governor would neither speak with Hawkins, nor permit him to traffic, nor allow him to engage a pilot. He despatched notice of their arrival to the viceroy at St. Domingo; and the viceroy sent orders, in consequence, to Cape dela Vela, and to other places along the coast, that no man should trade with these interlopers, but that they were to be resisted with all the force that could be brought together.*

Obtaining no trade here, and finding no opportunity to take in water, Hawkins departed and came to Cumana. The Spaniards whom he found there, said "they were but soldiers newly arrived, and were not able to buy his negroes," and they directed him to a commodious watering place two leagues off called Santa Fé. Next day the Indians came down, "presenting meal and cakes of bread, made of a kind of corn called maize, in bigness of pease, the ear whereof is much like to a teazel, but a span in length, having thereon a number of grains. Also they brought down hens, potatoes, and pines, which we bought," the relator proceeds, "for beads, pewter whistles, glasses, knives, and other trifles. These potatoes be the most delicate roots that may be eaten, and do far exceed our parsnips or carrots. Their pines be of the bigness of two fists, the outside whereof is of

the making of a pine apple ; but it is soft like the rind of a cucumber, and the inside eateth like an apple, but it is more delicious than any sweet apple sugared." The opinion formed of the Indians here was, that they "surely were gentle and tractable, and such as desire to live peaceably, or else it had been impossible for the Spaniards to have conquered them as they did, and the more to live now peaceably, they being so many in number, and the Spaniards so few."*

Having passed between Tortuga and the main, Hawkins sailed along in his pinnace to discern the coast. The Caribs, of whom he saw many on shore, and some in their canoes, showed him gold, invited him by friendly tokens to trade, and were very importunate with him to land ; which "if it had not been for want of wares to traffic with, he would not have denied them, because the Indians which he had seen before were very gentle people, and such as do no man hurt ; but, as God would have it, he wanted that thing, which, if he had had, would have been his confusion : for these were no such kind of people as he took them to be, but more devilish a thousand parts, and are eaters and devourers of any man they can catch, — bloodsuckers both of Spaniards, Indians, and all that light in their laps ; not sparing their own countrymen, if they can conveniently come by them." This Hawkins learnt at Borburata, where he anchored and went ashore to speak with the Spaniards, declaring himself to be an Englishman, who came thither "to trade with them by the way of merchandise," and requiring license so to do. They made answer that they were forbidden to traffic with any foreigner, on penalty of forfeiting their goods ; "wherefore they desired him not to molest them farther, but to depart as he came, for other comfort he might not look for at their hands, because they were subjects, and might not go beyond the law." To this he replied, that being in a queen's armada, with many soldiers on board, he was in need both of refreshment

* Hakluyt, 508.

for them, and food and money also, without which he could not depart. Their princes were in amity one with another : the English had free traffic in Spain and Flanders ; and he knew no reason why they should not have the like in all the king of Spain's dominions. Upon this the Spaniards said they would send to their governor, who was threescore leagues off ; ten days must elapse before his determination could arrive : meantime he might bring his ships into the harbour, and they would supply him with any victuals he might require.*

The ships accordingly went in, and received all things according to promise. Hawkins then " advised himself, that to remain there ten days idle, spending victuals and men's wages, and, perhaps, in the end, receive no good answer from the governor, it were mere folly." So he requested license for the sale of certain lean and sick negroes, who were like to die upon his hands if he kept them ten days, having little or no refreshment for them ; whereas, if they were disposed of, they would be recovered well enough : and this request, he said, he was forced to make, because he had not otherwise wherewith to pay for the necessaries which he wanted. This request being put in writing was deemed reasonable, and they granted him a license to sell thirty slaves. But though some eagerness to purchase had previously been shown, no one came now to buy. Hawkins knew not whether they sought to protract the time till the governor's answer should arrive, that they " might keep themselves blameless," or if some other policy was in view : upon demanding the cause, he was told that the licence had been granted only to the poorer people to buy negroes of small price : their money was not ready like rich men's ; and, moreover, as soon as they saw the ship, they had sent away their money and their wives to the mountains for fear, and it would take two days to bring them back. Some, however, came to cheapen, but showed such a disposition to bring down the price, that

* Hakluyt, 509.

Hawkins sent for the principal of the town, and made show as if he would depart, saying he was sorry that he had troubled them, as also that he had sent for the governor. For it was not only a licence to sell that he sought, but profit also, which he saw was not to be had there ; and, therefore, he would seek farther. And he showed them his papers, that they might see what he had paid for his negroes ; and declared, also, “ the great charge he was at in his shipping and in wages.” The Spaniards, who wanted slaves, and hoped to get them cheap, did not like to hear of his departure : they “ put him in comfort to sell better there than in any other place ;” and went so far as to say that, if licence were refused, he should not lose his labour in tarrying, for they would buy without it.*

The details are curious, because this voyage led the way to those hostilities in the New World, which made the English name so formidable there, and so odious, and which first called forth the character of the English seaman in its whole strength ; and because with these transactions at Borburata that illicit trade commenced, which continued as long as Spain retained its colonies upon the American main. That Hawkins might be induced to stay, the Spaniards bought some of his lean negroes ; but when the purchasers paid the duty, and required from the officer of the customs the customary discharge, the officer refused to give it, and, instead of carrying the money to the king’s account, distributed it to the poor “ for the love of God.” He could not have acted more wisely with a view to his own exculpation ; but this caution put a stop to the sale, the purchasers fearing that they might be called upon for payment of the duties a second time. So trade was suspended till the fourteenth day, when the governor arrived. To him Hawkins repeated his petition :— he was come thither in a ship of the queen’s majesty of England bound to Guinea ; but, driven here by wind and weather, he had great need not of necessaries alone, but of money for

* Hakluyt, 509.

the payment of his soldiers to whom he had promised it ; and, indeed, they would not depart without it, though he were willing so to do. Farther, he represented that, notwithstanding the prohibition, it would be well taken at the governor's hands if he granted a licence in this case, seeing that there was a great amity between their princes, and that the thing pertained to our queen's highness. This petition was taken into consideration by the governor in council, and the licence was granted ; but any abatement of the king's custom, being thirty ducats upon every slave, was refused.*

But as Hawkins had little scruple how he obtained his negroes, or what papers he exhibited, or what story he told, so he was determined that the king's duties should not stand in his way, and that if he could not obtain his price by fair means, he would extort it from his customers by fear. With this resolution, he landed 100 men, well armed with bows and arrows, harquebusses and pikes, and marched toward the town. Speedy messengers came out to know his demands. So our captain, says his honest chronicler, declaring how unreasonable a thing the king's custom was, requested to have the same abated, and to pay $7\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., which is the ordinary custom for wares through his dominions there ; and unto this if they would not grant, he would displease them." Answer was returned, that all things should be to his content : the soldiers and mariners, however, insisted upon having hostages ; when these had been given, the traffic was begun, and went on without disturbance ; and Hawkins, it seems, found no farther difficulty in obtaining what he thought a fair price. By mere accident, however, his presence, unwelcome as it must have been to the persons in authority, proved to be of singular benefit to the town. A party of Caribs having obtained a guide, came in their canoes by night to burn the place and massacre the inhabitants ; and their purpose was likely to have succeeded, if the Spaniards had not been upon their guard against the

* Hakluyt, 510.

English.* Before they left this place, a French vessel from Havre arrived from the coast of Guinea, having been beaten off from St. Jorge da Mina by the Portugueze galleys, and bringing to Hawkins tidings "most sorrowful for him to understand," that the captain of his consort, the *Minion*, with a merchant and twelve mariners, had been betrayed by the negroes on their first arrival there, and were detained prisoners by the Portugueze; so that there was great doubt of bringing home the ship.

Having ended their dealings at Borburata, they proceeded to the island of Curaçoa, where they had "traffic for hides, and found great refreshing both of beef, mutton, and lambs; whereof there was such plenty, that, saving for skins, they had the flesh given them for nothing; and the worst in the ship thought scorn, not only of mutton, but also of sodden lamb, which they disdained to eat unroasted." But, notwithstanding this sweet meat, the narrator says, "they had sour sauce there; and after nine days' tarriance, were rejoiced when they departed: for by reason of riding so open at sea, what with blasts, whereby their anchors being aground there, three at once came home, and also with contrary winds blowing, whereby, for fear of the shore, they were fain to haul off to have anchor-hold, sometimes a whole day and night they turned up and down; and this happened not once, but half-a-dozen times in the space of their being there." Hawkins made next for Rio de la Hacha: there he spoke with the king's treasurer of the Indies, resident there; told him of his quiet traffic in Borburata; produced a certificate from the governor in confirmation of this statement; requested licence to trade here also in like manner; and when he was told that this could not be granted, the viceroy having sent express commission from St. Domingo to resist him with all the force they could, he repeated his story of having been forced by contrary winds to come into these parts. "But seeing they would, contrary to all reason, go about to with-

* Hakluyt, 510, 511.

stand his traffic, he would not it should be said by him, that, having the force he had, he was driven from his traffic perforce, but would rather put it in adventure whether he or they should have the better ; and, therefore, he called upon them to determine, either to give him licence to trade, or else stand to their own defence." In reply to this, they gave him the licence which he asked, but offered a price less by one half than what he had obtained at Borburata. " Whereupon the captain, weighing their unconscionable request, wrote to them a letter, saying, that they dealt too rigorously with him, to go about to cut his throat in the price of his commodities, which were so reasonably rated, as they could not by a great deal have the like at any other man's hands ; but seeing they had sent him this to his supper, he would in the morning bring them as good a breakfast." *

Having given this hint that he intended to settle the price of his commodities in his own way, Hawkins accordingly fired a culverin, in the morning, " to summon the town," and prepared to land with 100 men, having two brass falcons in his great boat, " and in the other boats double bases in their noses." The townsmen, " incontinent, in battle array," marched from the town, making semblance as if they would resolutely have opposed the landing ; and he, " perceiving them so to brag, commanded the two falcons to be discharged at them ; which put them in no small fear to see, as they afterwards declared, such great pieces in a boat." At every shot they fell flat to the ground ; and at last, for fear of these guns, they broke their array, and dispersed. Still their horsemen, being about thirty, made a brave show, coursing up and down, their white leather targets in one hand, and their javelins in the other : but as soon as Hawkins marched towards them, they sent a flag of truce ; and the treasurer, in a cautious interview with this ugly merchant, acceded to all that he asked. Hostages were demanded, as before, on the alleged deter-

* Hakluyt, 512.

mination of the men; and these having been given, "we made our traffic quietly." Nevertheless, as the Spaniards seemed to be collecting, Hawkins thought a second display of his strength necessary; and when the final settlement was to be made, he went with his three boats, as before, "with bases in their noses, and his men with weapons accordingly." All, however, passed off peaceably; and though some displeasure had arisen concerning money due by the governor of Borburata, which was to have been paid by the treasurer here, and of which the treasurer refused payment, Hawkins "would not molest him" for a debt which was not his own, but was content to remit it until another time. They parted with a show of friendship: the captain demanded a testimonial of his good behaviour: it was not given till he was under sail, ready to depart: then having received it, he very courteously took his leave, shooting off the bases of his boat for his farewell; and the townsmen returned this parting salute with four falcons and thirty harquebusses,—glad to be sped of such traders.*

He now made for Hispaniola; but was driven so far to leeward, that he fell in with the "middle of Jamaica, though the clouds, which lay upon the land two days together, made it appear like a headland. There was a Spanish merchant in Hawkins's ship, who, trading in Guinea, and being by treason taken of the negroes, and afterwards bought by the Tangomangos, was by our captain brought from thence, and had his passage to go into his own country." Poor man! he was little benefited by this act of humanity. Deceived by the appearance of the land, he pointed to the objects which, as his hopes and imagination shaped them, seemed to him well known. This was such a place; yonder was such a man's ground: behind that point was the harbour. Before he went into the pinnace to go ashore, "he put on his new clothes, and for joy flung away his old. But in the end," says the angry narrator, "he pointed so from one point to

* Hakluyt, 513.

another, that we were a leeboard of all places, and found ourselves at the west end of Jamaica before we were aware of it; and being once to leeward, there was no getting up again: so that, by trusting of this Spaniard's knowledge, our captain sought not to speak with any of the inhabitants, which, if he had not made himself sure of, he would have done as his custom was in other places. But this man was a plague not only to our captain, whom he made lose, by overshooting the place, 2000*l.* by hides, which he might have gotten, but also to himself; for having been three years out of his country, and in great misery in Guinea, and now in hope to come to his wife and friends, as he made sure account, he could not find any habitation neither there nor in Cuba, which we sailed all along; but it fell out ever, by one occasion or other, that we were put beside the same, so that he was fain to be brought to England; and it happened to him as to that duke of Samaria, when the Israelites were besieged; for not ever thinking to have seen his own country, he did see the same, and went upon it; and yet it was not his fortune to come to it, nor to any habitation, whereby to remain with his friends according to his desire."*

This unfortunate Spaniard, as he had at first been mistaken in the part of the coast, fell into a greater mistake concerning the island itself, and concluded that it was Hispaniola; in which erroneous opinion Hawkins concurred, because, being ignorant of the force of the current, he could not believe that he had been so far driven to leeward. He set his course, therefore, for Jamaica, as he supposed; and this farther error "came to as ill a pass" as the first; "for by this did he also overpass a place in Cuba called Santa Cruz, where, as he was informed, was great store of hides to be had;" and missing, thus, two of the ports "where he thought to have raised great profit by his traffic, and also to have found refreshing of victuals and water for his men, he was now disappointed greatly." The latter

* Hakluyt, 514.

necessary he found upon the Isle of Pinas ; and “ although it were neither so toothsome as running water, by the means it is standing, and but the water of rain, and, moreover, being near the sea, was brackish, yet did not they refuse it, but were more glad thereof, as the time then required, than they should have been another time with fine conduit water.” After wandering in these seas three weeks longer, they overshot the Havannah, “ which,” says Sparke, “ is an harbour whereunto all the fleets of the Spaniards come, and do there tarry to have one the company of another.” Hawkins meant to have watered there, if he had hit the port. He seems not to have entertained any apprehension that, if he had fallen in there with any ships of greater strength, they might have been disposed to put a stop to his trading by just such cogent means as he had employed in carrying it on. At length, in great want of water, he made for the coast of Florida, and there ranged along, anchoring every night, because he would miss no place where this want could be supplied, and entering every creek in search for the Huguenot colony which admiral de Coligni had sent thither under René de Laudonnière. He found them not where he expected, but on the river May ; where Laudonnière had erected a fort about two leagues from the sea, which he named La Caroline. They had been reduced, by war, desertion, and mutiny, from 200 to about 40 ; and Hawkins heard from them the sad history of their misfortunes and their misconduct. Little as was the sense of religion that either party manifested in their general dealings, on this occasion it became a bond of sympathy and a security for good faith. No precautions were thought necessary in their intercourse. Hawkins supplied them out of his ship with such stores as he could spare ; and, to help them the better homeward, spared them also one of his barks of fifty tons* ; when Laudonnière could not be persuaded to accept of a passage

* Hakluyt, 516—518.

to Europe for himself and his people, though he had determined upon returning thither without delay, after destroying the fort, lest the Spaniards or English should occupy it.*

He now sailed for England; and contrary winds prolonged the voyage "till victuals scanted, so that they were in despair of ever reaching home, had not God," as they truly said, "provided for them better than their deserving."—"In which state of great misery," says Sparke, "we were provoked to call upon him by fervent prayer; which moved him to hear us:" and they arrived, at length, at Padstow, in Cornwall, through his mercy, in safety, "with the loss of twenty persons in all the voyage, and with great profit to the venturers, as also to the whole realm, in bringing home both gold, silver, pearls, and other jewels great store. His name, therefore, be praised for evermore. Amen!"† Thus piously the writer of this narrative concludes his relation, as if utterly unconscious that he had been engaged in any thing iniquitous. Contrariwise, it was considered that Hawkins had rendered good service to his country by opening for it a new branch of trade; insomuch that, "by way of increase and augmentation of honour, a coat of arms and crest were settled upon him and his posterity, by a patent thus worded:—He bears sable on a point wavee, a lion passant gold, in

* "Fort honnête homme," Charlevoix calls Hawkins on this occasion; "et que, bien loin," he adds, "d'abuser du triste état où il trouva les François, fit au contraire tout ce qu'il put pour les soulager. Surtout quand il eut reconnu qu'ils étoient Protestans." Of this, however, Hawkins could not have been ignorant. "Il vint seul et sans armes lui rendre visite." And for the stores which he spared them, Charlevoix says, "Non seulement Hawkins lui en avoit fait un bon prix, mais il y avoit ajouté quantité de présens."—*Hist. de la N. France*, c. 89, 90.

De Morgues confirms the account of this fair dealing, *æquo admodum pretio*, and that some stores were given to the French.—*De Bry*. 21.

Hawkins's historian thought there were means to reap a sufficient profit in Florida and Virginia; though it might seem unto some that, because gold and silver were not so abundant as in other places, the cost would not quit the charge. For breeding cattle, he thought no country could be more favourable; and the profit from hides was very great. But as to forming a settlement there, "because," he says, "there is not the thing we all seek, being rather desirous of present gains, I do, therefore, affirm the attempt thereof to be more requisite for a prince, who is of power able to go through with the same, than for any subject."—P. 520.

† Hakluyt, 521.

chief three besants. Upon his helm a wreath argent and azure, a demi-Moor, in his proper colour, bound and captive, with annulets on his arms and ears, or mantelled gules double argent.* — “A worthy symbol,” Campbell observes †, “of the infamous traffic which he had opened to his country.”

1567. After an expedition in 1567, for the intended relief of the Huguenots at Rochelle, he prepared for a second adventure to Guinea and the Spanish Indies ‡; and sailed from Plymouth, in October, 1567, with his old ship the *Jesus of Lubeck*, the *Minion*, and four other vessels. Arriving at Cape de Verd, he landed 150 men, “hoping to obtain some negroes, where he got but few, and those with great hurt and damage to his own men; chiefly, it was thought, proceeding from poisoned arrows: for although, in the beginning, the hurts seemed to be but small, there hardly escaped any that had blood drawn of them, but died in strange sort, with their mouths shut some ten days before they died, and after their wounds were whole.” Thence they proceeded, “searching with all diligence the rivers from Rio Grande to Sierra Leone;” when, having “gotten together” not so many as 150 slaves, sickness and the lateness of the season, says Hawkins, “commanded us away, thus having nothing wherewith to seek the coast of the West Indies.” While the commander was holding counsel whether to make for St. Jorge da Mina, and there obtain gold for their wares, so to defray their charges, a negro king sent to desire their aid against his neighbours, promising them for their pains all the prisoners who should be taken. Without regard to any thing but the prospect of gain, the offer was accepted,

* Prince's Worthies of Devon.

† Vol. i. 405.

‡ Herrera says, that two Portugueze offered to conduct this fleet to a place where they might load themselves with gold and other riches: that upon this allurements the queen supplied Hawkins with two ships, he and his brother fitting out other four and a pinnace, that the force on board amounted to 1500 soldiers and mariners, who were to be paid by a third of the profits (*que yvan al tercio de la ganancia*); and that, when the expedition was on the point of sailing, the Portugueze deserted from Plymouth, and got to France: but as the cost of the outfit had been incurred, it was thought proper to proceed.—*Historia General*, l. xix. c. xviii. p. 718.

and 120 men sent to assist this barbarian. They assaulted a town containing 8000 inhabitants, strongly paled and fenced after their manner, and so well defended, that the English, having had six slain and forty wounded, sent to Hawkins for more help; "whereupon," says he, "considering that the good success of this enterprise might highly further the commodity of our voyage, I went myself; and, with the help of the king of our side, assaulted the town both by land and sea; and very hardly, with fire (their houses being covered with dry palm leaves), obtained the town, and put the inhabitants to flight; where we took 250 persons, men, women, and children. And by our friend, the king of our side, there were taken 600 prisoners, whereof we hoped to have had our choice; but the negro (in which nation is seldom or never found truth) meant nothing less: for that night he removed his camp and prisoners, so that we were fain to content us with those few that we had gotten ourselves."*

Having, however, now obtained between 400 and 500 negroes, he hoped, by carrying them to the West Indies, to countervail the charges of this expedition with some gains. Having made the island of Dominica, he "coasted on from place to place, making his traffic with the Spaniards as he might; somewhat hardly, because the king had straightly commanded all his governors in those parts by no means to suffer any trade to be made with them." Notwithstanding, he had "reasonable trade and courteous entertainment" from the Isle of Margarita unto Carthagena, except at Rio de la Hacha, "from whence came all the pearls." The treasurer, who had the charge, would by no means agree to

* Hakluyt, 521, 522.

"When they were about to land in the river Bambo," Herrera says, "a sea-horse (*cavallo marino*) gave the boat a blow, which would have swamped it if it had not speedily got to shore: the creature," he adds, "sprang upon the prow at the same time, and with its tail and arm, or paw, carried off a trumpeter." P. 718.—"Here, too," he says, "Hawkins took on board twelve Frenchmen, the miserable remains of a ship, who had put off in their boat from a sinking ship, and remained at the mercy of the waves, subsisting upon four figs a day till these alone survived."

any trade, or suffer us to water; he had fortified his town with divers bulwarks in all places where it might be entered, and furnished him with 100 harquebusiers; so that he thought, by famine, to have enforced us to put a-land our negroes; "of which purpose," says Hawkins, "he had not greatly failed, unless we had by force entered the town: which, after we could by no means obtain his favour, we were enforced to do. So, with 200 men, we brake in upon their bulwarks, and entered the town, with the loss only of two men *, and no hurt done to the Spaniards, because, after their volley discharged, they all fled. Thus having the town, with some circumstance, as partly by the Spaniards' desire of negroes, and partly by friendship of the treasurer, we obtained a secret trade, whereupon the Spaniards resorted to us by night, and bought of us to the number of 200 negroes. In all other places where we traded, the Spaniards inhabitants were glad of us, and traded willingly." †

Carthagena was the last town which they thought to have seen on the coast. There the governor was so straight—that is, he observed his orders so properly—that Hawkins could have no dealings with any Spaniard; and, because his trade was nearly finished, he neither thought it prudent to venture a landing, nor to "detract farther time," but departed in peace, hoping to escape the hurricanes, for "the time of these storms" was approaching. But passing by the west end of Cuba, toward Florida, there "happened to them" a storm, which continued four days, and "so beat the *Jesus*, that they cut down all her higher buildings; her rudder also was sore shaken, and withal the ship was in so extreme a leak," that they were "rather on the point to leave her than to keep her any longer." Yet, hoping to "bring all to good pass," they made for the coast of Florida, and there found no place nor haven

* Herrera says, he lost his *sargento mor* here, and three others.—
P. 719.

† Hakluyt, 522.

for their ships because of the shallowness of the coast. "Thus being in greater despair, and taken with a new storm, which continued other three days," Hawkins thought that his only resource was to take for his succour "the port which serveth the city of Mexico, called St. Juan de Ulloa; in seeking of which port," he says, "we took on our way three ships, which carried passengers to the number of 100; which passengers we hoped should be a mean to us the better to obtain victuals for our money, and a quiet place for the repairing of our fleet."*

That port they entered on the 16th of September. The Spaniards of Vera Cruz mistook them for a fleet from Spain which was daily expected; and under that mistake the chief officers came aboard to receive the despatches †, and "being deceived of their expectation," were greatly dismayed; "but when they saw our demand was nothing but victuals, they were recomforted. I found in the same port," says Hawkins, "twelve ships ‡, which had in them, by report, 200,000*l.* in gold and silver; all which being in my possession, with the king's island, as also the passengers before in my way thitherward stayed, I set at liberty, without the taking from them the weight of a groat." He had good reason for being upon his good behaviour at this juncture; and, detaining two persons of estimation for his own security, he sent post to Mexico, representing to the viceroy that he had put in here by stress of weather, in want of victuals, and his ships in great need of repair: these wants the English, as friends to king Philip, requested they might be supplied with for their money; they requested, also, that, with all convenient speed, order might be taken for preventing any cause of quarrel on the arrival of the Spanish fleet. This message left the port on the night after their entrance: "on the morrow," says Hawkins, "we saw open of the

* Hakluyt, 522.

† Fue tanto el recato de Juan de Aquines, que nunca los oficiales conocieron los navios, hasta que los tomaron, y se los llevaron.—*Herrera*, 719.

‡ *Herrera* says six, with a great quantity of silver on board.

haven thirteen great ships. I sent immediately to advertise the general of the fleet of my being there, giving him to understand, that, before I would suffer them to enter the port, there should some order of conditions pass between us for our safe-being there and maintenance of peace.

“Now it is to be understood that this port is made by a little island of stones, not three foot above the water in the highest place, and but a bowshot of length any way: this island standeth from the mainland two bowshots or more. Also it is to be understood that there is not in all this coast any other place for ships to arrive in safety, because the north wind hath there such violence, that, unless the ships be very safely moored, with their anchors fastened upon this island, there is no remedy for these north winds but death. Also the place of the haven was so little, that of necessity the ships must ride one aboard the other, so that we could not give place to them, nor they to us. And here I began to bewail that which after followed: for now, said I, I am in two dangers, and forced to receive the one of them. That was, either I must have kept out the fleet, the which, with God’s help, I was very well able to do; or else suffer them to enter in with their accustomed treason, which they never fail to execute, when they may have opportunity to compass it by any means. If I had kept them out, then had there been present shipwreck of all the fleet, which amounted in value to six millions, which was in value of our money 1,800,000*l.*; which I considered I was not able to answer, fearing the queen’s majesty’s indignation in so weighty a matter. Thus with myself revolving the doubts, I thought rather better to abide the jutt of the uncertainty than the certainty: the uncertain doubt, I account, was their treason, which, by good policy, I hoped might be prevented; and, therefore, as choosing the least mischief, I proceeded to conditions.” *

The fleet, which was commanded by Francisco de

Luxan, brought out a new viceroy, Don Martin Henriquez ; and his presence rendered it unnecessary to wait for instructions from Mexico.* Indeed the circumstances admitted of no delay ; for the fleet, being advised from Vera Cruz that the English were in the port, kept off at a distance of some three leagues, and were in danger of the north winds, which are as frequent on that coast as they are perilous. Upon receiving Hawkins's overtures, the viceroy, therefore, desired him to propose his conditions, promising that, for the better maintenance of amity between the two crowns, they should on his part be favourably granted and faithfully performed: he added " many fair words, how, passing the coast of the Indies, he had understood of our honest behaviour towards the inhabitants where we had to do ; the which," says Hawkins, " I let pass." We required victuals for our money, and licence to sell as much ware as might furnish our wants ; and that there might be of either part twelve gentlemen as hostages ; and that the island, for our better safety, might be in our own possession during our abode there, and such ordnance as was planted on the same island, which were eleven pieces of brass ; and that no Spaniard might land on the island with any kind of weapon." These conditions the viceroy " somewhat disliked " at first ; as well he might, coming from one whom he could regard as nothing better than an armed contrabandist. Chiefly he objected to the demand that the English should have the island in their own keeping : this, however, Hawkins justly regarded as an indispensable condition, seeing that " if they had had it, we should soon have known our fare ; for with the first north wind they had cut our cables, and our ships had gone ashore." The negotiations, not being expedited by any dangerous weather, continued three days. At last, the viceroy consented to all that was required, reducing only the number of hostages to ten : these, with all speed on either part, were exchanged ;

* According to Herrera, the English had been some days in the port, and the permission for which they had applied had arrived from Mexico. But these are points upon which Hawkins must be the best authority.

the viceroy gave a writing, "signed with his hand, and sealed with his seal, of all the conditions; and forthwith commandment was made, by sound of trumpet, that none should violate the peace on pain of death. The two generals met and pledged their faith each to the other; and all having been, as it seemed, concluded, the Spaniards entered the port, the fleets saluting one another as the manner of the sea doth require. Thus, Thursday, we entered the port, Friday we saw the Spanish fleet, and on Monday, at night, they entered. Then we laboured two days placing the English ships by themselves, and the Spanish ships by themselves; the captains of each part, and inferior men of their parts, promising great amity; which even as with all fidelity it was meant on our part, so the Spaniards meant nothing less on theirs."*

Hawkins soon had reason to suspect that the Spaniards were secretly furnishing their ships with men from the shore: indeed, on the very night after the Spaniards had entered, 120 soldiers had been conveyed on board. The viceroy, who, by permitting this, clearly consented to the intended treason, left things in this state, and departed for Mexico. On the morning of Thursday there were manifest indications of some intended treason; such as "shifting of weapons from ship to ship; planting and landing of ordnance from the ships to the island; passing to and fro of companies of men, more than required for their necessary business, and many other ill likelihoods, which caused him and his people to have a vehement suspicion. Therewithal he sent to the general to enquire what was meant. The answer was, that he would be their defence against all villanies †; and

* Hakluyt, 523, 524.

† On the faith of a viceroy, Hawkins says: but it was the general, Luxan, who was now acting on his own authority, and on the avowed principle that faith was not to be kept with freebooters: *que aquellos Ingleses eran cossarios, y que no se les devia guardar la fe dada*. Indeed the story, as told by the Spanish historian, has a blacker character than in Hawkins's relation. Herrera says, that Luxan sent a good number of Spaniards on shore, armed only with daggers, who feigning good fellowship with the English, invited them to drink, and when they had drunk enough, and the signal was given, suddenly attacked them, the ships at the same time opening their fire.

commandment was given, accordingly, to unplant all things suspicious." Hawkins's apprehensions were not removed by these fair words and fair appearances: he had reason to believe that not less than 300 men had been secretly conveyed on board a ship of 900 tons, which was moored next the *Minion*; and, as the master of the *Jesus* spoke Spanish, he sent him to the viceroy, and required to be satisfied if any such thing were or not. "The viceroy now seeing that the treason must be discovered, forthwith stayed our master, blew the trumpet, and of all sides set upon us. Our men which warded ashore, being stricken with sudden fear, gave place, fled, and sought to recover succour of the ships. The Spaniards, being provided for the purpose, landed in all places in multitudes from their ships, which they might easily do without boats, and slew all our men ashore without mercy; a few only escaping on board the *Jesus*. The great ship immediately fell aboard the *Minion*; but, by God's appointment, in the time of the suspicion we had, which was only one half hour, the *Minion* was made ready to avoid; and so leeing her head-fasts, and hauling away by the stern-fasts, she was gotten out: thus, with God's help, she defended the violence of the first brunt of these 300 men. The *Minion* being passed out, they came aboard the *Jesus*; which, also, with very much ado, and the loss of many of our men, kept them out. Then were there also two other ships that assaulted the *Jesus* at the same instant, so that she had hard getting loose; but yet, with some time, we had cut our head-fasts, and gotten out by the stern-fasts. Now, when the *Jesus* and the *Minion* were gotten about two ships' length from the Spanish fleet, the fight began so hot on all sides, that, within one hour, the admiral of the Spaniards was supposed to be sunk, their vice-admiral burnt, and one other of their principal ships supposed to be sunk; so that the ships were little able to annoy us."*

* Hakluyt, 524. The Spanish account differs from this: it says that Hawkins, having fought all day, and seeing twelve of his men killed by the fall of a mast, and that his other vessels were in bad plight, went on board the *Almieranta*, and ordered his own ship to be set on fire, and so put to sea.

Had the English maintained the island long enough after the first manifestation of hostility, to have spiked the guns there, the whole action would have been as glorious to them as it was dishonourable to the Spaniards; but they had made no preparation against an attack, and when it was made, the men who were ashore lost all courage, and with it all presence of mind. Their ordnance being thus in the Spaniards' hands, "did us," says Hawkins, "so great annoyance, that it cut all the masts and yards of the *Jesus*, in such sort that there was no hope to carry her away; also it sunk our small ships (the *Judith* only, a small bark of 50 tons, excepted): whereupon we determined to place the *Jesus* on that side of the *Minion*, that she might abide all the battery from the land, and so be a defence for the *Minion* till night; and then to take such relief of victuals and other necessaries from the *Jesus* as the time would suffer us, and to leave her. As we were thus determining, and had placed the *Minion* from the shot of the land, suddenly the Spaniards fired two great ships which were coming directly with us; and having no means to avoid the fire, it bred among the men a marvellous fear, so that some said, 'Let us depart with the *Minion*;' others said, 'Let us see whether the wind will carry the fire from us.' But to be short, the *Minion*'s men, which had always their sails in readiness, thought to make sure work; and so, without either consent of the captain or master, cut their sail." Hawkins himself was "very hardly" received on board. Most of the men who were left alive in the *Jesus* made shift and followed the *Minion* in their boat; the rest, whom the boat could not hold, were enforced to abide the mercy of the Spaniards, "which," he says, "I doubt, was very little." *

The ship, however, was not burnt; and the Spanish hostages who were left in it said that he had always treated them well. The Spaniards say that they sunk one vessel, and that another with sixty men got out, but afterwards was driven on the coast of Panuco, where the people were made prisoners by the inhabitants of S. Luis de Tampico and sent to Mexico, and there, by the viceroy's orders, treated well.—P. 720.

* Hakluyt, 524.

Little, indeed; "for it is a certain truth," says Miles Philips, "that whereas they had taken certain of our men ashore, they hung them up by the arms

Thus only the *Minion* and the *Judith* escaped ; and Hawkins complains that the latter that same night forsook him in his great misery. Having removed about two bowshots from the Spanish ships, the *Minion* rode until morning, and then gained the *Isla de Sacrificios*, about a mile off: there a north wind took them ; and being left only with two anchors and as many cables,— for in the conflict they had lost three cables and two anchors,— they thought always upon death, which ever was present ; “but God,” says the commander, “preserved us to a longer life. (That north wind prevented the Spaniards, according to their own account, from pursuing him : but they might have done this when the wind changed, and, doubtless, would have done so, had they not been so roughly handled in the action.) The weather waxed seasonable, and the Saturday we set sail ; and having a great number of men and little victuals, our hope of life waxed less and less.” Some were for yielding to the Spaniards ; some rather desired to reach a place where they might give themselves to the infidels ; and some had rather abide, with a little pittance, the mercy of God at sea. “So, thus, with sorrowful hearts, we wandered in an unknown sea by the space of fourteen days, till hunger enforced us to seek the land ; for hides were thought very good meat : rats, cats, mice, and dogs, none escaped that might be gotten ; parrots and monkeys, that were had in great price, were thought then very profitable if they served the turn one dinner. Thus on the 8th of October we came to land in the bottom of the same bay of Mexico, in $23\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$, where we hoped to have found inhabitants of the Spaniards, relief of victuals, and place for the repair of our ship, which was so sore beaten with shot from our enemies, and bruised with shooting off our own ord-

upon high posts, until the blood burst out of their fingers' ends : of which men so used there is one Copstowe, and certain others yet alive, who, by the merciful providence of the Almighty, arrived here at home in England, carrying still about with them (and shall to their graves) the marks and tokens of those their inhuman and more than barbarous cruel dealings.”
— *Hakluyt*, 473.

nance, that our weary and weak arms were scarce able to keep out water. But all things happened to the contrary; we found neither people, victual, nor haven of relief; only a place where, having fair weather, with some peril we might land a boat." * This was on the coast of Tabasco.

Here some of his people desired to be set ashore, making their choice rather to submit themselves to the mercy of savages than longer to hazard themselves at sea, where they very well saw that should they remain together, if they perished not by drowning, hunger must enforce them in the end to eat one another. Desperate as the request was, he could not but consent to it. About a hundred took this resolution, and about as many more resolved, at all risks, to take the chance of reaching their own country.† The former were

* Hakluyt, 524, 525.

† Thus Hawkins relates the story: a very different one is told by Miles Philips: he says that to this request "our general did very willingly agree, considering with himself that it was necessary for him to lessen his number, both for the safety of himself and the rest; and thereupon being resolved to set half his people ashore that he had then left alive, it was a world to see how suddenly men's minds were altered; for they which a little before desired to be set on land were now of a different mind, and requested rather to stay. By means whereof our general was enforced, for the more contentation of all men's minds, and to take away all occasions of offence, to take this order. First, he made choice of such persons of service and account as were needful to stay; and that being done, of those which were willing to go, he appointed such as he thought might be best spared, and presently appointed that by the boat they should be set on shore; our general promising us that, the next year, he would either come himself, or else send to fetch us home. Here, again, it would have caused any stony heart to have relented to hear the pitiful moan that many did make, and how loth they were to depart. The weather was then somewhat stormy and tempestuous, and, therefore, we were to pass with great danger; yet, notwithstanding, there was no remedy, but we that were appointed to go must of necessity do so: howbeit, those that went in the first boat were safely set on shore; but of those which went in the second, of which I myself was one, the seas wrought so high, that we could not attain to the shore, and, therefore, we were constrained, through the cruel dealing of John Hampton, captain of the *Minion*, and John Sanders, boatswain of the *Jesus*, and Thomas Pollard his mate, to leap out of the boat into the main sea, having more than a mile to shore, and so to shift for ourselves, and either to sink or swim; and of those that so were (as it were) thrown out, and compelled to leap into the sea, there were two drowned." (pp. 473, 474.) Those who were landed, he says, had only one caliver, and two old swords among them.

The relation of Job Hartop, another of the party, is more in conformity with Hawkins. "Our general," he says, "was forced to divide his company into two parts, for there was mutiny among them for want of victuals; and some said that they would rather be on the shore, to shift for themselves amongst the enemies, than to starve on shipboard. He asked them who would go on shore, and who would tarry on shipboard? those that would go on shore, he willed to go on fore-mast, and those that would tarry, on baft-mast. Fourscore and sixteen of us were willing to depart. Our general gave unto

landed; and Hawkins determined to water there, and then with his "little remain of victuals to take the sea." He was on shore with fifty of his remaining crew expediting this work, when there arose an extreme storm; during three days they could not regain the ship, and the ship was in such peril, that every hour they expected to see it wrecked. But "God again had mercy on them," and with fair weather they got clear of the coast of the Indies and of the Gulf of Bahama. After this, his men, oppressed with famine, began to sink and die, till the few survivors grew into such weakness that they were scarce able to manage the ship. The wind "being always ill for them to recover England," they made for the coast of Galicia, and on the last day of December put into Pontevedra. There, "by excess of fresh meat, the men grew into miserable diseases." Most of them died; and Hawkins perceiving that, notwithstanding all endeavours to conceal his weakness, the Spaniards had discovered it, and were planning some treachery, removed with all speed possible to Vigo. Some English ships which were lying there assisted him, and spared him twelve of their men, with which help he arrived at last in Mount's Bay. He concludes his relation with these words: — "If all the miseries and troublesome affairs of this sorrowful voyage should be perfectly and thoroughly written, there should need a painful man with his pen, and as great a time as he had that wrote the lives and deaths of the martyrs."*

every one of us six yards of Roan cloth, and money to them that demanded it. When we were landed he came unto us, where, friendly embracing every one of us, he was greatly grieved that he was forced to leave us behind him; he counselled us to serve God and to love one another, and thus courteously he gave us a sorrowful farewell, and promised if God sent him safe home, he would do what he could, that so many of us as lived should by some means be brought into England; and so he did.

"Since my return into England, I have heard that many misliked that he left us so behind him, and brought away negroes. But the reason is this for them he might have had victuals, or any other thing needful, if by foul weather he had been driven upon the islands, which for gold nor silver he could not have had." — *Hakluyt*, 491.

* *Hakluyt*, 526.—Hawkins little knew, when he penned that sentence, that some of his unhappy companions would be entitled in the strictest sense to that appellation! George Rively, Peter Momfrie, and Cornelius, an Irishman, were burnt at Mexico; Robert Barret and John Gilbert at

It is remarkable that the Spanish character, honourable as it had formerly been, and as it afterwards again became, should at this time have been stained by so many instances of bad faith. The perfidy of some of their kings, especially of Ferdinand, first brought upon the nation this disgrace. He acted upon the Machiavellian principle, that in policy whatever is expedient is right; and the Romish church consecrated that principle for his successors, when it pronounced that no faith was to be kept with heretics, — a principle which no church but that which styles itself infallible has ever proclaimed, and which can be held by none but those whose conscience is not in their own keeping. The treachery with which Hawkins had been treated excited a strong feeling in England, especially among military and seafaring men. They exclaimed against the Spaniards for breach of treaty in this case, inasmuch, they said, as it had been agreed between Charles V. and Henry VIII. that there should be free commerce between the subjects of both princes, in all and singular their dominions and islands, — not excepting America, which already at that time belonged to Charles; and on this ground they wished that war might be declared against Spain.* Both parties were in the wrong. An infraction of that treaty, by closing the American ports, was a point for discussion between the two governments, and if the English government had thought fit, a ground of war, if any wrong in consequence had been offered to one of the queen's subjects; but it was not for a subject to take the matter into his own hands, and declare his determin-

Seville. Many others, who saved their lives by renouncing the opinions which they had been compelled by torture to avow, though they would have professed any thing to have escaped persecution, were flogged on horseback through the streets of Mexico, and condemned there or in Seville to the galleys, and to different terms of imprisonment. The narratives which Miles Philips and Job Hortop published of their adventures and sufferings must have contributed greatly to that abhorrence of the Spaniards which so long prevailed in this country. The first effected his escape after sixteen years, the latter after three and twenty. Both accounts bear every mark of veracity. It appears that the Spaniards would have been disposed to treat them with great kindness, if it had not been for the inquisition.

* Camden, 108.

ation of trading in those ports amicably if the authorities pleased, but otherwise, arms in hand, whether they would or not. After he had thus declared, and acted up to that declaration, there could have been no just cause of complaint on the part of England, if he and his fleet had been fairly taken or destroyed. But by acting basely the Spaniards gave the English the advantage of a fair quarrel; and though the queen, because she was at that time perplexed with the troubled state of affairs in Scotland, for that cause, and for other weighty considerations, gave no ear to those who would at once have engaged the nation in a war with Spain, there were adventurers who resolved to prosecute the quarrel at all risks.

The *Judith*, which made part of Hawkins's fleet, and was the only vessel except the *Minion* that escaped, was commanded by Francis Drake, a name that soon became terrible to the Spaniards. The cottage in which Drake was born, on the beautiful banks of the Tavy, was demolished some thirty years ago, till which time it had remained unchanged; a stall for cattle belonging to the farm-house hard by now stands upon its site. By his own account, as repeated by Camden, he was born of mean parentage, but his name was given him in baptism by his godfather Francis Russel, afterwards earl of Bedford; and he is said to have been akin to Hawkins, at whose cost and under whose care it is also said that he was brought up, being the eldest of twelve sons. That cost, however, could have been little; and the care, perhaps, little more than such countenance as gave him consideration in the eyes of his employers, if Camden's statement be correct, which in the main it must needs be, having been derived from Drake himself. His father being likely to be called in question* for his religion as

* Camden says he was called in question by the law of the six articles; but Campbell observes, that, if Drake was born some time before, sir Francis Russel could have been but a child, and, therefore, not likely to be his godfather: moreover, he says this account makes him ten years older than he was. But Drake was two and twenty when he obtained the command of the *Judith*: this carries back his birth to 1544, at which time the six articles were in force, and Francis Russel was seventeen years of age.

a protestant, in the days of persecution fled from Devonshire into Kent. When better days arrived, he obtained an appointment "among the seamen in the king's navy to read prayers to them;" and soon afterwards was ordained deacon, and made vicar of Upnor church upon the Medway; the road, says Camden, where the fleet usually anchoreth. Here, "by reason of his poverty, he put his son to the master of a bark, his neighbour, who carried on a coasting trade, and used sometimes to transport merchandise to Zeeland and to France." This master "held Drake hard to his business;" and "pains with patience in his youth," says Fuller, "knit the joints of his soul, and made them more solid and compacted." The master was so satisfied with his conduct, and pleased with him, that, being unmarried, he bequeathed him the bark at his death. With this he continued his active and thriving way of life; and had got together some little money, when, hearing that Hawkins was fitting out an expedition for the New World, he sold his vessel, and, repairing to Plymouth with some other "stout seamen," embarked himself and his fortunes in the adventure.*

In this unfortunate voyage Drake lost all that he

Fuller says, upon this occasion, that "the sting of popery still remained in England, though the teeth were knocked out," and that Drake was born in Devonshire and brought up in Kent; "God dividing the honour betwixt two counties, that the one might have his birth, and the other his education." *Holy State*, 123.

* Camden, 248. Fuller's *Holy State*, 123. Prince's *Worthies of Devon*. Campbell. It is certain that Hawkins was displeased with Drake for "forsaking him in his great misery, and shifting for himself." Herrera says that Drake escaped from the island by a ship's cable; that Hawkins ordered him into a French ship (which he had taken from some Portuguese who had captured it off Cape Blanco, and in which was most of the gold which they had obtained), and that Drake, instead of obeying his farther orders and waiting for him off the port, made all speed for England, reported there that Hawkins was lost, and rose up with the gold himself, saying he had distributed it among the men. "This," says Herrera, "was his beginning; and though the queen kept him three months in prison, she pardoned him upon intercession, and so the matter rested." P. 720. Camden says that Drake hardly escaped with the loss of what he had. The charge of peculation is no doubt a calumny; for his imprisonment, if it really took place, breach of orders, and the desertion of his commander, would be sufficient cause. Drake, according to Job Hortop, was made master and commander of a Portuguese caravel, captured on the way from the Canaries to Cape Blanco.

had accumulated by his former industry; but a divine*, belonging to the fleet, comforted him with the assurance, that, having been thus treacherously used by the Spaniards, he might lawfully recover in value of the king of Spain, and repair his losses upon him wherever he could. "The case," says Fuller, "was clear in sea divinity; and few are such infidels as not to believe doctrines which make for their own profit. Whereupon Drake, though a poor private man, undertook to revenge himself on so mighty a monarch, who, not contented that the sun riseth and setteth in his dominions, may seem to desire to make all his own where he shineth."† Two or three voyages he made to gain intelligence, it is said, in the West Indies; and in these he got some store of money "by playing the seaman and the pirate."‡ Some reputation now he had by this time acquired as a skilful and adventurous mariner; for now, it is said, he got a commission, and sailed from Plymouth, in 1570, with two ships, the Dragon and the Swan; and the year after in the Swan alone. In these voyages he acquired certain notice of the places to be aimed at.§ Thus prepared with all needful information, he sailed from the Sound on Whitsun-eve, 1572, in the Pascha of Plymouth, of 70 tons, and his brother, John Drake, in the Swan of 25, with three handsome pinnaces, taken asunder and stowed aboard, to be put together upon occasion. He was well provided with a year's victuals, and with all necessary ammunition; but the force with which he commenced this first hostile expedition against the Spanish Indies consisted of no more than seventy-three

May
24.

* These are Camden's words, from whence it may be surmised, that possibly that divine was Drake's own father. Fuller and subsequent writers who have followed Fuller say it was the minister of his ship. "The doctrine, however rudely preached, was very taking in England; and, therefore, he no sooner published his design than he had numbers of volunteers ready to accompany him, though they had no such pretence even as he had to colour their proceedings."—*Campbell*, i. 418.

† "And now," he adds, "let us see how a dwarf, standing on the mount of God's Providence, may prove an overmatch for a giant."

‡ Camden.

§ Prince.

men and boys. With these he sailed* for Nombre de Dios, which "was then the granary of the West Indies, wherein the golden harvest brought from Panama was hoarded up till it could be conveyed to Spain."†

On the 2d of July he came in sight of the high land of America, and directed his course to Port Pheasant, so named by him in a former voyage, because of the number of those birds which he had there seen. Landing here, they found this warning newly inscribed on a plate of lead, and fastened to a tree of such conspicuous magnitude that four men could not enclasp its girth:—"Captain Drake, if you fortune to come into the port, make haste away, for the Spaniards which you had with you here last year have betrayed this place, and taken away all that you left here. I departed hence this present 7th of July, 1572. Your loving friend, John Garret."—This captain Garret was of Plymouth; and was probably, like his friend, one of those persons who made war against the king of Spain and his subjects upon their own account. Drake, however, was not induced to alter his plans by this unfavourable information, but employed seven days in putting together his pinnaces in that convenient port. "As they had completed this business, an English bark from the Isle of Wight, James Rowse‡, captain, with 38 men aboard, came into the port, and being made acquainted with his design, joined company with him." Some of the men had been there with him the year before.

* "With all speed and secrecy, as loth to put the town to too much charge, which he knew they would willingly bestow, in providing beforehand for his entertainment."—*Fuller*.

† Fuller. Nombre de Dios "then served the Spaniards for the same purposes, though not so conveniently, as those for which they afterwards used Porto Bello."—*Campbell*, i. 418.

‡ In sir William Davenant's opera upon this part of Drake's history, one of the sailors says, or sings,—

"The lion Rowse is landed here,
I'll run to meet him at the pier;
A ton of yellow gold
Conceal'd within our hold,
For half my share I scorn to take,
When he is joined with dragon Drake."

Sailing from hence for Nombre de Dios, they kept close to the shore, and lay quiet all night, intending to attempt the town at break of day. But he was forced to alter his resolution, and assault it sooner; for he heard his men muttering among themselves about the strength and greatness of the place*: wherefore he roused them from their rest before they had hatched their fears, and persuaded them it was dawn when the moon rose. The town was unwalled, and they entered it without difficulty in two companies, with trumpet sounding and drum beating, and with "fire-pikes divided between both companies, which no less affrighted the enemy than gave light to the English, who thereby discovered every place as if it had been broad day."† But the Spaniards were not unprepared, and saluted them in the market-place with a volley of shot. Drake returned the greeting with a flight of arrows, "the best ancient English compliment," and drove them from the ground; but not without receiving a severe wound in his leg. This he dissembled, "knowing that, if the general's heart stoops, the men's will fall; and that, if so bright an opportunity once setteth, it seldom riseth again." They made their way to the house where the bars of silver were deposited‡, Drake telling them "he had brought them to the mouth of the treasury of the world, which if they did not gain, none but themselves were to be blamed." He bade them break it open; but as he stepped forward to encourage them by his example, his strength, sight, and speech failed him, and he began to faint for loss of blood. They bound up his wound with his scarf; and when he would not be persuaded, they "added force to

July
22.

* "And when men's heads are once fly-blown with buzzes of suspicion, the vermin multiply instantly, and one jealousy begets another." — *Fuller*.

† Prince.

‡ "They discovered," says the relation, "a vast heap of wealth in the lower room, consisting of bars of silver, piled up against the wall, seventy foot in length, ten in breadth, and twelve in height, each bar between thirty-five and forty pounds' weight." (Prince.) They might have looked into the room through the grating, but certainly had neither time nor opportunity for measuring it.

their entreaties, and so carried him to his pinnace."* It was time to retreat, for the Spaniards had discovered their weakness; and the adventurers, many of whom had got good booty before they retired, found it necessary to re-embark, and put off to an island some two leagues distant, where they remained two days. Several men were wounded in this affair, but only one slain. While they lay off the island, one of the garrison came off to them, trusting, as it seems, to their honour; and declaring that he came for no other purpose than to see those whose courage was such that, with such inconsiderable forces, they had ventured upon so incredible an attempt. He asked, however, whether their captain were the same captain Drake who had been on this coast the two preceding years? and as many of the Spaniards were wounded with arrows, he asked also whether the arrows were poisoned, and how the wounds might be cured? The captain made answer he was the same Drake concerning whom they enquired; that it was never his custom, nor that of his countrymen, to poison

* Fuller. "Thus victory sometimes slips through their fingers who have caught it in their hands." Lopez Vaz, whose brief account of this expedition fell into the hands of the English, and is published (in a translation) by Hakluyt (vol. iii. p. 525.), says, that Drake landed about 150 men, left 70 of them in a fort which was there, and, with the rest, marched into the town, without doing any harm till he came to the market-place. There he discharged his calivers, and sounded a trumpet; and "the people hereupon, not thinking of any such matter, were put in great fear, and, waking out of their sleep, fled all into the mountains, enquiring one of another what the matter should be, — remaining as men amazed! But some fourteen or fifteen of them," he says, "went to the market place, and seeing the English to be but few, fired their harquebusses at them with such fortune as to kill the trumpeter, and shoot one of the principal men through the leg, upon which he retired towards the fort. Meantime they in the fort, hearing the firing in the town, and finding when they sounded their trumpet that it was not answered, concluded that their comrades had all been cut off, and thereupon fled to their pinnaces. And the captain and his people, finding the fort forsaken, were in so great fear, that, leaving their furniture behind them, and putting off their hose, they swam and waded to their pinnaces, and so went with their ships out of the port."

Except as to the numbers, and the manner of the retreat, this relation is in the main confirmed by the English account, Drake having been thus wounded, and the only Englishman who was slain (though many were hurt) being the trumpeter. Herrera makes no mention of this expedition. A notice relating to it, but under the erroneous date of 1568, occurs in the *Compendio Historial y Indice Chronologico Peruano y del Nuevo Reyno de Granada*, annexed to the very rare work of P. Manuel Rodriguez, entitled *El Marañon y Amazonas*. It is in these pithy words: — "Tubose noticia en las costas de Indias, que las infestaba el Draque, Cosario, que fue muy perjudicial, como se dize despues."

their arrows ; that their wounds might be cured with the ordinary remedies ; and that he only wanted some of that gold and silver which they got out of the earth and sent into Spain to trouble all the world.*

Having been disappointed here, Drake made toward Carthagena, and took several vessels on his way laden with provisions and goods. What was of more eventual importance, he opened a communication with the Cimarrones, or Maroons, negroes who had escaped from slavery, and established themselves in freedom in the interior of the Isthmus of Darien. "They had towns of about sixty families, in which the people lived cleanly and civilly," and their chief was able to raise 1700 fighting men. By these people he was informed that the treasure was brought from Panama to Nombre de Dios upon mules, a *recua* or party of which, consisting as might happen of from thirty to seventy, he might probably intercept. On this adventure, his leg having been healed, Drake set forth. One of the chief Cimarrones, as they were on the way, led him to a height, where from a great tree, it is said, that both seas might be seen. The story says that steps were cut in the trunk of this huge tree for ascending it, and that almost in the top "a convenient harbour had been made, wherein twelve men might sit." Into this Drake mounted ; and, obtaining a full sight from thence of that ocean, concerning which he had heard such golden reports, besought God to grant him "life and leave once to sail an English ship in those seas."†

* Prince.

† Prince.— Camden's is a less circumstantial but more likely account, "that, after having burnt the rich receptacle or storehouse of merchandise upon the river Chirage, called the Cross, roving for a time up and down in the parts adjoining, he descried from the mountains the South Sea. Hereupon the man, being inflamed with ambition of glory and hopes of wealth, was so vehemently transported with desire to navigate that sea, that falling down there upon his knees, he implored the Divine assistance, that he might at some time or other sail thither, and make a perfect discovery of the same; and hereunto he bound himself by a vow. From that time forward his mind was pricked on continually, night and day, to perform his vow."— P. 249.

Balboa expressed similar feelings in precisely the same situation. When his Indian guides pointed out to him the height from whence "he might see the other sea so long looked for, and never seen before of any man

The rashness of one of his own men, "who had taken a little too much aqua-vitæ," marred this enterprise: through this man's folly the Spaniards were alarmed, and Drake had at first to encounter not a party of muleteers, but of men prepared for defence. He put them to flight, however, and got possession of Venta de la Cruz, which seems to have been a station between the two ports on each side of the isthmus. Here the English account says, that both the Maroons and his own people were strictly ordered not to hurt any woman nor unarmed man, and that this order was faithfully obeyed. In the Spanish relation it is said that six or seven merchants were killed here, and no gold or silver found, but much merchandise, to the value of 200,000 ducats, which he burnt, together with the place. He had better fortune soon in hearing "the sweet music of the mules coming with a great noise of bells;" and presently he got sight of two *recuas* or companies, under no other care than that of the muleteers, who mistrusted nothing. Taking from these as much treasure as they could carry, they buried several tons of silver; but one of his men fell into the Spaniards'

coming out of our world, approaching to the top of the mountain, he commanded his men to stay, and went himself alone to the summit, as if it were to take the first possession thereof; where falling prostrate upon the ground, and raising himself again upon his knees, as the manner of the Christians is to pray, lifting up his eyes and hands toward heaven, and directing his face toward the new-found South Sea, he poured forth his humble and devout prayers before Almighty God, as a spiritual sacrifice with thanksgiving, that it pleased his Divine Majesty to reserve unto that day the victory and praise of so great a thing unto him, being a man but of small wit and knowledge, of little experience and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike manner, he beckoned to his companions to come to him, showing them the great main sea heretofore unknown to the inhabitants of Europe, Africa, and Asia. Here again he fell to his prayers as before, desiring Almighty God and the blessed Virgin to favour his beginnings, and to give him good success to subdue those lands to the glory of his holy name, and increase of his true religion. All his companions did likewise, and praised God with loud voices for joy. Then Vasco, with no less manly courage than Hannibal of Carthage showed his soldiers Italy from the promontories of the Alps, exhorted his men to lift up their hearts, and to behold the land even now under their feet, and the sea before their eyes, which should be unto them a full and just reward of their great labours and travails now overpast. When he had said these words he commanded them to raise certain heaps of stones, in the stead of altars, for a token of possession."—*Peter Martyr*. Eden's translation, 97.

hands, and was compelled by torture to discover the place, so that, when Drake's people returned for a second lading, it was almost all gone. Upon returning to the coast where his pinnaces had been appointed to meet him, they were not to be seen, but in their stead seven Spanish pinnaces which had been searching all the shore thereabouts. Being now in great fear that his ships also were lost, he constructed a raft of the trees which the river brought down, mounted a biscuit sack for a sail, and "with an oar shaped out of a young tree, for a rudder," he with three others, it is said, ventured out of the mouth of the river. If this account be true, his motive must have been to obtain a better view of the coast from the water, than he could in a country covered with woods. Having sailed upon this raft about six hours, always up to the waist in water, and at every wave up to the arm-pits, they had sight of their own pinnaces, which, not perceiving them, were making behind a point for shelter from the wind and night. Drake then ran his raft ashore, got round the point by land, and there joyfully found them. They went about to the Rio Francisco, took in their comrades with the treasure that they had secured, and rejoined the ships. Nothing now remained but to dismiss their Maroon allies. Pedro, one of the chief and most serviceable of them, had taken a fancy to Drake's sword, and was so delighted when it was presented to him, that he desired him to accept four wedges of gold as a grateful return. Drake accepted them as courteously as they were proffered, but threw them into the common stock; saying, it was just that they who bore part of the charge in setting him to sea, should enjoy their full proportion of the advantage at his return. He now sailed homeward with so prosperous a gale that in twenty-three days he passed from Cape Florida to the Scilly Isles; and arriving at Plymouth on a Sunday, the news was carried into the church during sermon time, and "there remained few or no people with the preacher," all running out to welcome one who was al-

Aug.
9.
1573.

ready regarded as the hero of that place and of that county.*

Though Drake had enriched himself in this expedition, success served only to excite him to a greater enterprise. But while he was "brooding privately over this new design," it was in part forestalled by one who had served under him in the various capacities of soldier, sailor, and cook. This person, whose name was John Oxenham, is said to have obtained the good opinion both of his captain and comrades in no ordinary degree. Drake, when he beheld from "that goodly and great high tree" of the Maroons the sea of which he had heard such golden reports, communicated especially to Oxenham his purpose of one day sailing upon it, "if it would please God to grant him that happiness;" and Oxenham, in reply, protested that unless Drake were to beat him from his company, "he would follow him by God's grace." On one occasion, when a party was to be sent on shore, and the people would not consent that Drake should venture his person, John Oxenham and Thomas Sherwell were put in trust for the service, "to the great content of the whole company, who conceived greatest hope of them next to the captain, whom, by no means, they would condescend to suffer to adventure."† Oxenham "had gotten among the seamen the name of captain for his valour, and had privily scraped together good store of money;" and, having now been some time at home, and becoming impatient of idleness, he determined no longer to wait for Drake ‡,

* Prince.

"There want not those," says Fuller, "who love to beat down the price of every honourable action, though they themselves never mean to be chapmen. These cry up Drake's fortune herein, to cry down his valour; as if this his performance were nothing, wherein a golden opportunity ran his head, with his long forelock, into Drake's hands, beyond expectation. But certainly his resolution and unconquerable patience deserved much praise, to adventure on such a design, which had in it just no more probability than what was enough to keep it from being impossible."—*Holy State*, 126.

† Burney's *Hist. of Discoveries in the South Sea*, i. 294, 295. Sir Francis Drake Revived, 54. 81.

‡ "Drake," says Prince, "being prevented from setting forth, partly by secret envy at home, and partly by being employed in his prince and country's service in Ireland. 'Tis true Oxenham had formerly promised him to

but undertake, on his own account, the adventure which that enterprising commander had projected. Following, 1575: therefore, the course which his late commander had so successfully pursued, he sailed for the isthmus with one ship and seventy men, revisited his old acquaintance the Maroons, and learned from them that the treasure which he had hoped to intercept on its way from Panama was now protected by a convoy of soldiers. Disappointed in this hope, he determined upon a bolder adventure. He drew his ship aground in a retired and woody creek, covered it with boughs, buried his provisions and his great guns, and taking with him two small pieces of ordnance, went, with all his men and six Maroon guides, about twelve leagues into the interior, to a river which discharges itself into the South Sea. There he cut wood and built a pinnace, "which was five and forty foot by the keel;" embarked in it, and secured for himself the honour (if so it may be called, under such circumstances,) of being the first Englishman that ever entered the Pacific. In this vessel he went to the Ilha de Perlas, five and twenty leagues from Panama, and there lay in wait for the appearance of a vessel from Peru. After lurking ten days, he captured a small bark bringing gold from Quito; and, six days afterward, another with silver from Lima.

Not satisfied with this, he searched the islands for pearls; and having found a few, returned to his pinnace, made for the river in which he had embarked, and, when he was near the mouth, dismissed his prizes, thus incautiously allowing them to perceive where he was entering. The alarm was soon given; first, by some negroes from the island, who, as soon as he had

assist him in that noble undertaking; but having already waited his leisure for so doing two years, and not knowing how much longer it would be, if at all, ere his occasions would permit him so to do, he might think himself disobliged from his promise, and so he undertook something himself."

left them, hastened in a canoe to Panama.* Juan de Ortega was immediately despatched with 100 men, beside negro rowers, in four barks; and he falling in with the prizes on his way was by them directed to the river. Here, however, he was at fault; for the river discharged itself by three channels: he had made his choice to ascend the greatest of these streams, when feathers were observed coming down one of the smaller channels, from whence it was inferred that the pirates had plucked some fowls upon its banks. Here, therefore, he entered; and, after four days' search, discovered the pinnace, with six Englishmen on board. These men leaped ashore, and ran for their lives: one was killed in his flight, the others escaped. Ortega, leaving twenty men in his boats, entered the country with the rest of his force; and, pursuing such traces as were to be found, came upon a hut or barrack, from whence the English, upon the alarm given them by their comrades, had fled, but where they had left their booty, and whatever else might have encumbered them. He removed the treasure to his barks, and thought it more prudent to wait awhile for the chance of events, than to enter upon a painful and uncertain pursuit.

In this he judged wisely. There had been a dispute between Oxenham and his men when they had got their plunder ashore: he had required them to carry it to their ship, promising them their shares; the sailors, however, demanded a present division of the spoil: he was angry that his word should be doubted, and they were incensed that he made any difficulty in satisfying

* There is a more romantic but far less likely story (Prince calls it "another guess account"), that in one of the prizes Oxenham found "two pieces of especial estimation; the one a table of massy gold set with emeralds, sent for a present to the king; the other, a lady of singular beauty, married, and the mother of children. The latter grew to be his perdition; for he had capitulated with these Symerons, that their part of the booty should be only the prisoners, to the end to execute their malice upon the Spaniards for their cruelty to them; showing their revenge by roasting them, and eating their hearts. John Oxenham was taken with the love of the lady, and to win her good-will, what through her tears and detestation of this barbarous action, breaking promise with the Symerons, he gave the prisoners their liberty, except the lady; and they, making haste to Panama, sent out forces to intercept him."

their claim. His life was threatened: the matter, however, seems to have been compromised, and Oxenham went in search of negroes to act as carriers. These he procured among the Maroons; and returning with them, met his men who had escaped from the pinnace, and those who were fleeing from the barrack. The loss of their booty at once completed their reconciliation: he promised larger shares if they should succeed in recapturing it; and marched resolutely in quest of the Spaniards, relying upon the Maroons as well as upon his own people. But Ortega was prepared for such an attempt: the Spanish were experienced in bush-fighting, and made such advantage of their experience, that, with the loss of seven killed and wounded, they slew five of the negroes and eleven Englishmen, and took seven of Oxenham's men prisoners. Thus defeated, he made for his ship with the remainder of his men; and Ortega, having buried his dead, returned with the treasure, the pinnace, and the prisoners to Panama. Advice had been sent from thence to Nombre de Dios: vessels were despatched to search along the coast for the Englishman's ship; and when Oxenham and his people reached the spot where they had, as they hoped, concealed it, it was gone. Nothing remained for them but to trust to the friendship of the Maroons, till they could build canoes, in which it was their intention to try their fortune upon the Northern Sea, if they could surprise some vessel there. But in this, which, if time had been given them for attempting it, would have been no forlorn hope, they were prevented. The Spaniards, who knew how insecure they must be while fifty such adventurers were at large in the country, sent 150 men under Diego de Frias to hunt them out: some who were sick fell into his hands; and the others, whom he failed to take, Oxenham being one, were, after a while, delivered up by the negroes. They were brought to Panama; and Oxenham was then asked whether he had his queen's authority for entering the king of Spain's dominions? This could not be produced, nor was it pretended: summary

condemnation followed, and the prisoners were executed as pirates, except Oxenham, the master, the pilot, and five boys, who were sent to Lima, the latter as fit subjects for mercy and conversion because of their youth; the three former as being the chiefs of the crew, of whom it was expedient that an example should be made in the Peruvian capital. In that city Oxenham and his two companions suffered death* as common enemies of mankind; "thus miscarrying," says Camden, "in this great and memorable adventure." †

* Prince says "there is a family of considerable standing of this name (Oxenham) at South Tawton, near Okehampton, of which is this strange and wonderful thing recorded; that at the deaths of any of them a bird with a white breast is seen for a while fluttering about their beds, and then suddenly to vanish away."

Howell has this account in one of his letters, written from London in 1632:—"As I past by St. Dunstan's, in Fleet Street, the last Saturday, I stepped into a lapidary or stonemason's shop, to treat with the master for a stone to be put upon my father's tomb, and, casting my eyes up and down, I spied a huge marble, with a large inscription upon it, which was this, to my best remembrance:—

"Here lies John Oxenham, a goodly young man, in whose chamber, as he was struggling with the pangs of death, a bird, with a white breast, was seen fluttering about his bed, and so vanished.

"Here lies also Mary Oxenham, the sister of the said John, who died the next day, and the same apparition was seen in the room.'

"Then another sister is spoke of. Then
"Here lies hard by James Oxenham, the son of the said John, who died a child in his cradle a little after; and such a bird was seen fluttering about his head a little before he expired, which vanished afterwards.'

"At the bottom of the stone there is,—

"Here lies Elizabeth Oxenham, the mother of the said John, who died sixteen years since, when such a bird with a white breast was seen about her bed before her death.'

"To all these there be divers witnesses, both squires and ladies, whose names are engraven upon the stone. This stone is to be sent to a town hard by Exeter, where this happened. Were you here I could raise a choice discourse with you hereupon."—*Epistolæ Ho-Elianæ*, book i. sec. 6. ep. ix.

† Hakluyt, iii. 526, 527. Camden, 251, 252.

The account of this adventure we owe to Lopez Vaz, a native of Elvas, who was taken in the Plata, by one of the earl of Cumberland's ships, having with him the "Discourse" which he had written concerning Drake's attempt on Nombre de Dios, and the subsequent expedition. The manuscript came into Hakluyt's hand. "The Spaniards of that country (Darrien)," he says, " marvelled much at this one thing, to see that, since the conquering of this land, there have been many Frenchmen that have come to those countries, but they never saw Englishmen there, but only these two: and although there have many Frenchmen been on the coast, yet never durst they put foot upon land; only these two Englishmen adventured it. All these things coming to the hearing of the king of Spain, he provided two galleys, well appointed, to keep those coasts; and the first year they took six or seven French ships. And after that this was known, there were no more Englishmen or Frenchmen of war that durst adventure to approach the coast, until this present year 1586, that the aforesaid Francis Drake arrived there with a strong fleet. But it is likely that, if the king of Spain live, he will in time provide sufficient remedy to keep his countries and subjects from the invasion of other nations."

Another freebooter followed Drake's course the ensuing year. This was Master Andrew Barker, of Bristol, who, having traded for some years with the Canaries, left one Charles there, the son of Dominic Chester, a Bristol merchant, as his agent. The said Chester devised means of securing for himself a certain portion of his employer's goods, and this with a good conscience, under favour of his father's patron-saint and namesake. For when captain Roberts arrived with a cargo, and with charge to bring home returns for Barker, this Charles accused him to the Inquisition, and on the pretext that he was Barker's partner, the whole property was confiscated to the Holy Office, such portions only excepted as the informer received for his meritorious services, or had previously secured for himself. By means of some humane friar, Roberts was delivered from prison, at the cost of all he had brought with him in his ship; and returning empty, the charges of his voyage were added to Barker's loss, making it amount to nearly 2000*l*. It was in vain to seek redress, "for no suit prevaieth against the Inquisition of Spain." So Andrew Barker, in recompence of his injury, and also to recover his loss from the Spaniards themselves, fitted out two barks, one called the Ragged Staff, himself being captain, and Philip Roche master thereof; the other, named the Bear, had one William Coxe for her master and captain. They sailed from Plymouth on Whitsunday; burnt two villages in the isle of Maya, in revenge for their trumpeter there treacherously killed by the Portugals, and having reached Trinidad, began their piracies and their fatal disputes among themselves. In the bay of Tula (about eighteen leagues S. W. of Cartagena), they took a frigate and treasure therein, to the value of 500*l*. in bars of gold and ingots of silver, with some quantity of *corriente*, or coin, in reals of plate, and "certain green stones called emeralds, whereof one, very great, being set in gold, was found tied secretly about the thigh of a friar." The frigate they left; and finding that some Spanish men-of-war were in pursuit

of them, passed on to the mouth of the Chagre, and there landed ten men to seek the Maroons, who, it was supposed, were ready to join with the English and French against the Spaniards. The men returned without having discovered them, but brought with them "a disease called there the Calentura, which is a hot and vehement fever;" they infected others, and some eight or nine died.

Between the Chagre and Veragua they took a frigate, in which was some quantity of gold, and where they found also four cast pieces of ordnance which had belonged to Oxenham's ship. This capture was made in good time, the Ragged Staff, because of her great leakage, being no longer seaworthy; wherefore they set the Spaniards ashore, removed her crew into the prize and then sunk the vessel. At Veragua, the ill blood between Barker and his master Roche, which had been hardly repressed before, broke out afresh; they fought, and Barker was wounded in the cheek. They made from thence, by the direction of certain Indians, for the bay of Honduras, and captured on the way a bark with some money and provisions on board, and the Escrivano of Cartagena, "who, being a man of some note, was put to his ransom;" the rest were dismissed freely. The first race of freebooters were in nothing more honourably distinguished from their successors than in this, that they exercised no cruelty upon their prisoners, and committed no murder. Arriving at the island of St. Francisco, in the mouth of the bay of Honduras, Coxe, the master of the Bear, with a party of mutineers, boarded Barker's ship, took possession of it, and of all his booty, and set him ashore upon the island, where he and one Germane Welborne fought, and both were wounded. Barker would then fain have returned to the ship, but this was resisted, and he was told that he should not come on board till they were ready to depart. Whatever may have been their intentions with respect to him, his troubled life was near its close; for, one morning, at day-break, a party of Spaniards arriving

secretly in the island, surprised the English and slew nine of them ; of these Barker was one ; about twenty escaped by getting on board. Coxe then, with two parties, in a pinnace and a skiff which he had taken at the island, surprised the town of Truxillo in the bay, and took there " wine and oil as much as they would, and divers other good things, but no gold or silver, nor any other treasure which they would confess. But before they could return to their ship, some men-of-war chased her ; the pinnace shifted for itself and got safe, leaving for haste those that were in the skiff, being eight persons ; what became of them afterwards God knoweth." Their misfortunes did not end here ; for having now determined to sail for England, and being in the main sea, homeward bound, about sixty leagues from the isle, the frigate their prize, " wherein was the treasure for the adventurers, and that which pertained to the captain, to the value of 2000*l.*, being over-set with sail, with a flaw of wind was overthrown, and all the goods therein perished." Fourteen men were drowned in her ; Coxe and eight others were saved. They had built a frigate upon the shore of the Honduras, in place of the Bear, which seems to have followed the fortunes of its old companion the Ragged Staff ; in this they reached Scilly, when, Roche having died on the passage home, Coxe and Andrew Brown divided the remaining prize money among the survivors, " delivering to some five pounds, to some six, to some seven, to some more, as every man was thought to have deserved : " the bark and the guns (Oxenham's among them), were left at Scilly to the use of Brown. " Divers of our company, says the person from whom Hackluyt collected his relation, were committed to prison upon our arrival at Plymouth, at the suit of Mr. John Barker of Bristol, as accessaries to his brother, our captain's death, and betrayers of him unto the enemy. And after straight examination of many of us, by letters of direction from his majesty's privy council, the chief malefactors were only chastised with long imprisonment, when, indeed, before God, they had

deserved to die: whereof some, although they escaped the rigour of man's law, yet could they not avoid the heavy judgment of God, but shortly after came to miserable end. Which may be example to others to show themselves faithful and obedient in all honest causes to their captains and governors." *

It appears then that the persons who went upon this piratical voyage thought they were engaged in an honest cause. Most men who enter upon unlawful courses, either form a code of convenient morals for themselves, or act upon the accursed opinion that there is nothing to be hoped or feared beyond the grave. But there were circumstances, which made the light in which these precursors of the buccaneers regarded their proceedings, appear plausible to the nation as well as to themselves. During great part of Elizabeth's long reign, Spain and England, though formally at peace, were in a state of manifest enmity and of private warfare; and that enmity was on both sides more acrimonious than could have been generated in any ordinary war. No English subject, while trading with those parts of the Spanish dominions with which the trade was authorised by treaty, was safe, unless he was a Roman catholic. The Inquisition looked upon all heretics who came within its reach as amenable to its laws; no matter what their country; they were rebellious subjects of the Universal Roman Catholic Church, and, as such, to be seized and punished, wherever that wicked church was strong enough to enforce its pretensions. If the confiscation of English property, and the imprisonment and ill usage (even to tortures and death) of English subjects, should have the effect of bringing on hostilities between the two crowns, whatever might be the policy of the Spanish government, this was what the clergy and the Inquisition desired. The English people resented this before the queen could venture to resent it otherwise than by unavailing remonstrances; and the injured parties took a shorter course, in which some gallant spirits, and many

* Hakluyt, iii. 528—530.

desperate ones, were ready to join. Thus, in Barker's case, he had just cause of complaint against the Spanish authorities, by whom he had been iniquitously deprived of his goods ; and if he could have indemnified himself by the forcible seizure of property belonging to the Inquisition, or to the Spanish government, without injury to any other parties, this would have been nothing more than what by the law of nations might be justified, when national law had been by the other party set at nought : but this was impossible ; and what, if so restricted, would have been a just act of reprisal, was an act of piracy when committed against the king of Spain's subjects. So the Spaniards naturally and properly considered it. They knew nothing of the injuries upon which Drake as well as Barker is said to have founded his right of making war upon the king of Spain ; nor would they indeed have allowed them to be injuries ; nor that, if they had been such, any such right could be derived from them. While, therefore, the private warfare continued, they executed as pirates all whom they made prisoners ; and this was conformable to the acknowledged law of nations.

The first adventurers of this stamp did not, however, consider themselves to be pirates, for two reasons ; first, because they professed to carry on hostilities only against the Spaniards, not, like the Vikingar and Vitalians, against all who traversed the seas ; secondly, because they had good reason to believe that, although not commissioned by their own government, they were acting with its connivance, and under its tacit sanction. In this way of thinking, therefore, they were fairly at war, carrying it on at a twofold risk, seeing that, if taken by the enemy, they had no mercy to expect ; but also with a prospect of far greater gains than could be obtained in any other service. The danger might have been little different in ordinary wars ; for whether war should be what was then termed good or bad, depended in those days upon the temper of an individual commander, not upon any fixed law or general usage. But this formed

no part of their consideration. Among such men, those who were not thoughtless of danger were regardless of it. Some were of as heroic a spirit as the greatest of the Spanish conquerors; others were of no better qualities than the worst of them; and perhaps not a few were perfectly aware that they were pursuing a safer course upon the seas, at whatever hazard, than if they had been braving the laws at home.

There was another circumstance which undoubtedly entered into the views of the better adventurers, and was not without some influence upon all. A strong feeling of indignation had been excited against the Spaniards for their cruelties in the New World, by a relation ascribed, on no good grounds, to Bartolomé de Las Casas, and published in many languages, with engravings, in which the acts of the most atrocious barbarity were represented. In one respect it was, perhaps, well that this impression should have been produced, lest posterity, in astonishment and admiration at the intrepidity, and perseverance, and unparalleled achievements of the conquerors, should have overlooked their crimes. Contemplating the history of their conquests with that religious temper wherewith all history ought to be contemplated, nothing more mournful is to be found in the annals of the human race. We can perceive only that abominations, like those of the Canaanites, prevailed among all the more civilised nations of the New World; and that the Spaniards, who were the appointed instruments of divine judgment, substituted other evils in the place of those which they extirpated; sacrificed more victims to avarice than the Mexicans to their idols; and are now suffering from the consequences of their long-continued and unrepented offences. Further than this, the course of Providence is not evaded. The first chastisement which the Spaniards received was from those adventurers who now assailed them in their conquests, and led the way for the Buccaneers, the Vikingar of the New World. Even these wretches thought it some justification of themselves that

they were taking vengeance for the Indians; and that feeling, in a certain degree, was entertained also by Drake and his contemporaries.

Moreover, the Spaniards founded their right of conquest on pope Alexander's grant, the validity of which grant was, of course, denied by a people who had thrown off the papal yoke. England acknowledged in the Spaniards no right but that of the strongest to those parts of America which they actually possessed, and none to those extensive regions in which they had formed no settlement. Least of all could the English, in an age when the spirit of maritime enterprise had been excited, submit to an assumption of dominion, which pretended to exclude them from the Caribbean Sea, and from the Great Pacific, on which Vasco Nuñez de Balboa, the first European who ever beheld it, had not looked with a more ambitious eye than the first Englishman by whom it was seen, Francis Drake.

There can be little doubt that the plan of Drake's voyage was communicated to the queen, and by her approved. Sir Christopher Hatton introduced him to Elizabeth, and it is said that she gave him a sword, with this remarkable speech; "We do account that he which striketh at thee, Drake, striketh at us!" It is said, also, which is less credible, that he had a commission from his sovereign. This would have been inconsistent with her cautious policy; it was enough for her at this time to assure him of her secret sanction. The expedition was fitted out at his own cost*, "with the help of divers friends, adventurers; it consisted of his own ship the Pelican, 100 tons; the Elizabeth, of 80, captain John Winter; the Marygold, a bark of 30 tons, captain John Thomas; the Loan, a fly-boat, of 50, captain John Chester; and the Christopher, a pin-

* Herrera says, at the cost of the queen also, and of sir John Hawkins, and others. He states the number of men at 200 fighting men, beside ten young men of family (*cavalleros mozos*), who went out to learn the art of navigation, and he says that each vessel carried eighteen brass pieces, as if the ships had been all of equal tonnage. That of the admiral's ship, which is the only one he specifies, he states at 120. T. ii. p. 384.

nace, of 15, captain Thomas Moon." These ships he manned with an able and sufficient crew, "to the number of 164, men, gentlemen, and sailors, and furnished with such plentiful provision of all things necessary, as so long and dangerous a voyage seemed to require;" taking out with him the frames of four pinnaces in pieces, to be put together when occasion required. "The smallness of this force, it is remarked by admiral Burney *, for an enterprise of such magnitude, is not so extraordinary, as that a navigation, which on account of its difficulties and dangers had been many years discontinued, should be undertaken in vessels so diminutive." "Neither did he omit, it is said, to make provision for ornament and delight; carrying to this purpose with him expert musicians, rich furniture (all the vessels for his table, yea, many belonging to the cook-room, being of pure silver), with divers shows of all sorts of curious workmanship, whereby the civility and magnificence of his native country might, among all nations whither he should come, be the more admired."† In this he followed the example of the Portuguese, in their first voyage to the East.

Great care was taken to conceal his destination; few of the persons who were embarked were acquainted with his designs; and the better to conceal them, it was given out that they were bound for Alexandria. On the 15th of November, 1577, they sailed from Plymouth; but the next morning the wind falling contrary, they put into Falmouth, and there so terrible a tempest took them, and so vehement, that all their ships were like to have gone to wreck. The admiral was obliged to cut away his mainmast, and the Marygold was driven ashore. They put back to Plymouth to repair, and set forth a second time, with better fortune, on the 13th of December. When they were out of sight of land Drake first gave his people some ground for conjecturing what course he intended, by appointing the island of Mogadore, on the coast of Barbary, for the place of ren-

* i. 305.

† Prince.

dezdous, in case any of the fleet should part company. Between that island and the main, from which it is one mile distant, they found a very good and safe harbour, with good entrance, and void of any danger. Here he put together one of his pinnaces. The island was not inhabited. An intercourse was opened with the Moors of the main, by means of one of the crew, who had formerly been a captive among them. Hostages were exchanged the first day, and traffic promised by the Moors for the next; but when they came with camels to the sea-side, as if bringing their wares, one of the men too hastily leaped on shore, meaning to become a hostage as on the yesterday; he was seized, a dagger was held to his throat to deter him from making any resistance*: the boat's crew, seeing a number of armed men start up from behind the rocks, found it prudent to return, and the prisoner was laid on a horse and carried away. The first narrator remarks upon this, that a man cannot be too circumspect and wary of himself among such miscreants." Drake landed, and marched a little way into the country, hoping to redeem the man, or obtain some satisfaction; but the Moors neither offered to resist nor approached to treat; he could obtain no intercourse with them, and sailed from Mogadore on the third day after his arrival there. The intention of the Moors was, however, less inimical than it appeared. Their king, Muley Moloc, was then expecting that memorable invasion from Portugal, which in the ensuing year took place, under the unfortunate Sebastian; he wanted to know what ships these were, and if any thing could be learnt concerning the Portugueze. The prisoner was taken to his presence, and when all that he could communicate had been collected from him, Muley gave orders for conducting him back to the ship, with offers of friendship and assistance to the general. But the fleet had departed; this, however, was no misfortune to the man, who was not long afterwards sent home in an English merchantman.†

Dec.
30.

* Hakluyt, iii. 730.

† Burney, 308.

At Cape Blanco they remained four days: there Drake mustered his men on shore, and trained them in warlike manner, to make them fit for all occasions; and leaving there the Christopher, he took in its stead one of the Spanish barks called canters, being of the burden of 40 tons or thereabouts, releasing some other prizes which he had made, after taking out of them such necessaries as he wanted and they could yield. Leaving this place on the 22d, they anchored off the isle of Maya on the 28th, when a party was sent to "view the island, and the likelihood that might be there of provision." The inhabitants had been forbidden to trade with any such visitors, and when they saw them, they salted the wells near the landing place, and forsook their houses. It was easy for them thus to spoil the water, salt being produced there without labour, "save only that the people gather it into heaps, which continually in great quantity is increased upon the sands by the flowing of the sea, and the heat of the sun burning the same, so that of the increase thereof they keep a continual traffic with their neighbours." Marching into the island, they found grapes and cocoa-nuts, and saw goats, which were so chased by the inhabitants, that they could kill none of them; but the people, as if to stop the mouths of their uninvited visitors, had laid out some old dried goats' flesh, which being but ill, and small, and few, the English made no account of. Next they sailed by the island of Santiago, from whence three pieces were fired at them, but at such distance that they could do no harm. The mountains and high places there, they were told, were possessed by Moors, who had escaped from their Portugueze masters, and maintained themselves in great strength. Off this island they espied two ships under sail, gave chase to one, and boarded her from a boat without resistance; she proved to be a Portugueze, bound for Brazil, with many passengers, and among other commodities good store of wine. Drake transferred the prisoners to the pinnace which he had set up at Mogadore, giving them their clothes,

provision, and one butt of their own wine, and letting them go, all except the pilot Nuno da Sylva, whom he detained, because it was discovered that he was well acquainted with the coast of Brazil. The prize he committed to master Thomas Doughtie's custody, with twenty-eight men; but complaint being soon after made against him that he had received things from some of the Portuguese prisoners, and kept them for his own use, he was removed in consequence, and Thomas, the general's brother, was made captain of the prize in his stead. The wine and provision with which this ship was laden, was the most valuable part of their stores.*

From the Cape de Vērds they were nine weeks without the sight of land, "often meeting with unwelcome storms and less welcome calms, being in the bosom of the burning zone, not without the affrights of flashing lightnings and terrifying claps of thunder; yet, still with the admixture of many comforts, for, being but badly furnished with fresh water, their necessities were, for seventeen days together, constantly supplied with rain; nor was their fleet in all that time dispersed, nor did any ship lose company except the Portuguese prize, for one day, which then came in again, to their great comfort,—for the loss of it, it is said, would have defeated the voyage."† When they were near the equator, Drake, being very careful of his men's health, let every one of them blood with his own hands.‡ On February the 5th he made the coast of Brazil, in latitude $31\frac{1}{2}$ S.; and being discovered at sea by the inhabitants of the country, they made upon the coast great fires for a sacrifice to the devils, about which they use conjurations (making heaps of sand and other ceremonies), that when any ship shall go about to stay upon their coast, not only sands may be gathered together in shoals in every place, but also that storms and tempests may arise, to the casting away of ships and men."§ Thus the sailors were told, probably by the Portuguese pilot, and

* Hakluyt, 731, 732. Burney, 309, 310.
 † Camden, 250.

‡ Prince.
 § Hakluyt, 732.

they were also assured that the efficacy of these conjurations had often been proved. On the 7th they lost the canter, which had been named the Christopher, after the pinnace for which she had been exchanged: by Drake's great care in dispersing his ships they fell in with her again; and his pleasure at recovering her was such, that he named the place where they met the Cape of Joy: the name, however, was as little permanent as the feeling with which it was imposed. The country appeared to them very fair and pleasant, with an exceeding fruitful soil, and they saw great store of large and mighty deer," but not being able to chase the deer, they contented themselves with slaughtering seals at an anchorage eighteen leagues within the Plata, thinking them "good and acceptable meat both as food for the present, and as a supply of provisions for the future." They sailed farther up, till they found but three fathoms depth, and filled their casks with fresh water by the ship's side. On the 27th they left the Plata, pursuing their course towards the south. The ship in which Doughtie was parted company that night, and the Christopher two days afterwards.

May 12. In latitude 47 S. they saw a bay within a headland, which seemed as if there should be a commodious port there. Drake did not think it prudent to stand in with the ship, till he had examined it: he anchored, therefore, three leagues from the coast, and went to explore it himself the next morning in a boat. As he approached, a native made his appearance, shouting and dancing to the noise of a rattle which he shook in his hand; no doubt this was the maraca, which the savages of South America used in most of their ceremonies from the Orinoco southwards, and far in the interior. It was supposed that he invited them to land, but a fog came on, the weather became bad, and Drake thought it necessary to return to his ships, being three leagues from them: the fog thickened; the ships could no longer be seen, and captain Thomas in the Marygold, being anxious for the general's safety, ventured to stand into the

bay, fortunate in both his hopes, for Drake got on board, and he came to anchor in a secure situation. The other ships were obliged to stand out to sea. On the morrow the weather became fine, and Drake kindled fires on the shore as signals for the dispersed ships, none of which were in sight; but they were soon assembled, except the Swan and the Portuguese prize, which had been named the Mary. The natives kept at distance, answering by gestures and unintelligible speech the signal which was made to them by showing a white cloth. Places were discovered near the rocks, constructed for the purpose of drying the *nandu* or American ostrich, and other birds for food. More than fifty *nandus*, either dried or in a state of preparation, were found there; their thighs were as large as "reasonable legs of mutton."* The English thought they were intended for a present; they took accordingly what they found, but it seems they left what was accepted as a full compensation, for a friendly intercourse was afterwards established.

May
14.

According to their account the *nandu* was decoyed by stalking, a practise known in civilised as well as in savage countries. The natives shaped such a resemblance as they could of the bird's head and neck at one end of a staff, and fastened plumes of its feathers at the other; holding this before them, they approached their intended prey, and either decoyed or drove them into some neck of land, across which they stretched a strong net, and then set dogs upon them. That practice, however, is no longer known; and it is said that it is now impossible to take this bird by any snare.† Leaving this place, which was not convenient for the fleet, they found a good port in $47\frac{1}{2}$ S., and having given his orders there, Drake sent out Winter in the Elizabeth, to search for the two missing ships to the southward, and went northward in the Admiral himself on the same quest. He met with the Swan the same day, brought her into harbour and broke her up for firewood, having taken

May
17.

* Burney, 312.

† Azara, iv. 172.

every thing out of her that could be of use : this was done to lessen the number of ships and the chance of separation, and that their force might be more compact. Here they " made new provision of seals, whereof they slew to the number of from 200 to 300 in the space of an hour. Some days past before any natives were seen ; they, however, made the first advances by signs from the shore, as if inviting some English who were on a small island opposite. Drake sent a boat and such presents in it as were taken out for such occasions ; these, as the Indians manifested some want of confidence, were tied to a pole, and the pole was stuck in the ground a little way from the landing place, and left for them. They in return put some of their coronals and carved bones on the same place. Some kind of traffic followed upon this opening, but on their part it was still cautious ; they would receive nothing by hand ; it must be placed on the ground for them, and the words by which they expressed themselves willing or unwilling to accept the things proffered in exchange, were presently understood. Hakluyt's author describes them as naked, saving only about their waist the skin of some beast with the fur or hair on, and something also wreathed on their heads. Their faces were painted with divers colours ; some of them had on their heads the similitude of horns, every man his bow, which was an ell in length, and a couple of arrows. They were very agile people, and quick to deliver, and seemed not to be ignorant in the feats of war, as by their order of ranging a few men might appear." Some had one leg, one shoulder, or the whole side, painted white, and the other black, with white moons on the black part, and on the white black suns. It is worthy of notice, that this party-coloured fashion, as well as that of ornamenting the head with the similitude of horns, is at this time in use among the tribes on the far distant coast of California.

The men who frequented the port were not above fifty in number ; no canoes were seen among them. " They fed on seals and other flesh, which they ate nearly raw,

casting pieces of four or six pounds weight into the fire, till it was a little scorched, and then tearing it in pieces with their teeth like lions, both men and women." They were a merry race; the sound of the trumpet delighted them, and they danced with the sailors. The chaplain of the fleet, Mr. Francis Fletcher, describes them as of large stature; and that the Austral tribes are so, may be affirmed on the most satisfactory testimony, but the fact has been much exaggerated. "One of the giants," says Fletcher, "standing with our men when they were taking their morning draught, showed himself so familiar that he also would do as they did; and taking a glass in his hand (being strong canary wine), it came no sooner to his lips, than it took him by the nose, and so suddenly entered his head, that he was so drunk, or at least so overcome, that he fell on his bottom not able to stand; yet he held the glass fast in his hand, without spilling any of the wine; and when he came to himself, he tried again, and tasting, by degrees got to the bottom. From which time he took such a liking to the wine, that having learnt the name, he would every morning come down from the mountains with a mighty cry of wine! wine! wine! continuing the same until he arrived at the tent."*

In this place, which he named Seal Bay, Drake remained something more than a fortnight. When he sailed from thence the Portugueze prize was still missing; and it was not long before the Canter again parted company, and was absent three or four days. They unloaded her, therefore, when next they came to anchor, and abandoned her, letting her drift to sea. On the 19th, they had the good fortune once more to meet the Portugueze; and on the next day the whole fleet anchored in the "good harborough called by Magellan Port Julian." That some navigator had been there before them was, indeed, certain; for they found a gibbet standing there †, and from that rueful monument supposed it to be the spot where Magellan did execution

June
3.

June
12.

* Burney, 315. from Fletcher's MSS.

† Hakluyt, 733—751.

upon some of his disobedient and rebellious company ; some of their bones also were remaining. As soon as the ships were secured, Drake went to search for a watering place, and to see what provisions this ill-omened harbour could furnish. His brother, Captain Thomas, Robert Winter, Oliver the master-gunner, and two others, went in the boat with him. Two of the natives came to them on their landing, received the presents which were offered, and appeared as well pleased as they were familiar. They were armed with bows and arrows ; and the gunner, to show them how well the English understood the use of that weapon, discharged an arrow from his own bow. The natives tried all theirs, but could not shoot so far ; and they seemed pleased at seeing his skill. Presently another Indian came, " but of a sourer sort ;" and manifestly disliking the confidence with which his countrymen treated the strangers, angrily made signs to the English to depart. No doubt it was well remembered how treacherously Magellan had kidnapped two of the natives here, and the blood that was now shed was probably in revenge for that wickedness. Robert Winter, whether in mere sport, or that he wished to let this sterner savage behold a specimen of English archery, prepared to shoot as the gunner had done ; but in drawing it to its full length, the string broke. While he was busied in refitting it, the savages shot at him so suddenly, that before any mischief was apprehended, one arrow was fixed in his shoulder, and another pierced his lungs. Upon this the gunner took aim at them with his caliver ; it missed fire, and he was immediately shot " through the breast and out at back, so that he fell down stark dead." The Indians were now increasing in number ; and it appeared that they had commenced this attack, not in a confidence upon their own dexterity alone, but with the assurance of being supported.

Drake upon this ordered his companions to cover themselves with their targets, and approach the enemy, but not in a regular line ; and he directed them to break

the arrows that were shot at them, observing that the savages had but a small store. At the same time he took the piece which had so unhappily missed fire, aimed at the Indian who had killed the gunner, and who was the man that had begun the fray, and shot him in the belly. An arrow wound, however severe, the savage would have borne without betraying any indication of pain ; but his cries, upon being thus wounded, were so loud and hideous, that his companions were terrified and fled, though many were then hastening to their assistance. Drake did not pursue them, but hastened to convey Winter to the ship for speedy help ; no help, however, availed, and he died on the second day. The gunner's body, which had been left on shore, was sent for the next day ; the savages, meantime, had stript it, as if for the sake of curiously inspecting it : the clothes they had laid under the head, and stuck an English arrow in the right eye for mockery. Both bodies were buried in a little island in the harbour.* No farther attempt was made to molest the English, though they remained nearly two months in the harbour, and no after intercourse took place. The lesson which the natives had received was sufficient ; perhaps it was the more effectual, because the individual upon whom the punishment fell was the one at whose instigation the fray had been begun.†

A more tragical event followed. Magellan had in this same port quelled a dangerous mutiny, with an intrepidity and promptitude that would have been worthy of all praise, if treachery and assassination had not been among the means which he employed. Drake apprehended a similar danger. It is said, in the earliest relation of his expedition, that he began here to enquire diligently into Master Doughtie's actions, " and found

* Cliffe, 751. Burney, 317, 318.

† Admiral Burney thought it might be received as a proof that the dispositions of the Patagonians were not in general mischievous and revengeful, that they attempted no farther injury, nor offered any kind of interruption to the English in their watering, wooding, or other avocations. (p. 318.) My kind hearted old friend thought too favourably of savage nature. These Indians would have watched for every opportunity of vengeance, if they had not been deterred by fear or by superstition.

them not to be such as he looked for, but tending rather to contention, or mutiny, or some other disorder, whereby the success of the voyage might greatly have been hazarded ; that the company were called together, and made acquainted with the particulars, which, partly by Doughtie's confession, and partly by evidence, were found to be true ; which," says the writer, " when our general saw, although his private affection to Master Doughtie (as he then in the presence of us all sacredly protested) was great, yet the care he had of the state of the voyage, of the expectations of her majesty, and of the honour of his country, did more touch him (as indeed it ought) than the private respect of one man ; so that the cause being thoroughly heard, and all things done in good order, as near as might be to the course of our laws in England, it was concluded that Master Doughtie should receive punishment according to the quality of the offence. And he, seeing no remedy but patience for himself, desired before his death to receive the communion ; which he did at the hands of Master Fletcher our minister, and our general himself accompanied him in that holy action : which being done, and the place of execution made ready, he having embraced our general, and taken his leave of all the company, with prayer for the queen's majesty and our realm, in quiet sort laid his head to the block, where he ended his life." It is further said that when the execution was over, Drake addressed the whole company, exhorting them to unity, obedience, and regard of the voyage in which they were engaged ; for better confirmation whereof, he willed every man to prepare himself for receiving the holy communion on the following Sunday, " as Christian brethren and friends ought to do. This," the relator says, " was done in a very reverent sort ; and so, with good contentment, every man went about his business."*

A mystery has been thrown over this transaction, and a suspicion †, in consequence, of the darkest kind, has

* Hakluyt, 733.

† Admiral Burney, than whom no man ever desired to judge more

been brought upon the character of Drake, who, in this matter, has been more injured by his friends than by his enemies. It is certain that Doughtie was tried for attempting to raise a mutiny ; that he was " found guilty by twelve men after the English manner, and suffered accordingly."* The most indifferent persons in the fleet were of opinion that he had acted seditiously, and that Drake cut him off because of his emulous designs. The question is, how far those designs extended? He could not aspire to the credit of the voyage, without devising how to obtain for himself some more conspicuous station in it than that of a gentleman volunteer : if he regarded Drake as a rival, he must have hoped to supplant, or, at least, to vie with him ; and in no other way could he have vied with him but by making off with one of the ships, and trying his own fortune. Considering what such adventurers too often were, and were likely to be, and how frequent mutinies were among them,—considering, too, that Doughtie had been removed from the command of the Portuguese prize upon a charge of peculation, and that resentment, whether for the wrongful charge, or the rightful removal, might be rankling in him, — this is no improbable supposition ; and if this were proved, the sentence cannot be deemed unjust.

The enemies of Drake, however, gave out that he

equitably and more kindly of others, expresses no opinion on the case, because he thought the statements too imperfect for forming one. The subject, he said, could not, perhaps, be better closed than by the reflections which they produced in the mind of Dr. Johnson. That great and good man says, " How far it is probable that Drake, after having been acquainted with this man's designs, should admit him into his fleet, and afterwards caress, respect, and trust him, or that Doughtie, who is represented as a man of eminent abilities, should engage in so long and hazardous a voyage, with no other view than that of defeating it, is left to the determination of the reader. What designs he could have formed with any hope of success, or to what actions worthy of death he could have proceeded without accomplices (for none are mentioned), is equally difficult to imagine. Nor, on the other hand, though the obscurity of the account, and the remote place chosen for the discovery of this wicked project, seem to give some reason for suspicion, does there appear any temptation from either hope, fear, or interest, that might induce Drake, or any commander in his state, to put to death an innocent man upon false pretences."—P. 322.

* Camden, 251.

sailed from England with secret instructions from Leicester to take off Doughtie upon any pretence whatever, because Doughtie had reported that Walter earl of Essex was poisoned by Leicester's means.* That Essex was not poisoned is as certain as any such fact can be at such a distance of time; and if Leicester had been as bad a man as he has been represented, (that is, far worse than he was,) it was not thus that he would have taken vengeance for what was a common calumny; nor was Drake one who would have taken upon himself to execute so nefarious a design. This charge may, with perfect confidence, be dismissed; nor would any doubt be entertained upon the subject, if an injudicious advocate had not, in vindication of Drake, attempted to prove too much. In the history of the voyage published under the name of Francis Drake, the admiral's nephew, it is affirmed that Doughtie embarked in the expedition with the determination of overthrowing it, raising a mutiny, and accomplishing his ends by the murder of Drake and his most faithful friends; and that Drake received information of this by letter before he sailed from Plymouth, but could not and would not credit "that a person whom he so dearly loved would conceive such evil purposes against him." When, however, his practices, having been well observed, became too certain, the general, then assembling in Port Julian "all his captains and gentlemen of his company, propounded to them the good parts which were in the gentleman, the great good will and inward affection, more than brotherly, which he had ever since his first acquaintance borne him, not omitting the respect which was had of him among no mean personages in England; and afterwards delivered the letters which were written to him, with the particulars from time to time which had been observed, not so much by himself as by his good friends; not only at sea, but even at Plymouth; not bare words, but writings; not writings alone, but actions, tending to the overthrow of the service in hand,

* Camden, 251.

and making away of his person." The proofs, this advocate avers, were "so many and so evident, that the gentleman himself, stricken with remorse of his inconsiderate and unkind dealing, acknowledged himself to have deserved death, yea, many deaths, for that he conspired not only the overthrow of the action, but of the principal actor also. The chiefest in place and judgment in the whole fleet, with their own hands," he says, "under seal, adjudged that he deserved death, and that it stood by no means with their safety to let him live; and, therefore, they remitted the manner hereof, with the rest of the circumstances, to the general." The general then gave the condemned party his choice, whether he would be executed in the island? or be set ashore on the main? or return to England, there to answer his deed before the lords of her majesty's council? Doughtie replied, that he would not endanger his soul by consenting to be left among savage infidels; and as for returning to England, if any could be found to accompany him on so disgraceful an errand, yet the shame of the return would be more grievous than death; therefore he preferred ending his life on the island, desiring only that he and the general might once more receive the holy communion together, and that he might not die other than the death of a gentleman. From this choice he was not to be dissuaded by any reasons that could be urged. Accordingly, on "the next convenient day, a communion was celebrated by Master Fletcher; the general himself communicated in the sacred ordinance with Master Doughtie; after which they dined at the same table together, as cheerfully, in sobriety, as ever in their lives they had done; and taking their leave by drinking to each other, as if some short journey only had been in hand."* A provost marshal, appointed for the occasion, had meantime made all things ready; and after drinking this stirrup-cup, Doughtie went to the block.

This statement is so certainly false in its most im-

* Burney, 319, 320. World Encompassed, 32.

portant part, that it would be entitled to no credit in any of its minor circumstances, even if those circumstances were less improbable at first sight. Fletcher the chaplain's relation of the voyage is still preserved in manuscript. It is there stated, that the same persons whose accusation had brought upon Doughtie his former disgrace (namely, John Brewer, Edward Bright, and others of their friends,) laid now more dangerous matter to his charge, for words spoken by him to them in the general's garden at Plymouth, long before their departure; "which," says Fletcher, "it had been their part or duty to have discovered at the time, and not to have concealed them for a time and place not so fitting. How true it was, wherewith they charged him upon their oath, I know not; but he utterly denied it, affirming that he was innocent of such things whereof he was accused." So far was he from confessing his guilt, that, according to this person, who of all others must have possessed the most clear knowledge on this point, "he utterly denied the truth of the charges against him, upon his salvation, at the time of his communicating the sacrament, and at the hour and moment of his death."* Mr. Fletcher speaks of Doughtie in terms of more than common regard, and describes him as a man of extraordinary endowments. Neither in his nor in any other contemporary account is it said that he had the choice allowed him of returning to England, there to answer for himself before the lords in council. It is, indeed, most unlikely that Drake could have spared a ship to convey him; and not to be believed that he, standing upon his innocence, would have rejected such an alternative had it been proposed to him. And the cheerful dinner, and the parting glass, are such embellishments of the story, that the person who devised them could have no expectation of their obtaining belief from any one, except by a reflex supposition in the reader's mind that a circumstance so incredible never would have been invented, and its extreme incredibility was, therefore, an evidence of its truth.

* Burney, 321, 322.

The falsehood of this statement ought not, however, to weigh against Drake, unless he were cognizant of it; but there is no proof of this, nor can it fairly be presumed from the fact, that the narrative wherein it was brought forward is said to be the work of Drake's nephew and namesake. A calumny had been raised against the great navigator, and evidently not without some injurious effect: panegyric biographers have passed over the whole transaction in silence, thereby showing that they did not like to touch upon it: Drake's representative may have fallen into the great folly and greater fault of thinking it allowable to counteract one falsehood by another. Mr. Fletcher's evidence makes it certain that Doughtie made no confession of guilt, but it proves nothing more. The general opinion in the fleet was, that a mutiny had been designed. The Portugueze pilot, who is likely to have been an attentive observer, and must have been an impartial one, says that Doughtie was put to death because he would have returned*; (it will presently appear that one of the ships took the first opportunity of doing so). The Spaniards †, willing as they were to load Drake with every kind of obloquy, were so far from blaming him on this account, that they extolled him for his vigilance and decision. The sufferer's solemn protestations of innocence are easily accounted for; and he would persist in them till the last, because till the last there was always a possibility that they might be believed; it was truly a case, in which, while he persisted in them, as long as there was life there was hope. Finally, and this consideration may be deemed conclusive, the justice of Drake's proceedings was not called in question on his return.

Doughtie was buried on an island in the harbour: the bodies of Robert Winter and Oliver the gunner were

* Hakluyt, 791.

† "En esta baya se quiso amotinar la gente a persuacion de un cavallero llamado Tomas Auter, que se quiso alzar con el armada; y Francisco Draque fue tan diligente que le prendia, y luego le hizo cortar la cabeza, y salvo el peligro." — *Herrera, Hist. Gen.* ii. 384.

"This port," says Lopez Vaz, "I take to be accursed, for that Magellan likewise put some to death there for the like offence." — *Hakluyt*, 791.

interred at the same time, in the same place; and the chaplain set up a stone upon their graves, whereon he engraved their names, and the day, month, and year of their burial. Here the Portugueze prize, being leaky and troublesome, was broken up *; the fleet was thus reduced to three, the Pelican, the Elizabeth, and the Marygold; and having completed their watering, wooding, and repairs, and remained in Port St. Julian from the 20th of June to the 17th of August, they sailed from that port. On the 20th they made Cape Virgenes †, remarkable, at four leagues' distance, for its high and steep grey cliffs, full of black spots. Here, too, they met with an ill omen, the bones of a corpse "whose flesh was clean consumed." ‡ And here, for a good omen, perhaps, as well as out of respect to his friend sir Christopher Hatton, he changed the name of his ship, calling her, instead of the Pelican, the Golden Hind, which sir Christopher probably bore in his arms. On the following day they entered the Straits.

The lateness of the season seems to have been the only thing which prevented Amerigo Vespucci from discovering this passage into the South Sea before that sea had been seen by Balboa, and eighteen years before the famous voyage of Magellan. § He had conceived the hope of making this great discovery, and had nearly accomplished it. || Magellan named it the Patagonian Straits, after the natives, to whom, because they wore ill shaped sandals, he had given the name of Patagons, *patagon* signifying in Spanish a large, clumsy foot. The inappropriate name has been fixed upon the people, not upon the strait, which is properly called after Magellan himself; though before it obtained that appellation from

* Herrera says that this vessel went down in a storm with all on board, before they put into Port St. Julian; and that another vessel was broken up for fuel, because of the extreme cold.

† The eleven thousand has been dropt for shortness. Magellan named the Cape in honour of that noble army, having discovered it on the day appropriated for this ridiculous legend in the Romish calendar.

‡ Burney, 323. Hakluyt, 733.

§ I write the name thus because it is so written in our maps, and so called in common pronounciation; but the proper name is Magalhaens.

|| Grynæus, iv. 124. Hist. of Brazil, i. 28.

popular justice there was an attempt to call it the Strait of Victoria, after the name of his ship.* Juan Ladrilleros had been sent with two ships from Valdivira to survey the strait in 1558. The ships were separated by a storm. The one put back with few of her crew remaining. Ladrilleros executed his commission in the other with great diligence, and extraordinary perseverance and resolution. When he returned to Chili, two men and himself were all who survived to navigate the vessel, the rest having perished by cold and hunger.† Other attempts followed from the same quarter: nothing is known of them but that they failed; and Drake was the third person who performed the passage — the second who performed it from Europe.

“ We found the strait,” says the first narrator, “ to have many turnings, and, as it were, shuttings up, as if there were no passage at all; by means whereof we had the wind often against us, so that some of the fleet recovering a cape or point of land, others should be forced to turn back again, and to come to an anchor where they could. There be many fair harbours, with store of fresh water, but yet they lack their best commodity; for the water is there of such depth, that no man shall find ground to anchor in, except it be in some narrow river or corner, or between some rocks; so that if any extreme blasts or contrary winds do come (whereunto the place is much subject), it carrieth with it no small danger. The land on both sides is very huge and mountainous; the lower mountains whereof, although they be monstrous and wonderful to look upon for their height, yet there are others which exceed them in a strange manner, reaching themselves above their fellows so high, that between them did appear three regions of clouds. These mountains are covered with snow. The strait is extreme cold, with frost and snow continually; the trees seem to stoop with the burden of the weather, and yet are green continually; and many good and sweet herbs do very plentifully grow and in-

* Pigafetta, 26. 40.

† Burney, 249.

crease under them."* Drake gave the name of Elizabeth to the largest of three islands, "laying triangle wise," near which they anchored, when, by their own account, they were thirty leagues within the strait. The other two he named St. Bartholomew's (on whose day he anchored there), and St. George's. "There," says Cliff †, "we stayed one day, and victualled ourselves with a kind of fowl which is plentiful on that isle, and whose flesh is not far unlike a fat goose here in England. They have no wings, but short pinions, which serve their turn in swimming: their colour is somewhat black, mixed with white spots under their belly and about their necks. They walk so upright, that, afar off, a man would take them to be little children. If a man approach any thing near them they run into holes in the ground (which be not very deep), whereof the island is full; so that to take them we had staves with hooks fast to the end, wherewith some of our men pulled them out, and others being ready with cudgels did knock them on the head, for they bite so cruelly with their crooked bills, that none of us were able to handle them alive." This seems to be the earliest account in our language of the penguin. Three thousand of these birds were slaughtered in less than one day, and the ships "victualled themselves thoroughly therewith."

As they approached the western end they observed a number of channels toward the south, and Drake went in a boat to discover the best passage. They met a canoe as they returned, in which were Indians of a smaller stature, and different from those with whom the affray had occurred. Their canoe was excellently well made of bark; the body being handsomely moulded, and the seams so close, though only stitched with thongs or, perhaps, the sinews of some animal, that scarcely any water entered: both the prow and stern were semicircular and high. The tools which they used were made of the large muscle shells which, in the strait, are found sometimes twenty inches in length;

* Hakluyt, 734.

† Ibid. 752.

these they grind to so sharp an edge that it could cut the hardest wood, and even the bones of which they made fish-gigs. They had a hut on the island near to which the ships had anchored ; it was merely formed of a few poles covered with skins. Their vessels were of bark, well shaped and made.* On the seventeenth day after making Cape Virgenes, Drake cleared the strait, and entered the South Sea. Sept. 6.

Balboa had taken possession of that sea in the true spirit of a Spaniard. Reaching its shore for the first time during the ebb, he seated himself there, with his companions, and waited patiently till the tide turned and reached him. Rising then, armed as he was for the occasion, with a sword in one hand and a banner in the other, bearing the Virgin Mary with the arms of Castille at her feet, he advanced into the waves till he was above knee-deep, saying, with a loud voice, " Long live the high and mighty sovereigns of Castille ! Thus, in their names do I take possession of these seas and regions ; and if any other prince, whether Christian or infidel, pretend any right to them, I am ready and resolved to oppose him, and to assert the just claims of my sovereigns !" † The possession which had thus proudly been taken was now, for the first time, about to be disturbed.

Drake's intention was to steer north, that they might get, as speedily as they could, out of " the nipping cold." The season, however, had not been rigorous ; rather indeed, for that region, it seems to have been unusually favourable. On the second day after clearing the strait, they had sailed about seventy leagues to the north-west, when a gale from the north-east came on, and continued more than a fortnight, with such violence that they could carry no sail, and were driven till they were in 57° S. latitude, and above 200 leagues west of the strait. The wind then became favourable, and, at Sept. 30.

* Burney, 324.

† Quintana. Lives of Balboa and Pizarro. Translated by Mrs. Hodson, p. 46.

the end of another week, during which they held a north-east course, they made the land, but the weather would not permit them to anchor. The *Marygold* was obliged to bear away before the gale, and was never heard of more. The two remaining ships, a week afterwards, stood, under low sail, into a bay, where they hoped to have found shelter, it "being a very foul night, and the seas sore grown." The bay proved "very dangerous, full of rocks." Drake's cable broke, and the *Golden Hind* was driven out to sea. Winter made no attempt to follow him; but the next day, "hardly escaping the danger of the rocks," entered the strait again, and, anchoring there in an open bay, made great fires on the shore, that if Drake should put into the strait also, he might discover them. After ten days he proceeded farther, and went into a sound, in which he remained three weeks, and named it the Port of Health, because most of his men being "very sick, with long watching, wet, cold, and evil diet," soon recovered here. They found the large muscles "very pleasant meat, and many of them full of seed pearls." Captain Winter now alleged that he stood in despair both of having favourable winds for Peru and of Drake's safety: he, therefore, "gave over the voyage, full sore against the mariners' mind," and sailed for England, where he arrived with the reproach of having abandoned his commander.*

Meantime Drake, from the Bay of Parting of Friends, as he named the place in which he parted company from his last remaining consort, was driven as far as 55° S., and found two days' shelter on the coast of Terra del Fuego, where he also met with good water and wholesome herbs. But the winds once more returning to their old wont, forced him again from his anchorage, with this additional misfortune, that the shallop, with eight men in it, and provision for only one day, lost sight of the ship. These poor men regained the shore, entered the straits, salted and dried penguins

* Cliffe. Hakluyt, 752.

there, and coasted on till they reached the Plata, and put into a small river on the south side. Six of them landed there in unhappy hour, and entered the woods to seek for food. They fell in with a party of Indians, who with their arrows wounded them all, took four, pursued the others to the shore, and, when the wounded men got on board and pushed off, pursued them with their arrows, and wounded those who had been left in charge of the boat. These unhappy men reached an island about three leagues from the main land, where two of them died of their wounds, and their boat was beaten to pieces against the rocks. Upon this island, which was about a league in compass, they remained two months, living upon small crabs, eels, and a fruit like an orange; but there was no fresh water, and, unable longer to endure the want of it, they ventured to make for the main land, on a large plank some ten feet long, having made paddles with which to guide it. The passage was the work of three days and two nights. "On coming to land," says Carter, "we found a rivulet of sweet water; when William Pitcher, my only comfort and companion (although I endeavoured to dissuade him), being before pinched with extreme thirst, overdrank himself, and, to my unspeakable grief, died within half an hour, whom I buried as well as I could in the sand." Carter fell into the hands of some Indians, who had compassion on him, and conducted him, after a while, to a Portugueze settlement; and, after nine years, he was fortunate enough to return to his own country.*

Drake, having lost his pinnace, was driven still farther south, ran in again among the islands, and at length "fell in with the uttermost part of the land towards the south pole, — without which there is no main nor island to be seen to the southward; but the Atlantic Ocean and the South Sea meet in a large and free scope." The storm, which with little intermission had

* Burney, 368. Purchas, iv. 1188. Purchas in a marginal note abbreviates the last part of this tragedy into two words, "Pitcher breaks." This is characteristic of Purchas, and it is not less so of Admiral Burney that he has noticed it.

Oct. continued fifty-one days, ceased: they found an anchoring place at the southern extremity of the land, since called Cape Horn; and to all the islands which lay without, and to the south of the strait, Drake gave the name of the Elizabethides. He had thus accidentally discovered Cape Horn, and by that displaced the old *terra incognita* from a large portion of the space which it occupied in the map: "we altered the name," says Mr. Fletcher, "to *terra nunc bene cognita*." Drake went ashore, and, sailor like, leaning over a promontory, as far as he safely could, came back, and told his people that he had been farther south than any man living.* On the 30th of October, the wind came fair, and "departing from the southernmost part of the world known or (as they thought) like to be known," they sailed to the north-west, stored themselves with birds and seals from some islands, and coasted, for nearly four weeks, along the American shore, till they arrived at the island of Mocha, and anchored there. The Portuguese pilot describes it as small and low land, full of Indians, and altogether possessed by them. The English supposed that the cruel and extreme dealings of the Spaniards had forced these people, for their own safety and liberty, to flee from the main and fortify themselves here, — an erroneous supposition, for they would have been more secure in the wild parts of their own country. The general landed: the Indians came to the water side, "with show of great courtesy, bringing potatoes, roots, and two fat sheep, for which they received a suitable return; and, as it was then late, it was agreed that the ship should take water there on the morrow." Drake accordingly went in the boat with twelve men, and set two of them, with their vessels, ashore: the Indians lay in ambush by the watering place, sprang upon them, and either seized or slew them; and when the boat was hastening to their succour, a flight of arrows was discharged at it with such effect as to wound every one of the crew, — the general himself under the right eye. It was not

* This he himself told to sir Richard Hawkins.

without difficulty that the boat escaped from this imminent danger, for the Indians pursued their advantage with such resolution that they seized four of the oars, and kept possession of them. None of the assailants were hurt, for the English had not time to use a harquebuss. No attempt was made to take vengeance for this unprovoked attack: it was supposed to have been made under a mistaken notion that they were Spaniards; and it seems Drake admitted that, in that case, the Indians would have acted rightly, and, therefore, that it did not behove him to punish the offence. He sailed the same day, and, happily, none of the wounded died, though they had lost their principal surgeon.

A hope still remained of meeting with the two missing ships. It had been appointed that in case of separation they should look for each other on the coast of Peru, about the latitude of 30° S., and Drake accordingly made diligent search as he sailed along. On the last of November an Indian was found fishing, and brought on board: he was made to comprehend that the ship wanted provisions, and would pay for them, and was then dismissed with gifts. This man's report pleased the natives so well that they brought to the seaside a fat hog, poultry, and other food; and an Indian, of some apparent consequence, went on board. He spoke Spanish; told them that they had passed the port of Valparaiso six leagues; that a Spanish ship was then lying at anchor there, and that he would pilot them thither, which he did accordingly, having no suspicion that they were enemies to the Spaniards, who had never yet seen an enemy in those seas. Felipe, as this civilised Indian was called, did the English good service in conducting them to this port. They found the ship riding at anchor, with eight Spaniards and three negroes aboard: who, taking the new comers for friends, saluted them with beat of drum, and made ready a jar of Chili wine to drink with them. The pirates (they are entitled here to no better name) were no sooner aboard, than one of them, Thomas Moon, struck at a Spaniard,

Dec
5.

exclaiming, "*Abaxo perro!* down dog! and began to lay about him." — "One of these Spaniards, seeing persons of that quality in these seas, all-to-crossed and blessed himself." Another leaped overboard, and swam ashore to give the alarm; the rest were secured under hatches. The town was not more prepared for resistance than the ship, and less capable of it. It consisted of some nine families, who took flight before the English landed and fell to spoil. Little booty was found there: a small chapel contained nothing that was thought worth taking, except a silver chalice, two cruets, and an altar cloth, which Drake transferred to the use of his own chaplain; but there was store of Chili wine in a warehouse, which, with other provisions and some cedar planks for fuel, was carried on board. The prisoners were set ashore, one man excepted, who, being a Greek by birth, was called Juan Griego, and whom they detained to serve as a pilot to Lima. The prize they rifled when they got out to sea: they found in her 1770 jars of Chili wine, 60,000 pieces of gold, some pearls, and some merchandise. Well pleased with this adventure, they rewarded Felipe the Indian, and landed him at that place which was most convenient for him.

From hence they ran along the coast, looking anxiously for their lost consorts; and because the ship was too large to examine close in shore, and a boat not strong enough in case of an attack, they put together a pinnace, which might safely look into every bay and creek. A fortnight after their departure from Valparaiso they anchored about cannon-shot from the mouth of the Coquimbo, and sent a party to get water. Not far to the north was a Spanish town, of which they were not aware, and a considerable body of horse and foot came down upon the men while they were filling their casks. The English, however, who were keeping good watch, retreated to their boat, and pushed off in time, one Richard Minivy only, in a fit of fool-hardiness, refused to escape, killed one of their horses, and was himself killed, and his body thrown upon a horse, and

carried off. This place not suiting their purpose, nor the entertainment being such as they desired, they weighed anchor. The next day Drake, having anchored in a bay in $27^{\circ} 55' S.$, embarked in the pinnace, and turned back in it to make one more search for the lost ships: the wind baffled him, and after one day's trial he gave up the attempt; yet, in apparent hope that as much diligence would be used in seeking him as had been manifested on his part, he remained in this bay more than four weeks, then proceeded slowly along the coast.

They landed next at a place called Tarapaca, and, while looking for water, found a Spaniard lying asleep, and thirteen bars of silver lying by him, which were worth 4000 ducats. No personal injury was offered to the man; nor to another, whom, on a second landing not far off, they met with an Indian in his company, driving eight llamas, each carrying an hundred weight of silver, divided equally in two leathern bags. The llamas as well as their freight were taken on board. From this part of the coast many Indians came off to exchange fish for knives and glasses; and even at an Indian town, where two Spaniards resided as governors, they obtained some llamas in the way of traffic. At Arica they found two ships at anchor, one of which yielded some 40 bars of silver, weighing about 20 lbs. each; the other 200 jars of wine. Only a negro was on board: the people, mistrusting no danger, were gone to the town; "which," says one of the adventurers, "we would have ransacked, if our company had been better and more in number." The sight of certain horsemen ready to have attacked them if they had landed deterred them from the attempt. But they learnt from the negro that there was a ship not far before them richly laden. Taking with him one of his prizes, Drake went in pursuit, he himself in the pinnace close along shore, the ships keeping their course a league to seaward; and having proceeded thus about five-and-forty leagues they saw the vessel at anchor. But the tidings

Jan.
19.

Feb.
7.

that a sea-rover was in pursuit had reached the Spaniards a few hours before, and they had landed 800 bars of silver belonging to the king; every thing else of any value had been removed in time. Here, too, there was a muster on the shore, which it would have been rash to encounter. Drake, therefore, held on his way: but taking this vessel and his other prizes with him, one excepted, which he had burnt at Arica, when they were about a league out at sea, he ordered all their sails to be set, and then let them drive before the wind; while he with only his own ship and the pinnace proceeded to Callao, the port of Lima.

Leisurely as Drake had proceeded, he arrived in sight of the capital of Peru before it was known there that an enemy's ship had entered those seas. When he landed at Valparaiso, the governor of Chili was in the interior, prosecuting that war against the Araucans which has given so great a celebrity to their name; and the authorities did not venture to take upon themselves the responsibility of sending a vessel with despatches to Peru.* A few leagues off that harbour, Drake boarded a bark laden with silks and other goods, which the owner, a Portugueze, was glad to redeem by engaging to pilot the English into Callao.† He brought them in after night-fall, "sailing in between all the ships that lay there, seventeen in number," twelve of which were moored, and had all their sails ashore, "for the master and merchants were here most secure, having never been assaulted by enemies." They rifled these ships, and found in one of them a chest of silver *reales*, and good store of silk and linen. Their enquiry was for the ship that had the silver on board: the silver, it was replied, was on shore; but they were likewise informed that a richly laden treasure ship called the *Cacafuego*—(a name not to be translated) had lately sailed

* The viceroy, D. Francisco de Toledo, states this in his letter to the governor of the Rio de la Plata: if such advice had been sent, he says, "se habieran escusado hartas perdidas y gastos que se han recrecido á S. M. y á los particulares." — *Viage al Estrecho por Pedro Sarmiento*, lxxx.

† Herrera, 385.

for Payta. They cut the cables of these ships, and the masts of the two greatest, and let them drive, not for wantonness, but in provident foresight, that they might be disabled from pursuing him. While he was thus employed, a vessel from Panama, laden with Spanish goods, entered the harbour, and anchored close by the Golden Hind. A boat came from the shore to search it; but because it was night, they deferred the search till the morning, and only sent a man on board. The boat then came along-side Drake's vessel, and asked what ship it was? A Spanish prisoner answered, as he was ordered, that it was Miguel Angel's from Chili. Satisfied with this, the officer in the boat sent a man to board it; but he, when on the point of entering, perceived one of the large guns, and retreated into the boat with all celerity, because no vessels that frequented that port, and navigated those seas, carried great shot." The speed with which the boat made off upon this discovery alarmed the Panama ship, which forthwith cut her cable, and put to sea. Drake's men manned their pinnace, and pursued. The Spaniards, instead of striking at their summons, shot one of the crew, upon which the pinnace returned. But the Golden Hind presently set sail, and gained so fast upon the Panama ship, that the men took to their boat, and escaped ashore, leaving the ship with every thing on board.*

Drake's great object was now to overtake the Cacafuego: the wind failed, and boats were put out to tow the ship. Meantime the alarm had been given in Lima; and the viceroy, don Francisco de Toledo, hastened instantly to Callao, and exerted himself, through the remainder of the night, with such success, that two vessels, with 200 men in each, were despatched in pursuit before Drake was out of sight of the port. Their orders were to board the rover if they could come up with her, — for they had no artillery. The wind, however, sprung up, of which the English made eager use; and the Spaniards were as little desirous of coming up

* Nuno de Sylva. Hakluyt, 746.

with them as they were of being detained by an action in which nothing was to be gained. So manifest, indeed, was this unwillingness, that though there were persons of some distinction on board, the viceroy punished many for cowardice *, not allowing the excuse they had devised for themselves by following the Panama, which Drake dismissed with Juan Grego and his other pilot on board. Drake now made all speed to the north, the pinnace keeping close in shore, the ship about a league and half from land. After some days they stopped a vessel bound for Callao, from which they “took a lamp and a fountain of silver,” and learnt that she had seen the treasure ship three days before. At Payta they boarded another, and were told that the Cacafuego had left that port two days ago. Neither of these vessels did they detain, but taking from the latter some provisions and a negro, hastened on. On Feb. 1. the morrow † they captured a ship bound for Panama, and sent the crew and passengers, among whom were two friars, ashore. In this prize they found forty bars of silver, eighty pounds weight of gold, and a golden crucifix, “set with goodly great emeralds.” This booty cost one of the men his life; he had secreted two plates of gold, denied it when accused, and was hanged when they were found upon him.

They crossed the line on February 24th; and Drake promised to give his chain of gold to the man who should have the good fortune first to descry the golden prize, for which all eyes were eagerly looking out. On St. David's day they made Cape St. Francisco in latitude $0^{\circ} 40' N.$; and if Drake had been a Welshman, the day would have been rendered doubly dear to him, for at three in the afternoon, a certain John Drake, going into the top, espied the object of their long chase, about four leagues to seaward. And here the Portuguese pilot describes what Hakluyt calls “a pretty device to

* Aunque yuan en ellos gente honrada, de miedo se bolvieron, y Don Francisco de Toledo castigò por ello a muchos. Herrera, 385. Nuno da Sylva relates the excuse, and says nothing of the cowardice.

† Hakluyt, 735. 747. Burney, 336.

make their ship sail more swiftly." " Because the English ship was somewhat heavy before, whereby it sailed not as they would have it, they took a company of *botijas*, or Spanish pots for oil, and filling them with water, hung them by ropes at the stern of the ship to make her sail the better." The device was not wanted; for the Spanish captain, Juan de Anton*, made towards the English ship† to know what she was, thinking her to be one of the ships that used to sail along the coasts and traffic in the country. When they were near enough Drake hailed them to strike, and the other refusing, " with a great piece he shot her mast overboard, and having wounded the master with an arrow, the ship yielded." They took possession, sailed with her further into the sea all that night, and the next day and night, making all the way they could. Being then at safe distance from the coast, they stopped, and lay by their prize four days, taking out her cargo and transferring it to their own ship. They found in her great riches, as jewels and precious stones, thirteen chests full of *reales* of plate, 80 lbs. weight of gold, and 26 tons of silver: 300 bars of the silver belonged to the king, the rest was the property of private merchants. The whole value was estimated at 360,000 pieces of gold, that of the silver alone being 212,000*l.*; and the captors congratulated themselves that their ship might now well be called the Golden Hind. A little of the exultation of success was shown upon this occasion. Among other plate, two very fair gilt bowls of silver were found, belonging to the pilot, to whom Drake said, " Señor pilot, you have here two silver cups, but I must needs have one of them!" The pilot, who knew that need has no law, and that the adventurer who addressed him had just then as little, assented, " because he could not otherwise choose," and gave the other also to the steward of the general's ship. In a better spirit Drake called for

* Santona?

† Herrera says, that had it not been for this mistake the English would not have captured her, because the South Sea ships were excellent sailers, better than any others in the world. 385.

the register of the treasure on board, and wrote a receipt in the margin for the whole amount.*

Many a witticism was passed upon the unseemly name † of their unfortunate prize, which, at the end of four days, was dismissed, and three men put on board, whom Drake had taken on the way for pilots. Drake gave the captain a letter of safe-conduct, in case he should fall in with the Elizabeth or the Marygold. This letter, which has been preserved by the Portuguese pilot, is remarkable for its kindness and religious feeling. The contents, as retranslated in Hakluyt from the Portuguese or Spanish version, were these :—

“ Master Winter, if it pleaseth God that you should chance to meet with this ship of Señor Juan de Anton, I pray you use him well, according to my word and promise given unto them ; and if you want any thing that is in this ship of Señor Juan de Anton, I pray you pay them double the value of it, which I will satisfy again ; and command your men not to do her any hurt ; and what composition or agreement we have made, at my return into England I will, by God’s help, perform ; although I am in doubt that this letter will never come to

* C. Suarez de Figueroa, 209. : Lope de Vega also relates this, and says that the Spaniards themselves were amused at it.

— tomaste la rica presa opima
De un millon y seyscientos mil ducados ;
Donde España ha tenido en mas estima
Aquellos tus donayres celebrados,
Quando al maestro y del navio ministro
Pediste de la plata el gran registro.

Las margenes del qual por recibidas
Satisfaciendo con estrañas veras,
Firmaste de tu nombre las partidas,
Como si dueño de la plata fueras.
Hasta las letras oy estan corridas
De que esta burla a su registro hizieras,
Bolviste el libro, que fue en tanto estrago
Para el dueño gentil recibo y pago.

Dragontea, canto 1.

† “ When this pilot departed from us, his boy said thus unto our general : ‘ Captain, our ship shall be called no more the Cacafuego, but the Cacaplata ; and yours shall be called the Cacafuego ; ’ which pretty speech of the pilot’s boy ministered matter of laughter to us, both then and long after.” — *Hakluyt, 736.*

your hands. Notwithstanding I am the man I have promised to be, — beseeching God, the Saviour of all the world, to have us in his keeping, to whom only I give all honour, praise, and glory. What I have written is not only to you, Master Winter, but also to M. Thomas, M. Charles, M. Caube, and M. Anthony, with all our other good friends, whom I commit to the tuition of Him that with his blood redeemed us; and am in good hope that we shall be in no more trouble, but that He will help us in adversity; desiring you, for the passion of Christ, if you fall into any danger, that you will not despair of God's mercy, for he will defend you, and preserve you from all danger, and bring us to our desired haven: to whom be all honour, glory, and praise, for ever and ever. Amen.*

“ Your sorrowful captain,
 “ Whose heart is heavy for you,
 “ FRANCIS DRAKE.”

The general had now no other object in these seas †. how to make his way home with this great booty was the next consideration. To return by the strait was, on many accounts, unadvisable; the season was unfavourable, and they knew the difficulties and dangers of that passage: moreover, the Spaniards expecting them to take that course, would be likely both to have despatched ships in quest of them, and a force to intercept them there. This was no vain surmise: the whole coast of Chili and Peru was in such alarm, that a stop was put to all maritime trade; for it was known that Drake expected to be joined by his two consorts, and in every port the people were under arms to resist them. All the consequences of such an invasion, and more than all, were apprehended by the Spanish authorities: they

* Hakluyt, 747.

† “ Thinking himself, both in respect of his private injuries received from the Spaniards, as also of their contempts and indignities offered to our country and prince in general, sufficiently satisfied and revenged, and supposing that her majesty, at his return, would rest satisfied with this service.” — *Hakluyt*, 736.

thought that nothing less than the king of Spain's dominion in those seas, and the properties and lives and souls of the inhabitants, were at stake.* It was not Drake's business now to encounter any danger that could be avoided ; but greater proof of his ability as a seaman, and of his enterprising genius, was never given than at this time ; for instead of at once resolving to follow the course of Magellan, and so compass the globe, he conceived the hope of rivalling that great navigator by exploring a passage between the two great seas, at the opposite extremity of America.† This he propounded to his ship's company. " All of us," says one, who writes as if he had been present, " willingly hearkened and consented to our general's advice ; which was, first, to seek out some convenient place to trim our ship, and store ourselves with wood and water, and such provisions as we could get ; and thenceforward to hasten on our intended journey for the discovery of the said passage, through which we might with joy return to our longed homes." ‡

They now sailed for the coast of Nicaragua, which they made on March 16., " near a small island named Canno," two leagues from the mainland ; there they found a small bay, wherein they anchored, at five fathom deep, close by the land, and near a fresh-water stream. On the 20th, a vessel was seen attempting to pass close by. The pinnace was sent in chase, and brought her in. She was laden with sarsaparilla, butter, and honey, and other things. The sarsaparilla they threw ashore ; and used the vessel as a receptacle for their stores, while they laid their own ship down to examine her bottom. The island afforded them wood and fish, and would have supplied alligators and monkeys if they had chosen to take any on board. While they remained here they felt the shock of an earthquake. In eight days the re-

* *Viage del Sarmiento*, 4.

† *World Encompassed*. Burney, 339.

‡ Camden (p. 252.) is mistaken in saying that the viceroy had at this time sent ships to fortify the strait. He could not do this till the Panama fleet arrived ; and the expedition appointed for this service was not ready to sail from Callao till Oct. 11. — *Viage del Sarmiento*, pp. 4. 40.

pairs, wooding, and watering were completed, and they sailed westward, taking with them their prize ; which, however, after keeping two days longer, they dismissed, detaining some of the men to serve as pilots, and taking " the sea-cards, wherewith they should make their voyage, and direct themselves in their course."* And so sailing until the 6th of April, about evening, they discovered a ship that held two leagues to seaward from the land ; and before the next day, in the morning, they were hard by her, and suddenly fell upon her while her men slept. She was apparently from Manilla, laden with " linen cloth (which probably means muslins), fine China dishes of white earth, and great store of China silks ; of all which," says the relator, " we took as we listed." He adds, that the owner of the ship was on board, who was a Spanish gentleman ; and that the general took from him a falcon of gold, with a great emerald in the breast thereof. They took a negro out of this vessel, and dismissed her with all her crew, one man excepted, whom they detained to show them some watering place. He brought them into the haven of April Guatulco. They landed there, in happy hour for some 13. negroes, upon whom the criminal court was then sitting in judgment for having conspired to set the town on fire. Judges and prisoners were conveyed on board ; and the chief judge was made to write to the inhabitants, ordering them to leave the town, while the English might remain here. There were but seventeen Spaniards residing here ; and neither they nor the coloured population had much to lose, for the adventurer who tells us that the town was ransacked boasts of no other plunder than a pot as big as a bushel full of silver reales, and a gold chain and some jewels which one " Thomas Moon took from a Spanish gentleman, whom he caught as he was flying out of the place."

Drake remained here nearly a fortnight ; and before April 26.

* Admiral Burney says, " whether these were charts of those seas or only the cards of steering compasses was not explained." I have no doubt that the former are intended.

he departed he released all his prisoners, and put the Portugueze, Nunho da Sylva, on board a ship in the harbour, to find his way to Portugal as he could.* From Guatulco they steered "directly off to sea," and sailed (the accounts say) 500 leagues in longitude to get a favourable wind. On June 3. having sailed in different directions 1400 leagues, without seeing land, they had arrived in latitude 42° N. A great change in the temperature was now felt; the people were benumbed with the piercing cold, which increased to that extremity on sailing two degrees farther north, that meat, as soon as it was removed from the fire, would presently be frozen, and the ropes and tackling of the ship were quite stiffened. Contrary winds forced them to run in with the land, which they then unexpectedly descried; for they had not supposed that America in that latitude extended so far to the west. "They stood toward the shore, and anchored in an open ill-sheltered bay. The wind was strong, and in gusts; upon any intermission, there came a thick stinking fog, in which they were enveloped, till it was dispersed by the renewed strength of the wind. They could not remain here; and the direction of the wind, with the severity of the cold, not only discouraged them from persisting in the attempt to go farther north, but commanded them to the southward, whether they would or no." So they drew back from latitude 48° , to which they had advanced, ten degrees, "in which height it pleased God to send them into a fair and good bay, with a good wind to enter the same." There can be little doubt that this bay was that which is now called Port San Francisco.†

* This is injuriously represented, as if the poor man had been left in an enemy's country. It was hardship enough for him to lose his ship and his goods, and be carried from the Cape de Verds through the strait and to the coast of Nicaragua. But he could not have been dismissed at any point which would have been more convenient for himself; and in the relation which he drew up for the viceroy of New Spain, he makes no complaint of his treatment. It is very much to his honour, and something to that of Drake and his men, that there is not in this plain and evidently faithful relation the slightest expression of prejudice or resentment against the English.

† Burney, 343. Hakluyt, 440.

There were huts close to the water side. The day after they anchored many natives showed themselves on the shore, and a single man was sent off in a canoe. Immediately he began to speak, though at a considerable distance from the ship, and continued to do so as he paddled on, till having drawn as near as he thought fit upon this first advance, he stopped, made a long and earnest address accompanied by gesticulations not more intelligible than the harangue ; and when he had finished returned with great show of reverence to the shore. Soon after he repeated the same ceremony in the same manner ; and presently a third time, but he then brought a bunch of feathers, resembling those of a crow, neatly fastened together, clean and handsomely cut ; and also a small basket made of rushes, and filled with an herb which they called *tabah** : these he tied to a short stick, and cast them into the ship's boat. In return Drake directed some presents to be put on a plank in the water, and pushed towards him ; but he refused to touch them, and would receive nothing except a hat, which being thrown from the ship, he took up. No intercourse followed upon this ceremony ; both parties, however, seemed to consider that a good understanding had been established by it, and to have acted accordingly in good faith. The natives were not distrustful, because they had only once been visited by Europeans, thirty-seven years before, when Joam Rodrigues Cabrillo †, a Portugueze by birth, was sent by the viceroy of New Spain to explore that coast : he happened to be a humane good man, as well as a skilful navigator ; and the whole of his intercourse with the natives had been of the most friendly kind. Drake knew not that any such earlier discovery had been made of these parts ; but he

* The author of the "famous voyage" says tobacco. (Hakluyt, 441.) I have followed admiral Burney in using the name by which the natives called it ; but that it was tobacco I have no doubt. For the Californians, though they had not discovered the art of preparing any fermented liquor, used to intoxicate themselves at their feasts with the smoke of this wild herb.— *Noticia de la California*, t. i. p. 79.

† Burney, i. 220—224. Herrera, Dec. 7. l. 5. c. 3, 4. *Noticia de la California*, i. 181—183.

felt the beneficial consequences of his predecessor's conduct; and neither he nor his people did any thing during their tarrance to counteract the favourable impression which Cabrillo had made.

He was not, however, unmindful of that caution which ought always to be observed among any people whose character is not well known, and especially among savages. It was necessary to lighten the ship in order to come at a leak which she had sprung. She was anchored, therefore, close to the shore, and Drake landed his men, with tents, and such things as were necessary for fortifying their temporary encampment. The natives upon perceiving this collected in arms, and in large companies; yet their demeanour was that of men who had prepared themselves to resent wrong, not to offer it; and when signs were made to them to lay aside their bows and arrows they did so, accepted the gifts which were offered, and in return presented the general with feathers, nets, and skins. They retired at evening, to all appearance, well satisfied; but when they had reached their dwellings loud lamentations were distinctly heard from thence, though the distance was not less than three parts of a mile, and the voices of the women were distinguished, whose miserable shrieking rose above the deep and doleful outcries of the men. During the two following days no one came near the tents, and Drake is said to have fortified them by building a stone wall round. On the third day, a more numerous assemblage than had yet been seen convened on the nearest eminence, from whence one of their orators delivered with violent enunciation a long speech, his words falling "so thick one on the neck of the other, that he could hardly fetch his breath again." When he had ended, all the natives bowed their heads, and sung out *Oh* in a solemn and lengthened tone, whereby it was supposed that they signified their assent to all that had been said. The men then left their bows on the ground, descended to the encampment, and offered bunches of feathers and baskets of tobacco to the general, which he accepted, and made them pre-

sents in return. But the women, meantime remaining on the hill, "tormented themselves lamentably:" they tore their cheeks and bosoms, uttered pitiable cries, threw off their upper garment, and holding their hands over their heads, dashed themselves on the ground, repeating this till they were covered with blood. The English did not behold this miserable sight without compassion, and Drake felt the more, because he and his people were persuaded that the natives took them for gods, and meant this as a religious act of propitiation. A proper sense of piety prompted him to the wisest measure that could have been taken. He ordered all his people to prayers, and divine service was performed with an earnestness which the natives understood. The effect which he had hoped for was produced, a stop was put to their self-lacerations and other acts of violence: they "seemed to be greatly affected at what they witnessed;" that is, they regarded it with awe, and at every pause in the service they chanted out their solemn *oh*. When it was over, and they rose to depart, they restored all the presents which had been made them, and no one could be persuaded to take away with him a single thing.*

The news having spread into the country, more natives flocked to the place, and two heralds made the general understand that their chief, or *hioh*, as he was called, was coming to visit him, but that he desired to have some token sent him that his coming might be in peace. They were dismissed with what they asked for; and forthwith the *hioh*, who was "of a goodly stature and comely personage," advanced toward the fort with a princely majesty, the people crying continually after their manner, and as they drew near so did they strive to behave in their actions with comeliness. One "of a large body and goodly aspect" led the way, bearing a club of dark coloured wood, to which were fastened two coronals, "a less and a bigger, made of net-work, and artificially wrought with feathers of many colours." Three chains also were suspended from it, "of a mar-

* Burney, 345—348. Hakluyt, 441.

vellous length, and made of a bony substance*, every part thereof being very little, thin, finely burnished, with a hole pierced through the middle, the number of links making one chain being in a manner infinite. Few be the persons that are admitted to wear them, and those persons are stinted in the number, by which it seems their rank was denoted." Next came the high, wearing a coronal like those which were borne before him, and a cloak of what the English took for rabbit skins. About 100 "tall and warlike men accompanied him, with similar cloaks but of different skins." Some wore feathered coats, others had their heads "covered with a very fine down, which grows in that country upon an herb much like our lettuce." All had their faces painted, each after his own fashion. Each brought something for a present. "The naked, common sort of people followed," every one having his face painted, some with white, some with black, and other colours, "and having feathers in their hair, which they gathered up in a bunch behind. Women and children brought up the train, each bringing a round basket or two with bags of tobacco, broiled fish, and a root called *petah*, of which meal was made, to be either baked or eaten raw. Even the children carried each a present."†

Drake, seeing so numerous a body of natives, drew up his men within the "fenced place, making against their approach a very warlike show." The Californians, "being trooped together in their order," first made a general salutation, which was followed by general silence. The club-bearer then pronounced with a loud and manly voice, after the dictation of one who stood close to him, an oration which seemed to the English to

* A marginal note in Hakluyt says, "These are like chains of Esumoy in Canada and Hochelage," that is, strings of wampum. Langsdorff says, that the Indians at this place still retain the art of making the pieces of which these strings are composed with marvellous exactness, all of the same size, and boring them without an iron instrument. They are cut from the shell of a kind of muscle, which he did not see. One of them is represented in the plates to the German edition of Langsdorff's work. — *Reise um du Welt*, ii. 143.

† Burney, 348—350. Hakluyt, 441.

continue half an hour, and at its conclusion the whole train chanted that long *oh*, which was interpreted to signify amen, so be it! Men and women then descended the hill (leaving the children), and advanced in order towards the camp; their demonstrations were so peaceful that Drake allowed them to enter; the club or sceptre bearer (as he is dignified by the relater) "began a song, observing his measures in a dance, and that with a stately countenance; the hioh with his guard, and every degree of persons following, did in like manner sing and dance, but the women only danced and kept silence." When they were within the camp, they continued their song and dance a reasonable time. Then, in the words of the earliest account, "they made signs to our general to sit down, to whom the king and divers others made several orations, or rather supplications, that he would take their province and kingdom into his hand and become their king, making signs that they would resign unto him their right and title of the whole land, and become his subjects. In which to persuade us the better, the king and the rest with one consent, and with great reverence, joyfully singing a song, did set the crown upon his head, enriched his neck with all their chains, and offered unto him many other things, honouring him by the name of hioh*, adding thereunto, as it seemed, a sign of triumph; which thing our general thought not meet to reject, because he knew not what honour and profit it might be to our country. Wherefore, in the name and to the use of her majesty, he took the sceptre† crown, and dignity of the said

* "These honours," says admiral Burney, "paid to a stranger, have more than a shade of resemblance to the custom which has been found among so many Indian nations, of exchanging names with those whose alliance or friendship they desire. The general, to have manifested an equal return of consideration, might have decorated his visiter with some ornament, and have saluted him by the name of Drake."—P. 350.

† The invariable custom adopted by Europeans, of claiming and taking formal possession of every new land they meet with (whether it is inhabited or uninhabited never entering into the consideration), no doubt disposed Drake to credit, if it is true that he did credit it, that these people, simply, and for no cause, value received, or other consideration, made a voluntary gift of themselves and their country to him, a perfect stranger.—*Burney*. p. 354.

country in his hands ; wishing that the riches and treasure thereof might so conveniently be transported to the enriching of her kingdom at home, as it aboundeth in the same.* The natives accompanied this act of surrender with a song and dance of triumph, “ because (says another relater) they were not only visited of gods, (for so they still judged us to be), but the great and chief god was now become their god, their king and patron, and themselves the only happy and blessed people in all the world.”†

That the natives meant to make a surrender of their country by these ceremonies is what none but men prepossessed with notions which were common to all Europeans in that age could have supposed ; but that they regarded the English as beings, if not of superior nature, yet of such superior knowledge and power, that it was necessary to propitiate them by circumstances approaching to idolatry, must be inferred from the scene which immediately ensued. “ The common sort of the people leaving the king and his guard with our general, scattered themselves together with their sacrifices among our people, taking a diligent view of every person ; and such as pleased their fancy (which were the youngest), they, enclosing them about, offered their sacrifices unto them with lamentable weeping, scratching, and tearing the flesh from their faces with their nails, whereof issued abundance of blood. But we used signs to them of disliking this, and stayed their hands from force, and directed them upwards to the living God, whom only they ought to worship.” Such, too, as had sores, craved help of the strangers, as of persons who assuredly they thought could heal them. Whereupon, the writer says, “ we gave them lotions, plasters, and ointments, agreeing to the state of their griefs, beseeching God to cure their diseases. Every third day they brought their sacrifices unto us, until they understood our meaning that we had no pleasure in them. Yet they could not be long absent from us, but daily frequented our company to the

* Hakluyt, 441.

† World Encompassed, 76.

hour of our departure, which departure seemed so grievous unto them, that their joy was turned into sorrow. They entreated us that, being absent, we would remember them, and by stealth provided a sacrifice, which we misliked." *

The Californians were in a ruder state than many of the North American nations. The people whom Drake saw were a burrowing tribe: their houses or dens were circular, roofed with timber, the centre forming a kind of spire †, near which "an opening that resembled the scuttle of a ship served the double purpose of door and chimney." They were not so far advanced as to use the hammock, but slept, like our British ancestors, upon rushes, around a central fire. Most of the men were nearly naked; the women wore a loose garment round the waist, made of bulrushes, "combed after the manner of hemp:" over the shoulders they had a deer skin. Deer were very numerous: in an excursion which Drake made to some of their villages in the interior, he saw herds of a thousand in a company, "being most large and fat of body." "The whole country was like a warren of a strange kind of conies, their bodies in bigness as be the Barbary conies, their heads as the heads of our's, the feet of a wunt (or mole), and the tail of a rat, being of great length; under her chin on either side a bag, into the which she gathereth her meat, when she hath filled her belly abroad." The skins of these creatures were much esteemed, "for their king's coat was made of them." Drake named the country New Albion, "in respect of the white banks and cliffs which lie towards the sea," and also for old England's sake. He set up a monument of the queen's "right and title to the same, namely, a plate nailed upon a fair great post, whereupon was engraven her majesty's name, the day and year of our arrival there, with the free giving up of the province

* Hakluyt, 442.

† "Their houses," says the old relation, "are digged round about with earth, and have from the uttermost brims of the circle clefts of wood set upon them, joining close together at the top like a spire steeple, which by reason of that closeness are very warm." — P. 441.

and people into her majesty's hands, together with her highness's picture and arms in a piece of sixpence of current English money under the plate, where under was also written the name of our general." Nova California is still named New Albion in English maps ; but no consequences, either evil or good, have resulted from the possession thus confidently taken.* That part of the Americas has even to this time escaped from all the evils of conquest, and the attempts that have been made to civilise it have been in the spirit of that religion which was proclaimed with the announcement of peace on earth, good will towards men. The Jesuits, who were as beneficially employed in America as they were mischievously in Europe, established missions there, in which, though they attempted, and consequently effected, less than in Paraguay and among the Cháquitos, they reclaimed very many hordes from a savage life, and reduced them to a state of contented pupilage, in which their bodily wants were amply provided for. Upon the abolition of that order the Franciscans were substituted for them in these parts, and the Californian missions appear to have been the only ones that were not either utterly ruined or miserably deteriorated by the change.

July 23. After remaining five weeks in port Drake took his departure, and as long as the ship continued in sight, the natives kept fires on the tops of the hills. The design of seeking for a passage by the north of America was, with general consent, given up, seeing that the northern summer was so far advanced, and that the wind was then blowing from the N. W. ; and it was determined to follow the example of Magellan, and steer for the Moluccas. After taking " good store of seals and birds" from the Farellones, which are near

* " It seemeth that the Spaniards hitherto had never been in this part of the country, neither did they ever discover the land by many degrees to the southwards of this place." (Hakluyt, 442.) The English knew nothing at that time of Cabrillo's voyage, nor indeed of any thing that the Spaniards had done in that direction. They too were dreaming of Eldorados, and thought there was " no part of the earth here to be taken up wherein there is not some special likelihood of gold or silver." — *Ib.*

the entrance of Port St. Francesco, they sailed sixty-eight days without seeing land, and then fell in with some inhabited islands, which, from the conduct of the natives, they named the Islands of Thieves, — another remarkable coincidence with the circumstances of Magellan's voyage. These people began by fair trading: then took the English articles and would make no return; and, lastly, when the English refused to deal any more with such customers, attacked the ship with stones, wherewith they had come well provided. A great gun was fired over their heads: it frightened them away; but when they found that they were not hurt, they returned more audaciously to the unprovoked attack, and "could not be got rid of till they were made to feel smart as well as terror." There is little doubt that these were the Pelew Islands. Drake was not clear of them till the 3d of October. On the 16th he made the Philippines, and on the 3d of November had sight of the Moluccas, and steered for Tidore, where it was his intention to anchor; but a boat came off from the island Motir, and Portugueze enough was spoken by those who came in it to make him understand that the Portugueze had been driven out from Ternate, and had taken up their quarters in Tidore, and to invite him to change his destination and go to Ternate, when they understood that he was not a friend to the Portugueze. Thither, accordingly, he went; and sending a velvet cloak as a present to the king, requested to be furnished with provisions, and to trade for spices.*

The king, who had already been told "what good things he might receive by traffic," prepared forthwith to visit the ship. He sent before him "four great and large canoes, in every one whereof were certain of his greatest states that were about him, attired in white lawn of cloth of Calicut, having over their heads from the one end of the canoe to the other a covering of thin perfumed mats, borne up with a frame made of reeds for the same use, under which every one did sit

* Burney, 356—358. Hakluyt, 739.

in his order, according to his dignity, to keep him from the heat of the sun ; divers of whom being of good age and gravity did make an ancient and fatherly show. There were also divers young and comely men attired in white, as were the others. The rest were soldiers, which stood in comely order, round about on both sides ; without whom sate the rowers in certain galleries, which being three on a side all along the canoes did lie off from the side thereof three or four yards, one being orderly builded lower than another, in every of which galleries were the number of fourscore rowers. These canoes were furnished with warlike munition, every man, for the most part, having his sword and target, with his dagger, besides other weapons, as lances, calivers, darts, bows, and arrows ; also every canoe had a small cast base (or cannon) mounted at the least one full yard upon a stock set upright. Thus coming near the ship, in order they rowed about it, one after another, and passing by, did their homage* with great solemnity, the great personages beginning with great gravity, and fatherly countenance, signifying that the king had sent them to conduct the ship into a better road." The king soon arrived, and was received with a salute of great guns, with trumpets sounding, and such politic display of state and strength as Drake knew it was advisable to exhibit. He and his suite were " passing well contented with the presents which were made them ; and taking his leave, as the ship anchored, he promised to repeat his visit the next day, and said that provisions should be supplied." †

That same night provisions were sent, consisting of rice, fowls, " unperfect and liquid sugar," sugar canes, " a fruit which they call figo," cloves, and " meal,

* Here, too, Drake's people were possessed with the notion of an intended surrender of the rights of sovereignty. The first relator says, " The king was moved with great liking toward us, and sent to our general with special message, that he should have what things he needed and would require, with peace and friendship ; and, moreover, that he would yield himself, and the right of his island, to be at the pleasure and commandment of so great a prince as we served." — P. 739.

† Hakluyt, 739. Burney, 358.

which they call sagu, made of the tops of certain trees, tasting in the mouth like sour curds, but melting like sugar, whereof they make certain cakes, which may be kept the space of ten years, and yet then good to be eaten." But instead of repeating his visit, as he had promised, the king sent his brother on the morrow to invite the general ashore, and remain on board as hostage for his safe return. The breach of promise made Drake "mislike" this invitation, and his whole company utterly refused to let him accept it. Not, however, to express any suspicion, that should it prove needless might justly give offence, he sent some of his officers with presents in his stead. They were received in great state, in a large and fair house, near the castle which this prince had taken from the Portugueze. About 1000 persons were assembled, among whom were seven ambassadors* from different countries. The king came in, after awhile, with twelve guards, and under a rich canopy, embossed with gold. "From his waist down to the ground was all cloth of gold, and the same very rich; his legs were bare, but on his feet were shoes of Cordovan skin. In the attire of his head were finely wreathed hooped rings of gold; and about his neck he had a chain of perfect gold, the links whereof were great and one fold double. On his fingers he had six very fair jewels; and sitting in his chair of estate, at his right hand stood a page with a fan in his hand, breathing and gathering the air to the king. The fan was in length two feet, and in breadth one, set with eight sapphires, richly embroidered, and knit to a staff three feet in length, by which the page did hold and move it." No treachery had been intended: the interview ended well; and the English were offered an exclusive trade

* Two Turks, ligiers, the old relation says, and one Italian, and "four grave persons, apparelled all in red down to the ground, and attired on their heads like the Turks, and these were said to be Romans, and ligiers there to keep continual traffic with the people of Ternate." (p. 740.) Who these may have been it is impossible to guess, farther than that they were Mahommedans.

with Ternate and its numerous dependent isles *, if they would enter into engagements of amity and commerce with him.

Sultan Baboe, or more properly Baab-Ullah, by whom this proposal was made, was a more politic and powerful prince than any of the twenty-four sultans who had preceded him in the sovereignty of those islands. His father, Sultan Hairun, had been assassinated in his own palace by the Portugueze, mutual wrongs and mutual intolerance having exasperated them against each other. The history of the Portugueze in the Moluccas, far unlike that of the mother-country and its other conquests or colonies, may be described as a series of crimes, with little to mitigate them, and nothing to redeem the perpetrators from abhorrence and execration.† They cut the body of Hairun in pieces, salted them, and when Baab-Ullah offered even to become a Christian if they would give him the dishonoured remains of his murdered father, they cast them into the sea. The sultan had his revenge, but it was that of a brave and honourable man: he besieged them in their fort St. Paulo, compelled them, by famine, to surrender, received the keys in a casket of finely wrought silver, and made the army hut themselves upon the beach till opportunity might offer of a passage to their own country. A galleon arrived; but those on board regarded the capitulation as so shameful, that they refused to take their countrymen on board, and there they must have remained, if the people of Tidore had not, in hatred to the Ternatans, transported them to their island, and allowed them to construct a fortress there; and though Baab-Ullah pursued them thither, and defeated them and their allies in battle, they maintained themselves there.‡

* Seventy they are said to be in Hakluyt. They were commonly accounted seventy-two, but Valentyn enumerates twenty more, besides more than a hundred uninhabited ones, of which the birds and turtles are in full, but not peaceful, possession.

† My knowledge of it is derived from their own historians; and if there is a wickeder history than that of the Portugueze in the Moluccas, it has not come within the course of my reading.

‡ Valentyn Beschryving der Moluccos, i. 206, 207.

These events occurred only six years before Drake's arrival, and they explain the readiness with which the sultan proposed to enter into an alliance with the English. Powerful as he then was, he knew that he might possibly one day stand in need of European aid; and in the eastern islands the sultans seem always to have been merchant princes. But the English did not yet extend their views of commerce so far, and Drake had not come there "to spy the land," even with mercantile intentions. His first object was to discover the weakness of Peru; having succeeded in that, to go round the world was not only a point of ambition but his best way home.

Among the persons who came on board the *Golden Hind* during the six days that she remained at Ternate was a Chinese, who informed Drake, through an interpreter, that he was related to the family of the reigning emperor, but had been unjustly accused of a capital crime, and was afraid that if it came to trial, innocent though he was, he should not be able to make his innocence appear. He had, therefore, solicited and obtained leave to expatriate himself, upon condition that if he could bring home any important intelligence, he should be allowed to live in his native country, otherwise he must pass his life in exile. Now, he said, he accounted himself a happy man, in that he had seen and spoken with the English, thinking this was a thing for which, perhaps, he might find favour in China; and he endeavoured to persuade Drake to go thither, not doubting but that it would be a means to obtain him advancement and honour. But Drake's business was to secure both the wealth and the glory which he had acquired, by returning home with as little delay as possible; and the poor Chinese departed sorrowfully, when he found that his persuasions did not succeed.*

Having stored himself with provisions, and laid in as large a quantity of cloves as convenient stowage could be found for, Drake sailed on the 9th of November; and on

* *World Encompassed*, 93. Burney, 359.

the 14th anchored at a small uninhabited island near the eastern part of Celebes. There he erected tents, intrenched them to be prepared for unwelcome visitors if any should arrive, set up a forge, and repaired the ship carefully. Four weeks were passed in this occupation without molestation of any kind. They had to provide themselves with water from an adjacent island; in all other respects this was most commodious. It was covered "with wood of a large and high growth, straight, and without boughs, save only in the head or top, whose leaves are not much differing from our broom in England. Amongst these trees, night by night, through the whole land, did show themselves an infinite swarm of fiery worms flying in the air, whose bodies being no bigger than our common English flies make such a show and light, as if every twig and tree had been a burning candle." Such is the exaggerated description which one of these adventurers has given of a very striking and beautiful sight. "In this place breedeth also wonderful store of bats, as big as large hens;" and, better than such ugly poultry, "a kind of cray fish, of such a size that one was sufficient to satisfy four hungry men." These, which seem to be exaggerated in size, were land crabs, and "very good and restoring meat." "They are," says another relator, "as far as we could perceive, utter strangers to the sea, living always on the land, where they work themselves earths; or rather they dig huge caves under the roots of the largest trees, where they lodge by companies together. Sometimes, when we came to take them, for want of other refuge, they would climb into the trees to hide themselves, where we were enforced to follow them." *

Dec. From hence they sailed toward the west, and thereby
 12. got entangled among the islands and shoals near the coast
 of Celebes. With the hope of escaping from these, they
 1579. held a southern course; but on the 9th of January, when
 they thought themselves in a clear sea, early in the first

* Hakluyt, 740. Burney, 361.

watch, the ship running under full sail, with the wind large, and blowing moderately fresh, came at once upon a rocky shoal, and stuck fast. "Boats were got out to examine if an anchor could be placed in any direction, by which they might endeavour to draw the ship off into deep water; but at the distance of only a boat's length no bottom could be found with all their lines. The ship had not become leaky in consequence of the shock; but she remained all night fixed, and another examination after daylight was as fruitless as the former." There she continued till four in the afternoon. The general, "as he had always hitherto shown himself courageous, and of a good confidence in the mercy and protection of God, so now he continued in the same; and lest he should seem to perish wilfully, both he and his men did their best endeavour to save themselves. Those endeavours were all vain; and it was to God's special mercy that they were alone beholden for their preservation, when no human effort could avail. In a state which was hopeless, as well as helpless, the crew were summoned to prayers; and when that duty was performed they tried what could be done by lightening the ship. Three tons of cloves were thrown out, eight of the guns, and a quantity of meal and pulse; but none of the treasure, though that was the heaviest part of the cargo.* No visible benefit was produced. The ship had grounded on a shelving

* Fuller says otherwise in a most characteristic passage. The ship, he says, struck twice on a dangerous shoal, "knocking twice at the door of death, which no doubt had opened the third time. Here they stuck, having ground too much, and yet too little to land on; and water too much, and yet too little to sail in. Had God, who, as the wise man saith, holdeth the winds in his fist, but opened his little finger and let out the smallest blast, they had undoubtedly been cast away; but there blew not any wind all the while. Then they, conceiving aright that the best way to lighten the ship was first to ease it of the burthen of their sins by true repentance, humbled themselves by fasting under the hand of God; afterward they received the communion, dining on Christ in the sacrament, expecting no other than to sup with him in heaven. Then they cast out of their ship six great pieces of ordnance; threw overboard as much wealth as would break the heart of a miser to think on't; with much sugar, and packs of spices, making a caudle of the sea round about. Then they betook themselves to their prayers, the best lever at such a dead lift indeed, and it pleased God that the wind, formerly their mortal enemy, became their friend." — *Holy State*, 127.

rock ; where she lay there was on one side only six feet depth at low water, and to float her it required thirteen. The wind blowing fresh directly against the other side, kept her upright during the time she was left by the tide ; but when it was nearly at the lowest the wind slackened, and the ship losing this prop fell toward the deep water : her keel with the shake was freed from the rocks ; and, not less to the surprise than to the joy of every one aboard, she was once more afloat. Thus were they delivered at the very time when the tide was least favourable, and when all efforts were thought useless.”*

“ Having suffered many dangers by winds and shoals,” they fell in, on the 8th of February, with “ the fruitful island of Barateva,” of which they say that, “ to confess a truth, since the time that we first set out of our own country of England, we happened upon no place, Ternate only excepted, wherein we found more comforts, and better means of refreshing.” The people they found comely, just in dealing, and courteous to strangers. From thence they set their course for Java ; which island, according to them, “ was governed by five rajahs, living at that time in such unity, as if they had one spirit and one mind.” The people, by their account, dwelt together as harmoniously as their chiefs. “ They have a house in every village for their common assembly ; every day they meet twice, men, women, and children, bringing with them such victuals as they think good ; some fruits, some rice boiled†, some

* Burney, 363. This excellent seaman follows the author of the *World Encompassed* in this detail, wherein I have followed him — safe always with such a guide. The account in Hakluyt (p. 741.) says, that they lightened the ship ; “ and then the wind (as it were in a moment by the special grace of God) changing from the starboard to the larboard of the ship, we hoisted our sails, and the happy gale drove our ship off the rocks into the sea again, to the no little comfort of all our hearts, for which we gave God such praise and thanks as so great a benefit required.”

† They boil their rice in an earthen pot, made in form of a sugar loaf, being full of holes, as our pots which we water our gardens withal ; and it is open at the great end, wherein they put their rice dry, without any moisture. In the mean time they have ready another great earthen pot, set fast in a furnace, boiling, full of water, whereinto they put their pot with rice, by such measure that the grains, swelling, become soft at the first, and by their swelling, stopping the holes of the pot, admit no more water to enter ; but the more they are boiled the harder and more firm substance

hens roasted, some sagu ; having a table made three feet from the ground, whereon they set their meat, that every person sitting at the table may eat, one rejoicing in the company of another." It is a mournful reflection that in proportion as we become acquainted with the real condition and character of distant nations, the more there is to subtract from the first favourable opinion that is formed of them.

Here Drake was informed that not far off there were ships as large as his own, and he was warned to beware of them ; though he must previously have known his danger as he drew near the Portugueze settlements, this warning is said to have made him hasten his departure from Java. From thence he steered for the Cape of Good Hope, which his men thought " a most stately thing, and the fairest cape they had seen in the whole circumference of the earth." They landed on the west side in search of water, and finding no spring must have been distressed if they had not providently collected rain water in good time. They supplied themselves at Sierra Leone, and concluded their prosperous voyage at Plymouth after two years and nearly ten months ; arriving on Monday by their own reckoning, they found that it was Sunday in England. Drake immediately repaired to court, and was graciously received there, though the treasure which he brought home was placed in sequestration, in case it should be found necessary to answer such demands as would be made for it. Her own right of navigating the ocean in all parts Elizabeth firmly asserted to the Spanish ambassador, and as firmly denied any right which the Spaniard laid claim to in the Indies by virtue of the pope's grant. And though she yielded so far as to pay a considerable sum of money to an ostensible procurator of certain merchants who claimed it, enough seems to have been

Sept.
26.

they become, so that in the end they are a firm and good bread ; of the which with oil, butter, sugar, and other spices, they make divers sorts of meats, very pleasant of taste, and nourishing to nature. — *Hakluyt*, 741.

retained to make it a profitable adventure for the captors. Drake was rewarded with such honours as he had well deserved. The queen gave orders that his ship should be drawn up in a little creek near Deptford, and there preserved as a monument of the most memorable voyage that the English had ever yet performed. "Having, as it were, thus consecrated it, she honoured it and him by going on board to partake of a banquet there; and on that occasion * Drake knelt to her, and rose up sir Francis. The good fortune which had attended the Golden Hind on her voyage round the world did not forsake that ship when laid up in this its last harbour. The bridge of planks by which the queen and her retinue went on board broke under the crowd of people who stationed themselves upon it; about 100 persons fell, and yet no one suffered any serious injury.† The ship remained at Deptford till it decayed: it was then broken up; and from one of its planks a chair was made, and presented to the university of Oxford.

It was, probably, about this time that sir Francis assumed the arms of the Drakes of Ash, near Axminster, which, as he was not able to make out his descent from that family, was, "in those days, when the court of honour was in more honour, a matter not so easily digested." Bernard Drake, the representative of that family, was a sea-rover like himself; and instead of feeling

* On this occasion also the Westminster scholars set up the following verses upon the mainmast:—

"PLUS ULTRA, Herculeis inscribas, Drace, columnis,
Et magno, dicas, Hercule major ero."

On Hercules' pillars, Drake, thou may'st *plus ultra* write full well,
And say, I will in greatness that great Hercules excel.

"Drace, pererrati novit quem terminus orbis,
Quemque semel mundi vidit uterque polus,
Si taceant homines, facient te sidera notum,
Sol nescit comitis non memor esse sui."

Sir Drake, whom well the world's end knows, which thou didst compass
round,
And whom both poles of heaven once saw which north and south do
bound,
The stars above will make thee known if men here silent were;
The sun himself cannot forget his fellow-traveller.

† Camden, 253, 254.

that the tree of his pedigree would be rendered more illustrious by having the name of sir Francis Drake pendant from it than by any fruit that it had ever before borne, resented the assumption angrily; high words ensued, and he gave sir Francis a blow within the verge of the court: worse consequences might have followed had this outrage been offered in any other place; and the queen, it is said, not leaving the laws to take cognisance of the offender, terminated the dispute by bestowing upon sir Francis "a new coat of everlasting honour to himself and posterity for ever." "The field," says Gwillim*, "is diamond, a fess wavy between the two pole stars, Arctic and Antarctic, pearl. Such was the worth of this most generous and renowned knight, as that his merits do require that his coat-armour should be expressed in that selected manner of blazoning that is fitting to noble personages, in respect of his noble courage and high attempts achieved." The crest given him was a ship on a globe, under ruff, held by a cable with a hand out of the clouds, and a wivern gules, his wings displayed, and tail nowed (being the Drake arms), hung by the heels in the rigging, — marking thereby the queen's displeasure toward the bearer of that coat. He, however, according to the tradition in his family, told the queen, with no unbecoming spirit, that though she might give his competitor a nobler coat of arms than his, she could not give him an ancients.† Elizabeth's displeasure was but for a time; and sparing as she was in the distribution of honours, it was not long before she rewarded the services of this gentleman, as they well deserved, with knighthood.

Whether this expedition were justifiable or not upon those principles by which all Christian states ought to hold themselves bound, Drake's conduct in it, as a navigator and a commander, is entitled to the highest praise. It has been said of him that he was a willing hearer of every man's opinion, but commonly a follower

* P. 81. ed. 1679.

† Prince.

of his own, and this is the highest praise that can be bestowed upon a man so competent to form an opinion for himself. The next great enterprise in which he was engaged was planned after Elizabeth had openly entered into an alliance with the United States. Philip had then laid an embargo upon all English ships, goods, and subjects in his dominions; and the queen authorised such as sustained loss by this measure to indemnify themselves by taking and arresting all ships and merchandise belonging to the subjects of Spain wherever they could find them.* Not waiting for the war at her own doors, she fitted out an expedition, consisting of twenty-five sail of ships and pinnaces. Drake was appointed admiral, Martin Frobisher vice-admiral, Christopher Carleill, "a man of long experience in the wars as well by sea as land," general of the land forces. The
1585. soldiers and seamen amounted to 2300. They sailed from Plymouth on the 14th of September, 1585, for the coast of Spain, and after a few days, "for lack of favourable wind," put in within the isles of Bayona. No sooner had part of the fleet anchored than Drake ordered the pinnaces and boats to be manned, got into his galley, and rowed toward the town of Bayona, then a considerable place, his intent being, says the historian of the voyage, "with the favour of the Almighty, to surprise it." They were presently met by a messenger from the governor: the communication ended in Drake's despatching captain Sampson, one of the two corporals of the field, to demand of the governor, first, if there were war between Spain and England; and, secondly, why the English merchants and their goods were embargoed?" The governor replied, that he knew of no war between the two nations, and it lay not in him to make any: the embargo had been the king's pleasure, but not with intent to injure any man; and, in fact, it had been taken off by the king's counter order a week ago, to certify which he sent the English merchants then

* Monson in Churchill, iii. 155.

resident there. But it was with no pacific intention that this armament had been set forth. The troops landed, and quartering themselves as well as they could, and setting good guard upon every approach, thought to rest themselves there for the night. Wine, fruit, and other refreshments were sent from the town to their unbidden and unwelcome visitants, as if they had been friends. But about midnight the weather began to overcast: it was deemed wiser to repair aboard than make any longer tarriance, and before they could recover the fleet a storm arose; many of the ships drove from their anchorage, some were forced out to sea in great peril, and one was driven to England. "The extremity of the storm lasted three days." *

When the fleet had re-assembled, Carleill was sent with part of it "to see what he could do above Vigo." He intercepted many boats and caravels, in which the inhabitants were removing their property up into the country, except one boat, in which were the plate and ornaments of the high church. The booty was of little value to the captors, yet the loss of the people was computed at more than 30,000 ducats, the ducat being *5s. 6d.* The next day Drake joined Carleill in a station above the town, chosen "as well for the more quiet riding of his ship as also for the good commodity of watering, which the place afforded full well." Meantime the governor of Galicia, having collected some 2000 foot and 300 horse, hastened to this point, and demanded a parley with the English commander. Drake consented, "so it might be in boats upon the water." Hostages were given on both sides; and an agreement was concluded that the English "should furnish themselves with fresh water, to be taken quietly by their own people, and with all other such necessaries as the place would afford, paying for the same." This done, the fleet sailed for the Canaries. †

* Cates, in Hakluyt, iii. 535.

† Ibid. 536.

The parties had regarded each other here with respect; and humiliating as it was for the governor of such a province to have consented to such an agreement, his presence prevented greater evil, the disposition of the English being to burn and destroy, or to extort a ransom as the price of their forbearance. Great and not unreasonable alarm was excited by their appearance. Their force was estimated at 5000 troops, with 30 ships, besides many pinnaces and oared shallops: it was feared that they were designed for the South Sea; and the mischief which they might effect upon the way was forecast by the marquis of Santa Cruz. In eighteen days from Bayona, at this season, Drake might sack Madeira, the Canaries, and the Cape de Verds; forty days more might carry him to Rio Janeiro: he might take possession of the mouth of that fine harbour, which commands the entrance, fortify it, and maintain it by leaving a garrison of 500 men there: he might then pass the straight, enter the South Sea, and attack Lima. The population of that city consisted of 2000 families, but they were neither a warlike people, nor had they been trained to arms; and as the place was open, and had no artillery for its defence, the English might take and sack it, and proceed to make themselves masters of the land; in furtherance of which views it was very probable that they would get possession of Panama. If this were not Drake's design, it might be to sack St. Domingo, Puerto Rico, and the coast of Tierra-Firma to Carthagena and Nombre de Dios, and by way of Venta de Cruz attack Panama from that side. The Havannah, also, was in great danger, the fortress being but small and weak. The marquis advised, therefore, that despatches should be sent off with all possible diligence to the viceroys and governors in the Indies; that a fleet should be ordered out to sail in pursuit of the English, and give them battle; that 1000 Catalonian and Genoese sailors should be distributed in this fleet, and 6000 soldiers levied for it, a greater number being

raised, to the end that those who were chosen might be able men.*

Drake, meantime, was on his way to the Canaries, and made first for the isle of Palma, "with intention," says Cates, "to have taken our pleasure of that place, for the full digesting of many things into order, and the better furnishing our store with such several good things, as it affordeth very abundantly." But he complains "we were forced by the vile sea-gate, which at that present fell out, and by the naughtiness of the landing-place, being but one, and that under the favour of many platforms, well furnished with great ordnance, to depart with the receipt of many of their cannon shot; but the only or chief mischief was the dangerous sea surge, which at shore all along plainly threatened the overthrow of any boats as should have attempted landing." They then tried the island of Hierro, and landed about 1000 men: the inhabitants came to them; and, by means of a young Englishman who resided there, represented "their state to be so poor, that they were all ready to starve." This poverty was their defence; and the expedition, thus a second time disappointed, proceeded for the Cape de Verds.†

Arrived at the principal of those islands, they anchored between the towns of Playa and Santiago. Carleill was landed there with 1000 men, marched toward the latter place, being the capital, during the night, halted at some two miles' distance till break of day, and then advancing "hard to the walls" saw no enemy to resist him, the inhabitants having, at sight of the fleet, fled into the interior. Two companies of thirty men each were then sent to enter the town, the whole of which, being in a valley, was completely seen from the high ground on which the troops had arrived; the great ensign was also sent, "which had nothing on it but the plain English cross, to be placed toward the sea, that our fleet might see St. George's cross flourish on the enemy's

Nov.
16.

* Hakluyt, 530—534.

† Ibid. 536.

fortress. Order was given that all the ordnance throughout the town, and upon all the platforms, which were above fifty pieces, all ready charged, should be shot off in honour of the queen's majesty's coronation day, being the 17th of November, after the yearly custom of England, which was so answered again by all the ships in the fleet, being now come near, as it was strange to hear such a thundering noise last so long together." The town was in form like a triangle, having cliffs, "as it were, hanging over it," on the east and west; both heights were fortified, though no attempt had been made to defend the works. On the south was the sea; and at the north end the valley, in which the town is built, becomes so narrow, that it was estimated not to be above ten or twelve score over. A stream came down the valley, and formed a pond near the sea-side, at which the ships were watered with great ease. Above the town the valley expanded, and was wholly converted into gardens and orchards. Carleill remained on the heights till the deserted town was quartered out for the lodging of the whole army; that done, he took possession, and set such sufficient guard in every part that there was no cause for any present fear.*

Here the English continued a fortnight, finding no treasure nor any booty of greater value than provisions, and "trash for the Indian trade." None of the inhabitants came near them, till one day a Portugueze approached with a flag of truce; and being received by captains Sampson and Goring, first asked what countrymen they were, and then put the pithy question, whether there was war between England and Spain? Their answer was, that they knew not; but that if he would go to the general he could best resolve him of that particular. This he refused, as having no such commission from the governor. They then told him that if the governor desired to take a course for the good of the place and the people, "his best way was to present

* Hakluyt, 537.

himself unto our noble and merciful general, sir Francis Drake, whereby he might be assured to find favour both for himself and the inhabitants ; otherwise, within three days, we should march over the land, and consume with fire all inhabited places, and put to the sword all such living souls as we should chance upon." Some cause of complaint the English had against the people of this island, for having broken their promise to " old master William Hawkins of Plymouth," a few years before, and murdered many of his men ; and to this they imputed the fear which prevented the authorities from opening any negotiation, and the inhabitants from holding any communication with them. A week after their arrival, Drake marched with 600 men to a village called St. Domingo, twelve miles inland, where he had heard that the governor, the bishop, and all the chief inhabitants, had retired : it was deserted before they arrived ; but when, after waiting awhile, not only to rest themselves, but to see whether any would come to confer with them, they marched back, the islanders showed themselves with some force both of horse and foot, yet not in such strength as to venture or abide an attack ; " so in passing some time at gaze with them, it waxed late before the men reached Santiago." The invaders had expected that either the governor or the bishop, whose authority they believed to be great, or the people either of town or country, would entreat them to leave some part of their needful provision, " or at least to spare the city at their departure ;" that is, they expected that a ransom would be offered, and they took " great discontentment and scorn" at a conduct which disappointed their hopes. The wisest course that the islanders could take with such enemies was thus to disappoint them, it being better to suffer any immediate havoc that might be made than, by purchasing a respite, to tempt a repetition of such visits. But they provoked the invaders by murdering a boy, whom they caught straggling, and by mutilating his body " in a most brutish and beastly manner." In revenge for this the invaders burnt every

house in the town, and every house which they saw in their incursions, except the hospital: that they left uninjured; and there and in other places affixed a paper, declaring the reason why they had exercised this vengeance. Having thus inflicted upon the islanders all the evil they could, they re-embarked leisurely, but cautiously, and set sail, not having suffered the slightest loss.*

Unpunished, however, they did not depart; for though, till then, not a man had been lost by sickness, there now began among them such mortality, that in the course of a few days between 200 and 300 died. "The sickness," says Cates, "showed not his infection till we were departed thence, and then seized our people with extreme hot burning and continual agues, whereof very few escaped with life, and those for the most part not without great alteration and decay of their wits and strength for a long time after. Upon some of the dead marks appeared which were taken for plague spots. The first land which they made after a passage of eighteen days was Dominica: not thinking it safe to make any tarriance there, because of the character of the Caribs, though they exchanged beads and such trifles which they had brought from Santiago for "great store of tobacco and cassavi bread," they proceeded to St. Christopher, which at that time was uninhabited, and there spent some days of Christmas, to refresh the sick, and to cleanse and air the ships. There a counsel was held; and it was determined that they should make for the great island of Hispaniola, "as well for that they knew themselves then to be in their best strength, as also the rather allured thereunto by the glorious fame of the city of St. Domingo, being the ancientest and chief inhabited place in all the tract of country thereabouts."

The city of St. Domingo is the oldest, and was once the most considerable Spanish city in the New World. Bartolomè Columbus founded it so early as the year

* Hakluyt, 537, 538.

1496, and called it Nueva Isabella, removing to it the inhabitants of the earlier settlement named after the queen of Castille. He placed it on the eastern side of the river Ozama, where a copious fountain supplied it with good water, that of the river being salt or brackish for some leagues up. The first habitations were hastily constructed with wood and reeds, and were nearly destroyed in 1502 by a hurricane. Shortly afterwards Ovando removed it to the opposite side of the Ozama. In the first years of the conquest a city was moved almost as easily as a camp; and such removals were sometimes made with no worthier motive than the desire of a new governor to gain reputation at the expense of his predecessors. By this motive Ovando is thought to have been influenced * when he abandoned a well-chosen and commodious site for one which was exposed to morning fogs, and where fresh water was wanting. That want he meant to supply by bringing an aqueduct from the river Haina; and the foundations of the city were laid by him in a manner and upon a scale worthy of the Spaniards in their best days. In the next generation it was said, that, space for space, no city in the mother-country was better built, Barcelona alone excepted; that the emperor Charles V. was often lodged in Spain in worse houses than were to be found in this capital; that the palace of the viceroy, Diego Columbus, far exceeded that of any subject in Spain; and that the streets having been built, according to a regular plan, upon convenient ground, and laid out by cord and compass, excelled those of any other place that its earliest historian Oviedo had ever seen. † The first cross which Columbus — in evil hour for the Indians — planted

* Oviedo, f. 31. (lib. 3. c. 10.) Yet, in an earlier part of his most valuable work (lib. 2. c. 13. f. 19.), Oviedo says, that the foundations were not originally laid on the present site, because Bartolomè Columbus was unwilling to disturb the cacica Catalina, and the Indians who were settled on that side of the river. "The city was called St. Domingo," he says, "not only because the adelantado came to found it on a Sunday (*Domingo*), which Sunday also was St. Domingo's day, but, moreover, because his father's name was Domenico *y en su memoria el fio llamo Sancto Domingo a este ciudad.*"

† Historia, Natural et General, f. 31. Sommario (in Ramasio, iii. 46.).

on the island was preserved in the cathedral, enclosed in a silver case, richly inlaid, and secured in a tabernacle with three locks, the keys of which were kept by three of the dignitaries of the church. To that cathedral, also, the remains of Columbus, pursuant to his will, were translated from Seville, and there they rested on the right of the high altar till, upon the scandalous cession to France of the Spanish part of Hispaniola, the brazen coffin wherein they were deposited was removed to the Havannah by the direction of his representative the duque de Veragua, who, on that occasion, manifested a feeling in which the miserable Charles IV. and his profligate ministers were wanting.*

Proceeding with the determination of attacking this city, and not knowing how greatly it was fallen from its high estate, Drake came up with a small frigate, on the way, bound for the same port; and having "duly examined the crew, learnt from them that it was a barred harbour, commanded by a strong castle; but that, about two miles to the westward of it, there was a convenient landing place," to which one of the men offered to pilot him. The troops, accordingly, embarked in pinnaces and boats, — Drake going in his namesake, the bark Francis, as admiral: thus they lay all night at sea, bearing small sail; and on the morrow, being new year's day, safely† disembarked about daybreak. Having seen them landed, Drake returned to the fleet, "bequeathing them to God and the good conduct of master Carleill." About noon they approached the city, from whence some 150 brave horse began to present themselves. But the invaders played upon them with small shot, and supported that fire "with good proportion of pikes in all parts;" and the Spaniards, having viewed the very superior force which threatened them all round, found it necessary to let them proceed toward the two sea-ward gates: both gates were

* Walton's Spanish Colonies, i. 144.

† "At that time," says Cates, "nor yet is known to us any landing place where the sea surge doth not threaten to overset a pinnace or boat."—P. 539.

manned, and ordnance planted there, and some troops of small shot in ambuscade by the wayside. Carleill divided his force, consisting of some 1200 men, into two bodies, giving captain Powell the command of one: they were to enter both gates at the same time; and he swore to Powell, "that, with God's good favour, he would not rest till they met in the market place."*

The artillery was discharged with some effect, though not much: the first man that fell was very near Carleill, who "began forthwith to advance both his voice of encouragement and pace of marching," hastening all he could to prevent the Spaniards from reloading their guns; and, notwithstanding the ambuscade, his men "marched, or rather ran, so roundly into them, that pell-mell they entered the gates, and gave them more care every man to save himself by flight than reason to stand any longer to their broken defence." Forthwith the victorious adventurers made their way to the Plaza Mayor, or market place; "a place of very fair, spacious, square ground:" there Powell, with the other detachment, met them. They strengthened it and its avenues with barricadoes, and secured themselves there as the most convenient position, thinking the city "far too spacious for so small and weary a troop to undertake to guard. The castle was abandoned that night; some of the garrison being made prisoners, and others fleeing, by the help of boats, to the other side of the haven, and so into the country. Next day, the English quartered a little more at large, but not into the half part of the town; and so, making substantial trenches, and planting all the ordnance that each part was correspondent to other," they held the town a month.†

It was a great marvel and no less disappointment both to the adventurers and the sleeping partners of the concern, that such a famous and goodly built city, so well inhabited of gallant people, should afford no greater riches than was found there; for at that time it was

* Hakluyt, 539.

† Ibid. 540.

not understood, in England, that, as the conquests on the main became of more importance, Hispaniola had declined; and that its native population had been consumed, and, consequently, that its mines had ceased to be productive. The colonists had opened a surer source of prosperity in the cultivation of their fertile soil; but gold and silver money had disappeared (as at this time in Brazil), the only currency which was found was in copper, and that in great quantity. "We found here," says Cates, "great store of strong wine, sweet oil, vinegar, olives, and other such like provisions, excellent wheat meal, packed up in wine pipes and other casks, and other commodities, as woollen and linen cloth, and some silks; all which were brought out of Spain, and served us for great relief. (Good store of brave apparel our soldiers also found for their relief.) There was but little plate, or vessel of silver, in comparison of the great pride in other things of this town; because, in these hot countries, they use much of those earthen dishes, finely painted or varnished, which they call porcellana, which is had out of the East India; and for their drinking they use glasses altogether, whereof they make excellent, good and fair, in the same place. But yet some plate we found, and many other good things, as their household garniture, very gallant and rich, which had cost them dear, although unto us they were of small importance."*

The Spaniards here were more ready to treat † for the ransom of their city than the Portuguese had been in the Cape de Verds. There was, in the gallery of the governor's palace, "painted, in a very large scutcheon, the arms of the king of Spain; and in the lower part of the scutcheon a terrestrial globe, whereon a horse was represented as in the act of leaping from it, with a

* Hakluyt, 541.

† Faria y Sousa ascribes this to the pusillanimity of Christoval de Ovalle, president of the audience there. He had been advised of the danger (according to this historian) in time to have provided for defence; but disbelieving or disregarding the information he was half dead with fear when he saw the English in the island, and actually died when told that they were making search for him.—*Europa Portuguesa*, t.iii. p.1. c.2. § 27

scroll proceeding from his mouth, and displaying these words, *Non sufficit orbis*, — The world sufficeth not." The invaders, who looked upon this "as a very notable mark and token of the unsatiable ambition of the Spanish king and nation," could not refrain from pointing it out to the Spaniards who came to negotiate with them, nor from sarcastically enquiring what was intended by such a device; at which they "would shake their heads, and turn aside their countenance in some smiling sort, without answering any thing, as greatly ashamed thereof. For by some of our company," says Cates, "it was told them, that if the queen of England would resolutely prosecute the war against the king of Spain, he should be forced to lay aside that proud and unreasonable reaching vein of his, for he should find more than enough to do to keep that which he had already, as by the present example of their lost town they might, for a beginning, perceive well enough."*

This was in no commendable spirit of bravery; and the enmity with which the Spaniards and English then regarded each other needed nothing to exasperate it. Drake had sent out a negro boy, with a white flag: there could be no mistake concerning it, for the same flag was used, in like manner, by the Spaniards themselves; but some of their officers fell in with the bearer and ran him through the body with a horseman's spear. The poor boy returned to the general, wounded as he was, told his story, and died in his presence. Upon this Drake, "being greatly passioned," ordered the provost marshal to take two friars, who were among his prisoners, under a guard, to the place where the boy had been hurt, and there hang them both. Another Spaniard he set at liberty to declare to the authorities wherefore this execution was done; and to tell them, farther, that until the party, who had thus murdered his messenger, were delivered into his hands for condign punishment, there should no day pass wherein there

* Hakluyt, 540.

should not two prisoners be hanged, until all who were in his hands were consumed. This terrible message, and the dreadful proof which had been given of Drake's determination to carry his words into effect, made them send the offender, on the following day, to be delivered into his hands; "but it was thought a more honourable revenge to make them there, in his sight, perform the execution themselves;" and this was done.*

The treaty concerning the ransom proceeded slowly, and, "upon disagreements," the invaders still spent the early mornings in firing the houses without their intrenchment; and they found it "no small travail to ruin them; being very magnificently built of stone, with high lofts." For many successive days, 200 sailors, from daybreak till nine o'clock, when the heat began, did nothing but labour to fire these houses; the same number of troops being drawn out to protect them during this work of devastation. "Yet," says Cates, "did we not, and could not, consume so much as one third part of the town; and so in the end, — what wearied with firing, and what hastened by some other respects, — we were contented to accept of 25,000 ducats, of 5*s.* 6*d.* each, for the ransom of the rest."†

The expedition then stood over to the main, and kept along the coast till they came in sight of Carthagena. That city, which was then the principal fortress in all that country, and contained about 450 families, was built upon a sandy peninsula, formed by the sea on one side, and on the other by a great lake, which communicates with the harbour. The mouth of the harbour lay some three miles westward of the town, and the fleet entered, about three in the afternoon, without any resistance, or meeting with any impediment. In the evening, Carleill landed, toward the harbour mouth; the plan being that the land forces should advance about midnight, "as easily as foot might fall," along the sea-wash of the shore, while the fleet drew the attention of the

* Hakluyt, 540.

† Ibid.

Spaniards by a false attack upon a little fort at the entrance of the inner haven. When the troops were within two miles of the town, some hundred horsemen fell in with them, but the ground being bushy, even to the water-side, was unfavourable for these enemies, and upon the first volley they turned about, and hastened back to give the alarm. At the same time the English heard a firing in the harbour, where, if any thing more than a feint was intended, nothing was done: the place was strong, and a chain drawn across the narrow entrance; but little or no harm was received. The troops, meantime, advanced till they came to the neck of the peninsula, about half a mile from the town. The strait was about fifty paces over; "fortified clean across with a stone wall, well and orderly built, with flanking in every part, and a ditch." There was only so much space left as might serve for ordinary passage; but this opening was now fortified with a good barricade of barrels "filled with earth, full and thick, as they might stand on end one by another; some part of them standing even in the main sea. This place of strength was furnished with six great pieces, demi-culverins and rakers, which shot directly in front upon the assailants; and without the wall, on the inner side of the strait, they had brought two great galleys, with their prows to the shore, and eleven pieces of ordnance, thus flanking the approach. On board these the English estimated that there were from 300 to 400 harquebussiers, and, to defend the barricado, 300 shot and pikes."*

The Spaniards being thus ready to receive their sturdy visitors, spared not their shot; but they expended most of it in vain; for they were too eager to wait till they could see the enemy; and while they fired in the darkness, Carleill advanced along the lowest ground, close to the water's edge, where the tide, too, had somewhat fallen. He had ordered his men not to fire till they should come to the wall-side; so, "with pikes roundly together,"

* Hakluyt, 541.

they approached, and finding the barricado of barrels, strongly as it was manned, the best place where to make their assault, they assailed it. "Down went the butts of earth, and pell-mell came our swords and pikes together, after our shot had given their first volley, even at the enemies' nose." The English pikes were somewhat longer than theirs, and the English were also better armed, for very few of the Spaniards wore any defensive armour: this want, and the disadvantage of their pikes, was felt when it came thus to the push. Their standard-bearer, fighting manfully to the last, fell by Carleill's hands: they gave way; and the assailants, giving them no time to breathe, followed them into the town. At every street's end they had raised barricadoes of earth-work, with trenches in front, which were better made than defended; the little resistance which they attempted there being soon overcome, with trifling loss. They had stationed many Indian archers "in corners of advantage, with their arrows most villainously empoisoned; so that if they did but break the skin, the party so touched, unless it were by great marvell, died." Some were likewise "mischieved to death by small sticks, sharply pointed, of a foot and a half long, fixed in the ground, with the points poisoned, right in the way from the place where they landed toward the town; but by keeping the shore, the invaders escaped the greater part of these." The chief commander of the Spaniards was wounded and taken by captain Goring; and when the English had established themselves in the market-place no farther opposition was attempted, the Spaniards retiring into the interior, whither they had previously removed their families and their treasure. They had been warned of their danger twenty days before, and had employed the time diligently in preparing both for defence and for the consequences of defeat.*

Having taken the city, the adventurers pursued the

* Hakluyt, 542—545.

same course as at St. Domingo ; and though, " upon discontentments, and for want of agreeing in the first negotiations for a ransom, they touched the town in its out-parts, and consumed much with fire," yet some of the humanities of war were observed here. " There passed divers courtesies," says Cates, " between us and the Spaniards, as feasting and using them with all kindness and favour ;" so that the governor and the bishop, and divers other gentlemen of the better sort, came to visit the general. One day the centinel on the church tower descried two small barks standing in for the harbour ; upon which captains Moon and Varney embarked, with a party of sailors, in two pinnaces, thinking to take them before they came so near the shore as to be apprised, by signals, that the town was in possession of an enemy. The alarm, however, was given in time ; the barks ran ashore ; the men hid themselves among the bushes, where they were presently joined by those who had made signals to them, and from thence fired upon the English, who, without any regard of danger, had boarded the vessels, and were " standing all open in them." Varney was killed by this discharge, and some five or six others mortally wounded, captain Moon among them, who was the same person that struck the first blow at a Spaniard in the South Sea.*

This was the only loss which the English sustained from the enemy while they occupied Carthagená ; but the disease which they had brought with them from the Cape de Verds still continued ; and, though its ravages were not so great as at the first, it reduced their numbers, and, in a still greater degree, their strength ; few or none of those who escaped with life remaining fit for service.† In consequence of this mortality, Drake

* Hakluyt, 544.

† " Yea, many of them were much decayed in their memory ; insomuch that it was common, when one was heard to speak foolishly, to say he had been sick of the calenture. The original cause thereof is imputed to the evening, or first night air, which they term *la serena*, wherein they say, and hold very firm opinion, that whoso is then abroad in the open air shall certainly be infected to the death, not being of the Indian or natural race of that country. Our men were thus subjected to the infectious air."—*Ibid.* 543.

consulted his land captains what course they thought most expedient now to be undertaken. The first question proposed to them was touching the keeping of the town against the present force of the enemy, or that which might come out from Spain. Upon this their opinion was, that, though they had not above 700 men who could answer present service, the residue (some 150) being altogether unable to stand them in any stead; yet, being victualled and munitioned, they might well keep the town. But it was for the sea captains, they said, to give their resolution how they would undertake the safety and service of the ships upon the arrival of any Spanish fleet.

The second point was, "whether it were meet to go presently homeward, or make farther trial of their fortune, thereby to seek after that bountiful mass of treasure, for recompense of their travails, which was generally expected at their coming forth from England." To this they replied, "that it was well known how they, both officers and soldiers, had entered into this action as voluntary men, without any imprest or gage from her majesty, or any body else; and that, hitherto, they had discharged the parts of honest men; for, by the great blessing and favour of their good God, they had taken three notable towns, wherein all men thought very great treasures would have been found: for Santiago was the chief city of all the islands and traffic thereabouts; St. Domingo was the chief city of Hispaniola, and the head government not only of that island, but of Cuba, and all the islands about it, and all such inhabitations of the firm land as were next unto it, — a place, too, magnificently built, and which entertained great trade of merchandise: lastly, this city of Carthage, which could not be denied to be one of the chief places of most especial importance to the Spaniards of all on this side the West India. All these cities, with the goods and prisoners taken in them, and the ransoms of them all put together, were found far short to satisfy the expectations which, by the generality of

the enterprisers, was first conceived. They considered the slenderness of the strength to which they were reduced; as well in respect of the small number of able bodies, as not a little in regard of the slack disposition of the greater part of those which remained, very many of the better minds and men being either consumed by death or weakened by sickness and hurts. And, lastly, seeing that no enterprise was laid down convenient to be undertaken with their reduced strength, and withall of such certain likelihood as might, with God's good success, which it might please him to bestow, promise to yield them any sufficient contentment, they concluded that it was better to hold sure the honour already gotten, and return with it to their gracious sovereign and country, from whence," said they, "if it shall please her majesty to set us forth again, with her orderly means and entertainment, we are most ready and willing to go through any thing that the uttermost of our strength and endeavour shall be able to reach unto: but, therewithall, we do advise and protest, that it is far from our thoughts either to refuse, or so much as seem to be weary of any thing which for the present shall be farther required or directed to be done by us from our general." *

Being thus convinced that, in all prudence, they must give over the intended enterprise against Nombre de Dios, and so overland to Panama, where they "should have stricken the stroke for the treasure and full recompense of their tedious travails," they took into consideration the third and last point, which was touching the ransom of the city. Their demand had been 100,000*l.*: an offer had been made of 27,000*l.* or 28,000*l.*, and they thought it better to accept this than to break off by standing upon the first demand, "which," said they, "seems a matter impossible for the present to be performed by them; and, to say truth, we may now, with much honour and reputation, better be satisfied with that sum offered

* Hakluyt, 543, 544.

by them at first (if they will now be contented to give it) than we might at that time with a great deal more, inasmuch as we have taken our full pleasure, both in the uttermost sacking and spoiling of all their household goods and merchandise, as also, in that we have consumed and ruined a great part of their town with fire." Farther, they considered that there were in that voyage a great many poor men who had ventured their lives, and divers of them spent their apparel and such other little provision as their small means enabled them to prepare; "which being done upon such good and allowable intention as this action carried with it against the Spaniard, our greatest and most dangerous enemy, so (said they) we cannot but have an inward regard to help toward the satisfaction of this their expectation, and by procuring them some little benefit to encourage them, and to nourish this ready and willing disposition both in them and in others by their example, against any other time of like occasion. But because it may be supposed that herein we forget not the private benefit of ourselves, and are thereby the rather moved to incline ourselves to this composition, we declare hereby, that what part or portion soever it be of this ransom for Carthagena, which should come unto us, we do freely give and bestow the same wholly upon the poor men who have remained with us in the voyage, meaning as well the sailor as the soldier, and wishing with all our hearts it were such, or so much, as might seem a sufficient reward for their painful endeavour."*

This paper was signed by Carleill as lieutenant-general, and by all the land captains; and conformably to their opinion, a ransom of 110,000 ducats was accepted. Carthagena, though not half the size of St. Domingo, yielded so much larger a sum, because its harbour and its position rendered it a most important place, and it was inhabited by rich merchants; whereas St. Domingo was chiefly inhabited by lawyers and

* Hakluyt, 544.

“ brave gentlemen,” being the seat of that court before which all appeals were brought from the islands and from the neighbouring main. The officers had dealt generously towards their own people in the affair of this ransom ; but in their subsequent conduct toward the Spaniards they cannot be held free from reproach : for after they had received the money, and evacuated the town, they stationed some of their soldiers in the convent of St. Francisco, which was a little way off on the harbour side, and told the Spaniards that neither that building nor a block-house at the mouth of the inner harbour were included in the composition : thus they extorted for the convent another thousand crowns, and demanded as much more for the block-house ; the townsmen declared that they were not able to pay them, “ having stretched themselves to the utmost of their power ; and Drake, therefore, undermined the fort, and blew it up.”*

They sailed from Carthagena on the last of March, and after two or three days put back ; a great ship which they had taken at St. Domingo, and laden with ordnance, hides, and other spoil, having sprung so great a leak, that she was hardly kept from foundering. Several days were spent in distributing the cargo of this vessel among the other ships : then they departed once more ; and on the 27th of April reached Cape St. Antonio, the westernmost part of Cuba. Failing to find fresh water there, they made for Matanzas, which is to the east of the Havannah. But in the course of a fortnight, through lack of favourable weather, they were brought again to Cape St. Antonio. By this time their want of water was such, that they made more careful search, and found in sufficient quantity what they supposed to be rain water newly fallen and collected in pits made in marshy ground, some 300 paces from the shore. “ Here,” says Cates, “ I do wrong if I should forget the good example of the general, who, to encourage others,

* Hakluyt, 545.

and to hasten the getting water aboard, took no less pains himself than the meanest. Throughout the expedition, indeed, he had every where shown so vigilant a care and foresight in the good ordering of his fleet, accompanied with such wonderful travail of body, that, doubtless, had he been the meanest person, as he was the chiefest, he had deserved the first place of honour. And no less happy do we account him for being associated with master Carleill his lieutenant-general, by whose experience, prudent counsel, and gallant performance, he achieved so many and happy enterprises, and by whom also he was very greatly assisted in setting down the needful orders, laws, and course of justice, and the due administration of the same upon all occasions." No difference of any kind, indeed, seems to have occurred between Drake and any of his officers during this expedition. From thence they made for the coast of Florida, not touching any where, but keeping the shore in sight, till on the 28th of May they descried a scaffold raised upon four high masts, for a lookout to the seaward. Upon this Drake manned the pinnaces and landed, "to see what place the enemy held there, no one in the armament having any knowledge of it."*

Having marched about a mile up the river St. Augustine, they saw the fort of San Juan de Pinos on the opposite side, newly erected by the Spaniards, and not yet completed. Carleill would fain have crossed with four companies, and intrenched himself so near the fort as to play upon it with his muskets, till a battery could be planted; but, because the sailors were not at hand to make trenches at this time, the intention was abandoned. Not to be inactive, however, he crossed during the night with a few chosen men in a small skiff, to espy what guard the enemy kept, and to explore the ground. Though he did this as covertly as might be, the Spaniards took the alarm; and supposing that the

* Hakluyt, 546.

whole force was approaching to the assault fired off some of their pieces, and then with all speed abandoned the work, and made the best of their way to the city (so called) of St. Augustine, where there was a garrison of 150 men. Carleill returned, knowing nothing of their flight. He was presently followed by a French fifer, who, having been prisoner in the fort, gladly seized the opportunity to escape, and came over the river in a small boat, playing "the tune of the prince of Orange's song." When the guard called out to him, he told them who he was and what had happened, and offered either to remain in the hands of the English, or return to the fort with those who chose to believe him and go thither. There was no reason to doubt his tale: both Drake and Carleill crossed forthwith with as many boats as were at hand, leaving orders for the rest to follow. A few Spaniards "bolder than the rest," had remained after their companions, and fired two guns at them; but on shore the English went, and entered the place without finding any man there. When the day appeared, they saw that it was built entirely of timber, "the walls being none other than whole masts or bodies of trees set upright, and close together in manner of a pale." The ditch had not yet been made, nor was the work in other respects finished; "so as to say the truth, the Spaniards had no reason to keep it, being subject both to fire and easy assault. There were fourteen great pieces of brass ordnance planted on a platform, which was constructed of large pine trees, laid across, one on another, and some little earth between. The garrison, who were 150 in number, had retired in such haste, that they left behind them the treasure chest containing about 2000*l*."*

Drake, no doubt, felt some satisfaction when he learnt from the Frenchman that the governor of Florida, at this time, was D. Pedro Menendez, marquez de Aviles, nephew of that Menendez whom he erroneously sup-

* Hakluyt. Gabriel de Cardenas, *Ensaio Chronologico a la Historia de Florida*, 161, 162.

posed to have been the general of the fleet by which Hawkins had been so treacherously attacked at St. Juan de Ulloa, and from which he had at that time himself so narrowly escaped. An opportunity for taking vengeance upon one nearly related to the imagined offender seemed now to be afforded him, and he would, without delay, have marched to attack the adelantado in his capital, the city of St. Augustine, if the march had been practicable; but, by reason of rivers and broken ground between the two places, it was necessary again to embark in the pinnaces and ascend the great river. When they landed, as it appears not far from the city, some of the Spaniards showed themselves, fired a few shot, and presently withdrew. They were pursued, and the sergeant-major, Anthony Powell, leaping upon one of their horses which they had left, advanced rashly beyond his company in pursuit, over ground which was overgrown with a species of high grass: seeing this, a Spaniard laid wait for him, and shot him through the head; and before any could come to his rescue his body had been pierced with many wounds, as if in insult and hatred. He was much lamented, "being in very deed an honest, wise gentleman, and a soldier of good experience, and of as great courage as any man might be." This was the only loss that the English experienced in their descent. The adelantado had prudently withdrawn in time to collect the whole of his forces at St. Matheo, and the city was left without a single inhabitant. It is described as being then a prosperous settlement, with its council-house, church, and other edifices and gardens all round about, all which were burnt and laid waste by the invaders in vengeance.*

About twelve leagues to the north, the Spaniards had another settlement called St. Helena, with a garrison of equal force, maintained "for no other purpose than to keep all other nations from inhabiting any part of all

* Hakluyt, 547. Cardenas, 162.

that coast,"—a purpose deemed as important by them as it was judged to be arrogant and unreasonable by the English. It was resolved, "in full assembly of captains," to attack this place also, and from thence proceed in search of Raleigh's recently planted colony in Virginia. But when they came opposite St. Helena, the shoals were found too dangerous for them to attempt an entrance without a pilot, and under unfavourable circumstances of wind and weather. Abandoning, therefore, this design, they kept coasting on till, on the 9th of June, "upon sight of one special great fire," Drake sent his skiff to shore, and found, as he had hoped, some of his countrymen there, by whose direction he reached the place which they made their port, and wrote from thence to their governor, master Ralph Lane, who was then in his fort at Roanoak. On the morrow, Lane came with some of his company, and Drake, understanding the state of their affairs, liberally proposed, with the consent of his captains, to leave them a ship, a pinnace, boats, men, and a month's provision, for prosecuting their discovery of the country and coasts, and as much more provision as might suffice for their voyage home, if, at the month's end, they thought good to return; or, if they were satisfied that they had already sufficiently explored the land, he offered them all a passage, being 103 persons. They thankfully accepted the first of these proposals, and a ship was delivered to them; but, before the provisions could be put on board, a storm came, to the great danger of the whole fleet, while some of the ships being of too great draught to enter the harbour, were at anchor in a wild road, about two miles from shore. Many cables parted, many anchors were lost; and some vessels, which had lost all, were driven out to sea, and never again joined company till they met in England: that which should have been left with the colony was one. Drake, notwithstanding the loss which had been thus sustained, offered them another ship, but one which, being considerably larger, was not so well suited

to their purposes. For this reason, and because no small part of his stores, and some of the persons on whose services most reliance had been placed, were in the ship of which he had been thus deprived, Lane, and those with whom he advised, thought the only course that remained for them was to accept the proffered passage, as a providential deliverance, "by the very hand of God, as it seemed, stretched out to take them thence." They were taken on board; and, after a passage of thirty days, the fleet in good safety arrived at Portsmouth.*

The booty obtained in this expedition was valued at 60,000*l.*, "whereof the companies which travelled in the voyage were to have 20,000*l.*, the adventurers the other forty; and of the 20,000*l.* it was computed that some six pounds would come to a single share:" 240 pieces of artillery, the far greater number brass, were part of the spoil. The loss of men in the voyage amounted to about 750,—three parts of them by sickness. It is said that tobacco was first† brought into England by the men who returned from Virginia with Drake at this time. The expedition was more creditable to the resolution with which it was conducted than to the councils wherein it was concerted. Little hurt was done to the king of Spain, who was rather awakened than weakened by it, but great and cruel injury was inflicted upon individuals: they were thereby made to hate the English, not as heretics only, but as a people who were the vikingar of the age; and the Spanish government received a lesson which taught it the necessity of fortifying its distant ports, and increasing its maritime strength.‡ Drake, however, suffered no loss

* Hakluyt, 548. 264.

† Camden, 324. "Certainly," he says, "from that time forward it began to grow into great request, and to be sold at a high rate; whilst, in a short time, many men every where, some for wantonness, some for health's sake, with insatiable desire and greediness, sucked in the stinking smoke thereof through an earthen pipe, which presently they blew out again at their nostrils; insomuch as tobacco shops are now as ordinary in most towns as tap-houses and taverns."

‡ Monson says, "The fleet was the greatest of any nation, except the Spaniards, that had ever been seen in those seas since the first discovery of

of reputation in this voyage: he had bravely and ably executed the service on which he was sent, overcoming the enemy every where, and yielding only to an evil against which the skill of man was of as little avail as his strength. When, therefore, Elizabeth, in the year 1587, was assured that preparations were making upon a great scale in the Spanish ports, for the invasion of England, and thought it wiser to prevent the danger than wait for it, she appointed Drake to command the fleet which was equipped with that intent. It consisted of four ships of the navy royal, namely, the *Bonaventura*, in which he went as general; the *Lion*, captain William Borough, who was comptroller of the navy; the *Dreadnought*, captain Thomas Venner; and the *Rainbow*, captain Henry Bellingham; to these two of the queen's pinnaces were "appointed as handmaids." Certain tall ships of the city of London were

them; and if the action had been as well considered of before their going from home, as it was happily performed by the valour of the undertakers, it had more annoyed the king of Spain than all other actions that ensued during the war." (p. 155.) In his opinion, the queen had then "a notable opportunity to annoy and weaken the Spaniards, by keeping the three towns which had been taken: she was rich in those days, and her subjects no less able than willing to contribute to what she proposed, they were so much devoted to her in their hearts;" she might have bound the states of Holland to any conditions she pleased against the Spaniards at that time; whereas, from that time till her death, "notwithstanding we were drawn into the war by them, yet they traded peaceably into the king of Spain's dominions, and never offered to annoy the Spaniards by any acts of hostility at sea, but supplied them with ships and intelligence against us." He thought, also, that, in point both of reputation and profit, the places ought to have been maintained, as a motive and mean for prosecuting the victories thus begun. (240.)

Monson was mistaken, both in his opinion and on the grounds upon which he founded it. At no time during her reign was Elizabeth rich. How greatly the measures of her otherwise vigorous government were crippled by necessary parsimony was, perhaps, not so well known to him as it now is; but he might have seen that if Drake had attempted to keep possession of those places, which are among the most unwholesome for Europeans of any in the world, the consequences would have been as fatal as they were at Puerto Rico. I have elsewhere explained the conduct of the Dutch. But Monson felt and thought rightly when he said, "Whosoever makes an enterprise on a town in America, with an intention not to keep it, will do no more than a malicious person that seeks the destruction of his neighbour in setting his house a-fire, without any other prospect in so doing but mischief and revenge. I confess we shall damnify the inhabitants of the town so sacked and spoiled, as the owner of a house burnt will be damnified; but it is no more loss or prejudice to the king of Spain, or to the bordering countries, than to the neighbour of the man that shall have his house burnt; for every one bears his own particular loss." — P. 241.

added, and the whole armament amounted to some thirty sail.*

Sailing from Plymouth early in April, they met on the 16th, in latitude 40° , two Middleburg ships coming from Cadiz, from whom they learnt that great store of warlike provision had been collected in that and the adjacent ports, ready for transport to Lisbon. For Cadiz, therefore, Drake made with all possible speed, and on the 19th entered the road. Sixty ships and many other small vessels were lying there, little expecting such an attack, and yet not unprepared for defence, having the fortresses to protect them, and also some galleys. Six of these vessels assailed the invaders in front of the town, but were soon compelled to retire under the fortress. Two from St. Mary's, and two from Puerto Real, came boldly to the fight and shot freely, "but altogether in vain," so that they hastened back with no little loss. A great Ragusan ship of 1000 tons, carrying 40 guns, and very richly laden, was sunk early in the action. Before night Drake was master of the road, and there he continued till the morning of the 21st, with so little loss as to be thought at the time "not worth mentioning;" with little ease, "by reason of their continual shooting from the galleys, the fortresses, and the shore, where continually at convenient places they planted new ordnance;" but also with no little triumph, for never was daring service more resolutely performed. Drake had two objects in view, which were not very compatible at this time, to sink, burn, and destroy for the public good; and, on the other hand, to secure as much as he could for the benefit of the merchant adventurers, who bore by much the larger part in this adventure. The labour which lay upon the sailors day and night during the six-and-thirty hours after the action, in discharging the stores from their prizes, was so great, that it was a pleasant sight to them when the Spaniards set fire to the ships which they could no longer defend;

* Hakluyt, ii. part ii. 121.

though the greatest danger to which the conquerors were exposed was when the ships, thus fired, were drifted toward them in flames by the tide.

About thirty vessels were burnt, sunk, or taken in this daring enterprise. Among them were four large Biscayans, taking in stores for the armament at Lisbon, and another of 1000 tons, laden for the West Indies. Some twenty French ships, and some Spanish ones that could pass the shoals, escaped to Puerto Real, where about forty others were lying in sight of the English. When Drake left the road, satisfied as he well might be with the success of his attempt, ten galleys came out after him, "as it were in disdain, to make some pastime with their ordnance:" the wind just at this time scanted, so that the fleet cast about, stood in with the shore, and anchored within a league of the town; but the galleys, alert as they had seemed to be, suffered them to ride quietly there; and thus brought themselves into disrepute with the English sailors.* The loss which had been inflicted upon the Spaniards was great: the insult and humiliation were greater; and Philip pursued his plans of vengeance with exacerbated hatred. Drake having despatched advice of his triumphant proceeding to England, turned back along the coast, and captured and burnt nearly 100 vessels before he came to Cape St. Vincent's, dealing "favourably with the men, and setting them ashore;" but he destroyed all the fishing boats and nets, "to their great hinderance," and in the hope of spoiling the tunny-fishery for that year. Near the Cape a landing was made; and that he might ride there in harbour at his pleasure, he assaulted the castle of Sagres, and took that fortress with three others, some by force, some by surrender. He then entered

* The author of the relation in Hakluyt says,—“ We now have had experience of galley-fight; wherein I can assure you, that only these four of her majesty's ships will make no account of twenty galleys, if they be alone, and not busied to guard others. There were never galleys that had better place and fitter opportunity for their advantage to fight with ships: but they were still forced to retire; we riding in a narrow gut (the place yielding no better), and driven to maintain the same, until we had discharged and fired the ships, which could not conveniently be done but upon the flood, at which time they might drive clear of us.”—P.122.

the mouth of the Tagus, anchored near Cascaes, sent to the marquis of Santa Cruz, who, as general of the armada, was with his galleys in the river, preparing for the invasion of England, told him who he was, and said he was then ready to exchange bullets with him. The marquis, according to the English account, replied that he was not then ready for him, nor had any such commission from his king. But the insult here, and at Cadiz, is said to have "bred such a corrosion in his heart, that he never enjoyed good days after," and within few months died of chagrin, happy in thus being removed before the invincible armada went to its destination.*

What Drake had done delayed the sailing of that armament for the current year. The public service had been thus effectually performed; but he knew that if nothing more were done, it would not give satisfaction to the merchant adventurers, who expected some immediate and tangible profit upon their disbursements. He shaped his course, therefore, toward the Azores, having obtained intelligence that the *San Philipe*, a Portuguese carrack from India, had wintered at Mozambique, and was expected to reach Lisbon in the passing month. His stores were becoming low, and his people importunate to return; but he with fair speeches, of which no man was more a master, persuaded, and prevailed with them to cruise yet a few days longer off the islands. And on this occasion fortune made him large amends for all former losses and disappointments, for he fell in with and easily captured the prize he looked for. This, says the writer of the voyage, was the first carrack that ever was taken coming from the East Indies, which the Portugals took for an evil sign, because the ship bore the king's own name. The whole company assured themselves now, that every man would have a sufficient reward for his travail, and thereupon they all resolved to return home, with the

* Hakluyt, 122, 123.

willing consent of their general. He dismissed the prisoners in certain vessels, with all the courtesies and humanities of war; and sailing then for England, the whole fleet arrived safely with their prize at Plymouth*, "to their own profit and due commendation," says one of the happy company, "and to the great admiration of the whole kingdom." †

The service which in this voyage he had performed at Cadiz, and all along the coast to the Tagus, Drake called singeing the king of Spain's beard. This was said in the mirthful spirit of a sailor; and with that spirit of local patriotism, from which so many great and good actions have arisen, he expended no trifling part of the riches which he had won in supplying Plymouth with fresh water: the inhabitants had till then been enforced to fetch it from a mile's distance. The head of the spring from which it was now to be brought is between seven and eight miles distant in a direct line; but by indentings and circlings it was to be conveyed twenty-four miles ‡, through valleys, wastes, and bogs; and what was most troublesome, through a mighty rock, thought to be impenetrable. He, nevertheless,

* "And here, by the way, it is to be noted, that the taking of this carrack wrought two extraordinary effects in England: first, that it taught others that carracks were no such bugs but that they might be taken (as since, indeed, it hath fallen out in the taking of the *Madre de Dios*, and firing and sinking of others); and, secondly, in acquainting the English nation more generally with the particularities of the exceeding riches and wealth of the East Indies; whereby themselves and their neighbours of Holland have been encouraged, being men as skilful in navigation, and of no less courage than the Portugals, to share with them in the East Indies, where their strength is nothing so great as heretofore hath been supposed."—*Hakluyt*, 122.

Lediard says, "The taking of this ship was of a greater advantage to the English merchants than the value of her cargo to the captors; for, by the papers found on board, they so fully understood the rich value of the Indian merchandises, and the manner of trading into the eastern world, that they afterwards set up a gainful trade and traffic, and established a company of East India merchants."—i. 229.

† *Hakluyt*, 123. *Monson*, 156. *Lediard*, i. 228.

‡ Prince says thirty. "Various mills were erected on the stream for the use of the town at sir Francis's expense. He vested the property in the mayor and commonalty, and their successors for ever. The water is brought to a reservoir above the town, and from thence distributed by leaden pipes. The lessee pays a fine of 3*l.* 13*s.* 6*d.* for twenty-one years of the water, and an annual quit-rent of 12*s.* Persons who use more water than private families pay a double quit-rent, and brewers a fourfold one."—*Beauties of England and Wales*, iv. 148.

“made the way he could not find, and overcoming the difficulty, finished the enterprise to the continual commodity of the place, and his own perpetual honour.”— “And fine would have been the diversion,” says the good old vicar of Berry Pomeroy, “when the water was brought somewhat near the town, to have seen how the mayor and his brethren, in their formalities, went out to meet it, and bid it welcome thither; and that being thus met, they all returned together; the gentlemen of the corporation, accompanied with sir Francis Drake, walked before, and the stream followed after into the town, where it has continued so to do ever since.” Perhaps the day of that peaceful triumph was the happiest of Drake’s public life.

His next service was as vice-admiral in that fleet by which, with the aid of the elements, the mighty preparations of the Spaniards were frustrated, their invincible armada dispersed, and England providentially saved from a most formidable invasion. In the en-
1589. suing year he was employed as admiral in an expedition sent to Portugal, in the vain hope of establishing the claim of a pretender to that kingdom. In this adventure the government took little part, acting upon a system of parsimonious policy, as if it risked nothing, so it avoided the risk of expense, and considered not how greatly the national interests and national character must be affected by the issue, and that that issue could not be fortunate unless adequate means were applied. The journey of Portugal (as this expedition was at the time called) was undertaken chiefly at the charge of Drake and sir John Norris, grandson of that Norris who was unjustly executed with Anne Boleyn. Elizabeth always rightly regarded his family as entitled to more than ordinary favour on that account; and this sir John and his brethren (six in all) were “men of haughty courage, and great experience in the conduct of military affairs;—persons,” says sir Robert Naunton*, “of such

* Scott’s Somers Tracts, i. 267.

renown and worth, as future times must out of duty owe them the debt of an honourable memory." No English soldier in that age had seen more service than this sir John. He had been trained under Coligny in the religious wars in France, served in Ireland while yet very young under Walter earl of Essex, held various commands in the Low Countries till he became general of the English forces there; and in the year of the armada, when an invasion was expected, was made "marshal of the field in England." There were others who engaged in the charge of the expedition, but fewer than had been expected; and some of those who subscribed their names, thinking that the scheme would never be brought to bear, but that they might gain credit by displaying a readiness to encourage it, withheld their money when they saw that serious preparations were made, and 10,000*l.* was thus withdrawn from the sum on which the leaders had calculated. And this was not the only nor the most serious defalcation from the means which had been looked for. Six hundred English horse from the Low Countries were withheld for other service, and seven out of thirteen old companies from the same school of war: the Dutch, instead of supplying six men of war and ten companies, sent only four companies*; and the government, which had promised twelve pieces of cannon, gave only a third part of that number.†

When the expedition sailed from Plymouth it consisted of 11,000 troops and 1500 seamen. There had been some weeks' previous delay; and when all was ready contrary winds detained them a whole month, living upon provisions which they could ill afford to consume in inaction. The generals at length, weary of these cross winds, "thrust to sea in the same, choosing rather to attend the change thereof there, than by being in

* Camden (429.) says the estates joined some ships, although they were somewhat discontented with the English, because Wingfield, governor of Gertruydenberg, and the English garrison in it, had betrayed that town to the Spaniards. But these could not have been ships of war, or their failure in this point would not have been distinctly stated, as it is in the relation ascribed to colonel Anthony Wingfield. Hakluyt, ii. part ii. 133.

† Hakluyt, 123. Camden, 42.

harbour to lose any part of the better, when it should come, by having their men on shore." Two days the wind continued cross; and some of the fleet, having twenty-five companies on board, parted company during that time, "either not being able or not willing to double Ushant." Nearly 3000 men thus forsook the expedition at sea, "whereof some past into France, and the rest returned home." The weather then became favourable; and in five days more, on the evening of the 20th of April, the troops disembarked in a bay something more than a mile from Coruña.* No attempt was made to prevent or impede their landing †; but as they presently marched toward the town, they were encountered on the way: the Spaniards, however, retired within their walls, and the invaders took up their lodging for the night in the "villages, houses, and wind-mills next adjoining, and very near round about the town." They were not disturbed there by the garrison: but the galleon San Juan, one of the few which had escaped from the general wreck of the armada, was lying in the harbour; and with two galleys, and three smaller vessels, fired upon their lodgings during the night, and as they passed to and fro. ‡

Before day, Norris reconnoitred the base town: this, which retains the name of la Pexaria, or Pescaderia, from the days when it was only of importance as a fishing station, stands upon a small tongue of land, and contained at that time 1500 houses. On the land side it was protected by a wall and a dry ditch, but on neither of the water sides were there any defences, and

* This place is called the Groine in Hakluyt, as it still is by the sailors,—an easy corruption from Cruna, the name bestowed upon it at the beginning of the thirteenth century, when Alonso IX. founded it, and removed thither the inhabitants of Burgo Viejo. *Cruna* is the Galician word for *coluna*, a column or pillar; and it is supposed that the town took its name from the Torre de Hercules at the entrance of the port, that well-known lighthouse having this appearance when seen from a distance. Cornide, *Investigaciones sobre la Torre de Hercules*, &c. p. 17. n.

Joshua Barnes tells us that Logroño also was called Groing by the English. *Hist. of Edward III.* 705.

† Faria y Sousa says, however, that the marquis made more resistance than could be made, "fortificosa lo major que pudo, y mas de lo que se podia resistio la des embarencion."—P. 94.

‡ Hakluyt, 138.

Norris resolved upon attempting it by escalade, in two places. As a preliminary measure it was necessary to silence the enemy's ships. Some artillery was landed: as soon as it opened, the galleys retired to Ferrol, and the other vessels ceased their fire. The rest of the day was spent in preparing for the attack. Twelve hundred men under colonel Huntley, and the vice-admiral, captain Fenner, were to be landed on one side the peninsula on which Coruña stands, and the long boats and pinnaces which landed them were to keep up a fire as they approached. On the other side, captain Wingfield, who was Norris's lieutenant-colonel, and captain Sampson, who held the same rank under Drake, were to enter with 500 men at low water, if they found it passable: otherwise, they were provided for the escalade; and on the land side 300 men, under colonels Bret and Umpton, were to set up their ladders and scale the wall. The three attacks were to be made at the same time. In strict obedience to this part of their orders, Wingfield and Sampson began the assault as soon as the signal was given: they found good resistance, and were twice beaten from their ladders, yet persevered in the attempt. Huntley and Fenner landed, meantime, with no great difficulty, and but little loss; and some of this party, under captain Hinder, having effected an entrance, scoured the wall, clearing the way for Bret and Umpton to enter without resistance, and past on till he came in the rear of those who were resisting Wingfield and Sampson: upon this the defence was abandoned. The Spaniards, indeed, knowing that if attacked from the water it was not tenable, had determined upon withdrawing the garrison and the inhabitants into the high town, should this be the plan of the assailants; but in the confusion and fear which prevailed, the signal for recalling the troops from the land side was not made; and men whose courage deserved a more generous treatment than they underwent were sacrificed through this error.*

* Hakluyt, 139.

Upon the English having thus entered in three places, "with a huge cry," the inhabitants, they who could, betook themselves to the high town, which they might with less peril do, because the assailants being strangers, knew not the way to cut them off. "Some," says one of the expedition, "fled to the rocks in the peninsula; some hid themselves in chambers and cellars; some found favour to be taken prisoners; but the rest, to the number of about 500, falling into the hands of the common soldiers, had their throats cut;" and this seems to have been perpetrated and related equally without compunction. The cellars were found full of wine, 2000 pipes having been collected there, toward the provision for a second armada; and the men, by inordinate drinking, becoming reckless of danger, or incapable of perceiving it, exposed themselves to the shot from the upper town, whereby many were hurt.* It was thought that by their excesses at this time they brought on the subsequent sickness and mortality. From the few prisoners who were taken, they learnt that there were in the town when they arrived 500 soldiers, the poor remains of seven companies who had returned

* In the only Spanish account of these transactions which I have been able to consult, it is said that the wine was purposely left; and that the Spaniards, taking advantage of the drunkenness and consequent disorder thus produced, killed as many as 800 stragglers, whom the succours, as they arrived from the interior, fell in with and found drunk and sleeping. This writer says, "Bebieron bellamente los Ingleses, como valientes bebedores; y pareciendoles que ya eran señores de la tierra, lo que menos cuidado les daba era la guerra."—*P. M. F. Felipe de la Gandara, Armas y Triunfos del Reino de Galicia*. 1672. p. 470.

The author was Coronista general of that kingdom. The first part of his account cannot be reconciled with the English statements. According to him the invaders landed more than 10,000 men, and took possession of Burgo, an open village (*lugar*), without walls or castle, more than a league from Coruna: there they began to visit the drinking houses, instead of making any attempt to occupy the bridge (at the head of the harbour, over the mouth of the Mandeo,) and take a position, to prevent succours from arriving. "They might have done this easily," he says, "*sin que pudiera entrar gente por parte alguna*." Afterwards they attempted to insulate the fortress by cutting across the isthmus; but there were rocks in the way, large reinforcements had already entered, and the fire from the walls put an end to their operations. He makes no mention whatever of the storming the base town, nor of the subsequent carnage, but simply says that they burnt the suburb called la Pescaderia, which contained 1500 houses.

from "the journey of England," and that money and stores had been sent thither for a second attempt at invasion.*

The Spaniards had been taken by surprise, which they ought not to have been in any of their great ports on this side the Straits. But the governor, who was the marquez de Zerralbo don Juan Pacheco Osorio, prepared now with a Spaniard's determination for defence. His first object was to prevent the enemy from taking possession of the galleon; and as this could by no other means be effected, he gave orders for destroying it; the crew, accordingly, overcharged the guns, set the ship on fire, and left her in flames, "which burnt in terrible sort for two days together." When she had burnt to the water's edge, and the English came to search the hull, they found only sixteen whole cannon out of fifty: the rest had burst in their discharge, as had been designed, and were taken out in broken pieces and molten lumps. Every exertion was made for improving the fortifications, which were strong but old. All hands were employed at this, and in carrying earth for the ramparts, which were now made; and so intent were they upon these operations, that they left the Puerta Real, or royal gate, open, and Coruña, according to the Galicians, would have been lost, if a greater personage than the governor had not taken upon himself the defence in this emergency. For the English entered not only without resistance, but without any one speaking to them, or giving the alarm: so strange a circumstance made them apprehensive of some stratagem; still, however, though with all possible circumspection, they advanced up the street, at the end of which stood the parochial church of the upper town; and to whom should that church be dedicated but to the peculiar patron of Spain and especial glory of Galicia—Santiago? He did not indeed appear in person: short as the distance was from Compostella, the occasion was

* Hakluyt, 140.

not of sufficient importance for him to leave his shrine and mount his celestial white horse ; but out of his church there issued a great darkness, and in the midst of that darkness a great light ; and the light dazzled, and the darkness confused, and both terrified them : they made their way out of the gate with more alacrity than they had entered it ; and Santiago achieved for his faithful devotees the only one of all his numerous victories in which no blood was shed.*

This was a modest miracle for the saint, the country, and the religion. Another and not less thaumaturgic saint worked none upon the occasion, though he might seem to have been more especially invited or provoked to manifest his power. Without the Puerta de los Aires, and fronting it, was a convent of St. Domingo : the invaders occupied it ; and from the upper windows and other parts of the edifice fired into the town. These things passed on the day after the escalade. On the morrow some 2000 men from the adjacent parts approached the gates as confidently as if they had been resolved to enter : but they advanced without order ; and losing a few men in the first encounter took to flight, and outstripped their pursuers. A party following up this success foraged round about, and brought back kine and sheep in abundance, to the great relief of the army, whose provisions, when they landed †, were well nigh exhausted. Norris meant in the ensuing night to take a “ long munition house built upon the wall ;” but the Spaniards apprehending this, and knowing how advantageous a position it would be for the enemy, burnt it before the attempt could be made. At the same time a fire broke out in the lower end of the town, “ which, had it not been by the care of the general heedily seen unto, and the fury thereof pre-

* Gandara, 471.

† Wingfield says, “ What extremity the want of that month's victuals which we did eat during the month we lay at Plymouth for a wind might have driven us unto, no man can doubt of that knoweth what men do live by, had not God given us, in the end, a more prosperous wind and shorter passage into Galicia than hath been often seen, where our own force and fortune revictualled us largely.”—*Hakluyt*, 135.

vented, by pulling down many houses which were most in danger, had burnt," says Wingfield, "all the provisions we found there, to our wonderful hinderance."*

Two demi-cannons and two culverins were now planted under the garden of the convent, but with little skill or foresight, for the first or second fire shook down the cross wall by which this battery was "defended or gabioned;" it then lay open to the enemy. They did not overlook their opportunity; and the lieutenant of the ordnance, with some of the cannoneers, were slain there. The battery was secured during the night. When it was ready to open, the general sent to summon the place: the man who bore it was fired at from the town. Presently a Spaniard was hanged over the wall, and a signal for parley made, the object of which was to let the English see that this summary punishment had been inflicted upon the person who fired at the messenger; and they took the opportunity of requesting to have "fair war," promising it on their part. They made enquiry concerning what prisoners were in the hands of the English, but would not listen to any proposal for surrendering.†

Norris had now sufficiently reconnoitred the walls to see that they were almost every where built upon a rock: one place, however, he thought mineable, and men were presently set to work there, who, after three days' labour, and on the seventh after their entrance of the base town, had bedded their powder,—but, as afterwards appeared, not far enough into the wall. The breach by that time was thought assaultable, and companies were drawn out for a simultaneous attack there, and at the point where it was expected that the mine would make an opening. But the mine failed, "by reason the powder brake out backward in a place where the cave was made too high." Nothing therefore could be attempted that day. The miners resumed their work, and by the second day after had

* Hakluyt, 141.

† Ibid.

wrought well into the foundation of the wall. The first failure drew after it no ill consequence; not so the partial success of the second attempt. The explosion brought down half the tower under which the mine had been made, and opened a practicable breach: it was immediately assaulted; and when the men had gained the summit, the other half fell on them; some twenty or thirty were crushed, and the men were "so amazed, not knowing whence that terror came, that they forsook their commanders, and left them among the ruins of the mine." The two ensigns were shot in the breach, but their colours were rescued; among those on whom the tower fell "was captain Sydenham pitifully lost, who having three or four great stones upon his lower parts was held so fast that neither himself could stir nor any reasonable company recover him; notwithstanding the next day, being found to be alive, there were ten or twelve lost in attempting to relieve him." It is the most honourable incident on the part of the English, during their descent in Galicia, that so many should have exposed and lost their lives in endeavouring to perform this act of forlorn humanity toward their suffering countryman*; and the least honourable on that of the Spaniards that they should have fired on men who were exposing themselves for such a motive.

Meantime a breach which had been made by the poor battery in the convent garden was attempted; and the officers brought their men to the push of the pike at the summit. But the Spaniards had prepared all means of defence, and they were encouraged by the masculine exertions of the wife of an alferez,—Maria Pita was her name. With a spirit which women have more often displayed in Spain than in any other country, she snatched up sword and buckler, and took her stand among the foremost of the defendants; and so much was ascribed by the people to the effect of her example, that she was rewarded for this service with the full pay of an ensign for life, and the half pay was settled upon

* Hakluyt, 141.

her descendants in perpetuity.* The defence, however, was not difficult; for the rubbish over which the assailants mounted "slid outward from under their feet; and it then appeared that half the height of the wall had received no injury."† Thus, had there been more spirit for renewing the assault, the breach no longer appeared practicable. From both points of attack the retreat lay through a narrow street or lane, and many were hurt there.‡ Whatever the loss may have been, the failure was so complete, that it determined § the general to abandon an enterprise which he now considered hopeless. But to secure his embarkation it was necessary to disperse a considerable force with which the conde de Andrade was encamped behind the Puente de Burgo, waiting there to be joined by the conde de Altamira, and then, with united strength, to advance for the relief of the town. Norris accordingly, leaving Drake, with five regiments, to guard their quarters, marched, with nine, to meet the enemy. His brother, Sir Edward Norris, who commanded the van, came in sight of them some half mile from their camp, and beat them from place to place, (though "they had good places of defence, and cross walls which they might have held long,") till they came to the bridge, "on the foot of the farther side whereof lay their camp, strongly in-

* Gandara, as *chronista mayor* of Galicia, is good authority for a circumstance like this. The story gained something by travelling in its own country. Faria y Sousa says, that this *virago* lost none of her courage at seeing her husband killed before her eyes, and that she wounded an English standard-bearer, mortally, with a lance.—P. 95. Gandara, 472.

† "For let no man think that culverin or demy cannon can sufficiently batter a defensible rampire. And of those pieces which we had, the better of the demy-cannons, at the second shot, broke in her carriages."—*Hakluyt*, 141.

The writer argued, that if the battering pieces which were promised for the armament, but not supplied, had been there, the place would have been taken.

‡ Gandara, in his exaggerated statement, says, that the English held out a signal for burying their dead, who were found to be 1500; and that the loss of the Spaniards, from the time that the expedition landed, till it reembarked, amounted only to thirty-five. I wish Wingfield's account of the slaughter in the base town rested on no better authority, or could be suspected of equal exaggeration.

§ The expression in *Hakluyt* is, "it made him grow to a new resolution."—P.141.

trenched." Sir Edward followed at the point of the pikes, through a heavy fire: the enemy's shot flanked both sides of the bridge, and at the end was a barricado of barrels. They who should have guarded it forsook their station, seeing this "proud approach." Sir Edward entered, and charging the first who opposed him, pike in hand, fell, "with very earnestness, in overthrowing," and received a grievous sword wound in the head. The general, and some other officers, "most honourably" rescued him; and overcoming, not without a severe struggle, the brave resistance that was made, obtained then an easy victory over the rest of the army. The standard was taken, and the fugitives hotly pursued for some three miles. "How many," says Wingfield, "2000 men (for of so many consisted our vanguard) might kill in pursuit of four sundry parties, so many you may imagine fell before us that day. And to make the number more great, our men having given over the execution, and returning to their stands, found many hidden in the vineyards and hedges, whom they despatched." Two hundred, also, were found in a convent, and were there put to the sword, and the convent spoiled and burnt. This was not the "fair war" for which the Spaniards had asked, and which, by their honourable conduct at the time of asking, they had deserved. The contrary system can be justified only when reprisals become necessary, as the sole means of putting a stop to it; but in that age fair war seems, almost, to have been the exception. *

After what is called "the fury," and might better have been termed the wickedness † "of the execution," the vanguard was sent one way, and the main body the other, "to burn and spoil, so that you might have seen the country, more than three miles compass, on fire." The

* Hakluyt, 142. Camden, 430.

† Such a carnage after the action well deserves to be so qualified, especially if the relator in Hakluyt is to be believed when he says, that "there were slain in this fight, on our side, only captain Cooper and one private soldier."

next day was spent in shipping their artillery*, and whatever booty could be transported; and they attempted, during the last night of their tarrance, to burn that part of the upper town where the houses were built upon the wall by the water side; but the Spaniards were vigilant, and made so good a defence that they frustrated this intention. At their departure, however, the invaders, by their own account, set fire to every house of the base town, so that not one was left standing there.† Putting then to sea, after contending nine days with contrary winds, they reached the Berlings, having a little before fallen in with Essex, who, with some other volunteers of note, had followed the expedition in a single ship. By this time, the troops had suffered much by sickness, aggravated by their own excesses at Coruña; and the loss during the siege had been considerable.‡ But this was not the only evil§: during the eighteen days of their continuance there, troops had been sent to Lisbon, and all persons of any influence, who were suspected of favouring Antonio, were removed from that city, and sent into Spain. Antonio, indeed, had been considered of so little consequence in this first act of the expedition, that he seems not to have been consulted concerning it, nor, indeed, is he noticed in the accounts of it till the

* Their own and those taken in the base town, "which," says Wingfield, "had it been such as might have given us any assurance of a better battery, or had there been no other purpose of our journey but that, I think the general would have spent some more time in the siege of the place."

† Gandara confirms this, but represents it having been done before the attempts on the upper town; and he avoids all mention of the action at the Puente de Burgo.

‡ El Peregrino Español (Antonio Perez) whose *Tratado Parænetico* was translated into French and English, and widely circulated by the Portuguese emigrants, says that the greater part of the troops died there, and all the best artillerymen: but he seems to refer this loss rather to the mortality than the siege; and his object was to show that the expedition failed wholly through the misconduct of the English, and not owing to the weakness of Antonio's partisans.

§ Sir William Monson says, "The landing at the Groyne was an unnecessary lingering and hinderance of the other great and main design; a consuming of victuals and weakening of the army by the immoderate drinking of the soldiers, which brought a lamentable sickness amongst them; a warning to the Spaniards to strengthen Portugal; and (what is more than all this) a discouragement to proceed farther, being repulsed in the first attempt." (160.)—This is true, except as to the waste of provision. Monson himself says, that "divers of the ships had not four days' victuals when they departed from Plymouth."

fleet arrived at Peniche. The troops landed there, about a mile from the town, with much difficulty, owing to the wind and the surf, and with the loss of one boat, carrying twenty-five men. Essex commanded this party; and when men enough had been disembarked for forming two troops, he left one to protect the landing, and advanced with the other against some companies who sallied from the town to oppose him. The Spaniards fled when it came to the push of the pike: he entered the open town, and summoned the castle, which the commandant, Antonio de Araujo, readily surrendered to Antonio, acknowledging him as his king.*

Here it was agreed that the army should proceed overland to Lisbon, and the fleet meet them in the Tagus. When the army was marshalled and ready to act, Drake, "to make known the honourable desire he had of taking equal part in all fortune with them, stood upon the ascent of a hill by which the battalions marched, and, with a pleasing kindness, took his leave severally of the commanders of every regiment, wishing them happy success, with a constant promise, that if the weather did not hinder him, he would meet them at Lisbon with the fleet." The non-performance of this engagement brought a reproach upon Drake, who may, with more cause, be censured for having made it. While the army proceeded with little encouragement from the Portugueze, whose eager co-operation they had been led to expect, Drake sailed for Cascaes and took possession of the town. The inhabitants, who abandoned it upon his landing, returned upon his assurances of all peaceable kindness if they would acknowledge Antonio for their king, and supply the fleet with necessaries; but the castle, having a Spanish garrison, was maintained against him. Here he remained, till the army, weakened by sickness, unable for want of artillery (the little which they had being in the fleet) to make any serious attempt upon Lisbon, knowing themselves

* Hakluyt, 144.

far inferior in number to the Spanish troops who were collected against them, and undeceived as to the influence and strength of the pretender's adherents, gave up this ill-planned and worse conducted attempt, and came to join him at Cascaes. Whatever blame was afterwards imputed to the admiral, those who were on the spot, and were capable of forming a dispassionate opinion, must have admitted the validity of the motives which had withheld him from entering the river. The fleet must have passed within culver shot of St. Julian's, which was then accounted "one of the most impregnable forts to seaward in Europe: this and the other two forts between Cascaes and Lisbon Drake might have passed with a reasonable gale;" but once in the Tagus, the coming out again was uncertain: there were galleys in the river ready at any advantage to have assailed him: he would have been exposed to fire ships; and if a fleet had been brought against him at the mouth of the river, he had neither the hope of victory nor of escape, and the destruction of the army must have followed upon the loss of the ships.*

The emigrants whose expectations had been so cruelly disappointed, imputed Drake's breach of promise to his regarding the interests of the merchant adventurers rather than those of the expedition, because while he remained at Cascaes many prizes were brought in there. Most of these were easterlings, of which not fewer than threescore belonging to the Hanse towns, and laden with naval stores, as was supposed for another armada, were captured. Some were of great burden, with little on board, and evidently built as ships of war: it could not be doubted that these were for the Spanish navy. The embarkation of the troops was secured by forcing the castle of Cascaes to surrender, the commandant requiring only such a display of force as might justify him in offering no farther resistance. It was occupied then by English troops, till the arma-

* Camden, 431, 432. Monson, 160.

ment was ready to sail, and partially blown up at their departure. One company had been left at Peniche, together with the sick and wounded: some vessels were sent to bring them away, and advices were despatched to the commanding officer overland: the advice arrived in time, but not the ships; for the commander, then apprised of what had happened, and learning also that an enemy's force was hastening against him, embarked in barks which were on the spot, and with such haste that he neither brought away the artillery nor all his men.*

Nine galleys from Andalusia had entered the Tagus some days before the departure of the English: these, with the twelve which were stationed there, followed the fleet; and on the following morning, taking advantage of a dead calm, cut off some stragglers, and ran down some who endeavoured to escape from them in their boats. One hulk had captain Minshew and his company on board, and he was seen fighting to the last after his ship was on fire: the calm meantime was such, that none of the great ships could approach to assist him, though every effort was made by towing them. In this and in another action with a straggler the galleys were so roughly handled, that they discontinued the pursuit. The expedition had been instructed to ply for the Azores if the wind were northerly; but if it blew from the south, then for the isles of Bayona. The fleet was dispersed in a gale; but after seventeen days the two commanders and good part of the ships were united off Vigo. In that interval many men had been cast overboard; for not only was the sickness raging among them, but many died of hunger, and more must have perished for lack of sufficient food, if the mortality which carried off their comrades had not left a more competent allowance for the survivors. Not more than 2000 effective men were now left. They were landed in two bodies: they approached the

* Hakluyt, 142.

town on two sides ; and though a strong barricado had been constructed at the end of every street, no defence was attempted. The inhabitants deemed it prudent to withdraw in time, and had removed with them every thing of value, except good store of wine. It was thought too hazardous to make a movement upon Bayona, whither they had fled, and where they knew, from one of their Coruña prisoners, that there was a strong garrison. The English contented themselves with spoiling the country for some seven or eight miles, burning the villages and the standing corn : then, after setting fire to every house in the town, they re-embarked.*

Still the commanders clung to the hope of returning with some booty that might compensate for the loss incurred in this luckless expedition. It was agreed that Drake should draft the able men into twenty of the best ships, and sail for the Azores for the chance of falling in with the Indian fleet, while Norris with the rest of the armament should return home. They parted with this understanding : on the second night there arose a greater storm than any they had encountered since they left England ; both squadrons were dispersed ; and when Norris, twelve days afterwards, reached Plymouth, he found that Drake had arrived there, and all the queen's ships, and many others ; but every vessel had taken the opportunity, which the storm afforded, of going its own way, "some led by a desire of returning whence they came, and some," says Wingfield, "being possessed of the hulks (the Hanse town prizes), sought other ports, from their general's eye, where they might make their private commodity of them, — which they did to their own great advantage." At Plymouth the army was dissolved, eight companies only being retained : every soldier received five shillings, and "the arms he bare to make money of, and this was belived to

* Hakluyt, 150.

be more than could by any means be due to them." * **I**t appears, however, that some of the men who compared their wages with their pains, murmured against **this** distribution, and that this increased the unpopularity †, which in some degree is generally attached to the leaders of an unsuccessful expedition. ‡

A very rich booty is said to have been brought home, and 150 pieces of great ordnance ; but the loss of lives had been very great, of 12,500 men little more than 6000 returning : the Spaniards exaggerated the loss to 16,000 ; and, tracing to the disease which the survivors brought home a great mortality which ensued, they said that England suffered more for having sent an armada against Spain, than Spain for having sent an armada against England. § Yet the result of the expedition was to confirm the English people in that opinion of their superiority to the Spaniards, whether at sea or in the

* "For they were not in service three months ; in which time," says Wingfield, "they had their victuals, which no man will value at less than half their pay, for such is the allowance in her majesty's ships to her mariners ; so as there remained but ten shillings a month more to be paid : for which there was not any private man but had his apparel and furniture to his own use ; so as every common soldier discharged received more in money, victuals, apparel, and furniture than his pay did amount to." — *Hakluyt*, 151.

† "As our country," says Wingfield, "doth bring forth many gallant men, who, desirous of honour, do put themselves into the actions thereof, so doth it many more, who, though their thoughts reach not so high as others, yet do they listen how other men's acts do pass ; and, either believing what any man will report unto them, are willingly carried away into errors, or, tied to some greater man's faith, become secretaries against a noted truth. The one sort of these take their opinions from the highway side, or, at the farthest, go no farther than Paul's, to enquire what hath been done in this voyage ; where if they meet with any whose capacity before their going out could not make them live, nor their valour maintain their reputation, and who went only for spoil, complaining on the hardness and misery thereof, they think they are bound to give credit to these honest men who were parties therein, and, in very charity, become of their opinions. The others, to make good the faction they are entered into, if they see any of those malecontents (as every journey yieldeth some), do run unto them, like tempting spirits, to confirm them in their humour, with assurance that they foresaw, before our going out, what would become thereof.

"Be ye not, therefore, credulous in believing every report ; for there have been many more beholders of these things that have past than actors in the same ; who, by their experience not having the knowledge of the ordinary wants of war, have thought that to be hard, not to have their meat well dressed, to drink sometimes water, to watch much, or to see men die and be slain, was a miserable thing ; and not having so given their minds to the service as they are any thing instructed thereby, do, for want of better matter, discourse ordinarily of these things." — P. 151.

‡ *Hakluyt*, 151, 152.

§ *Faria y Sousa*, 197.

field, which they had now begun to entertain ; and the spirit of adventure became more general. Elizabeth's conduct toward the Hanse towns encouraged that spirit. She had warned those towns against carrying provisions or military stores into Spain or Portugal, upon peril of losing ships and lading, according to special treaty in this case, and to the acknowledged practice and law of nations. Conscious that they were violating that treaty, and amenable to that law, the easterlings took the perilous course, north about, rather than risk passing the Channel ; but when their ships were captured off the mouth of the Tagus, they complained as if their privileges had been violated, and called for restitution. The queen replied, that their ships, being employed in carrying warlike stores to the enemies of England, she had lawfully taken them, and could not have done otherwise, unless she would wilfully bring destruction upon herself and her people. Privileges, to which they appealed, might neither be claimed nor allowed to the prejudice of the public safety, which is the highest law : nor was the appeal maintainable in itself ; for in the privilege granted by Edward I. to the Hanse towns, it was expressly provided that they should not carry any merchandise into the dominions of the declared enemies of England. More than once had their ships been detained heretofore, when, during war with France, they had supplied the French with stores ; and this had been done not by England only, but by Charles V., the kings of Sweden, Denmark, and Poland, and recently by the prince of Orange, according to the law of nations ; for neutrality must so be used, that the neutrals while they help one party hurt not the other. Referring then to the tone of their demands, she reminded them that it did not become cities and towns to use menaces to kings ; for her part she feared not the threats of the greatest monarchs, much less of particular cities ; and as for the due and just rights of neighbourhood, she punctually observed them with all men.*

* Camden, 433.

Whatever murmurs had been raised against the conduct of the Portugal voyage, Drake's character was too well established both in the estimation of the court and of the people to be seriously affected by them: the failure of that expedition was sufficiently accounted for by want of means *, want of co-operation on the part of Antonio's party, and the mortality among the troops. And when, in the year 1594, in conjunction with sir John Hawkins, he proposed to the government to set on foot an armament against the West Indies, the project was readily entertained.

Hawkins, after his unhappy adventure at St. Juan de Ulloa, seems to have given up the career of enterprise. In 1573 he had been appointed treasurer or comptroller of the navy, a high and arduous office, which he discharged so ably that he is said to have introduced more useful inventions into the navy, and better regulations, than any of his predecessors. He acted as rear-admiral against the armada, and received, on that occasion, the honour of knighthood, which he had well deserved. During a long course of service, he had obtained a great name in his profession, and, notwithstanding his loss in the Gulf of Mexico, no inconsiderable fortune, for he and his elder brother were at one time owners of thirty good ships. † The queen, no doubt in consequence of his representations, resolved upon putting her navy upon a better and more regular footing than it had before been, and assigned a yearly sum of 8970*l.* ‡ for keeping it in repair; and in the same year, 1590, she sent ten of her own ships, under Hawkins and sir Martin Frobisher, to threaten the coast of Spain, and intercept the Indian ships. But the Spaniards obtained intelligence of this in time to send despatches out, and order the homeward bound fleet to winter in India, rather than run the hazard of falling in with this force; others,

* Monson says, that, in his opinion, the two generals never overshot themselves more, than in undertaking so great a charge with so little means.

† Campbell, i. 415.

‡ Camden, 439. Lediard, 274.

which were on their way, either meeting with timely advice, or warned by their own forethought, kept at a distance from the islands, and by that unsuspected course reached Lisbon safely. Hawkins, therefore, cruised about in vain, and with such singular ill success that not a single prize fell into his hands. A landing which he attempted at Fayal was not more fortunate; and after seven months he returned, without loss indeed, but without any apparent advantage, though it was known afterwards that the delay of a year in their expected returns had proved most injurious to the Spanish merchants, and that the ships as well as their owners suffered greatly. No blame could be imputed to the commanders. Sir John, however, thought it necessary to offer some apology in the report of his voyage: this he did at considerable length; and concluded by reminding the queen that Paul planteth and Apollos watereth, but it is God who giveth the increase. This ill-applied allusion to Scripture is said to have provoked from Elizabeth a characteristic burst of anger:—"God's death!" she exclaimed: "this fool went out a soldier, and is come home a divine."*

This was but a momentary feeling; and when Drake and Hawkins, "presuming much upon their own experience and knowledge," proposed that a West Indian 1594. voyage should be undertaken, and offered to engage deeply in it, the queen concurred in a project, of which, in the opinion of all men, the most promising expectations were entertained. Much had been done to impede the preparations of Philip for a second attempt at invasion, much to injure the Spaniards, and more to irritate them; but Philip was both a determined and a powerful enemy. Till the forced union with Portugal, Spain had made little account of its navy, its only maritime war having long been what was carried on with the Mahomedan powers within the Straits; but the spoil committed by the English expeditions, far and

* Monson, 162. 247. Lediard, 274.

near, not upon the seas alone, but in the islands, in the West Indies, upon the coasts of Chili and Peru, and even in its own most important and best fortified ports, made the government feel the necessity of raising a maritime force, wherewith at once to be protected and revenged. This object had been pursued with such diligence, that within three years after the failure of the armada, the Spaniards had a formidable fleet; and in three years more 69 ships, built at the king's charge, had been added to it, most of them of 1000 tons' burden and upwards. When hostilities began, the Spanish ships were "huge and mighty in burden, weak and ill-fashioned in building, lame and slow in sailing, and fitter for merchandise than war," having indeed "been more intended for it:" old seamen, like Hawkins, used to maintain that one of the queen's ships could beat four of them. They were now constructed for war, and were so superior to the English ships in strength and weight of metal, that nothing but English seamanship and English courage could have contended against such superiority. But the Spaniards also had good sailors, though only from their northern ports; for the Catalans no longer supported their ancient reputation. Most of their officers, from the rank of captain downward, were Biscayans, with whom (it is the testimony of an English admiral than whom none of his age had seen more service) there were few that could be compared for knowledge, hardiness, and valour. But the Biscayans made but a small part of the sailors: the discipline of the navy was bad; and the naval service was regarded with contempt by the military.

Rumours were abroad that a second and more formidable armada had been completed, and intelligence came from many quarters that the conquest of England would again be attempted. Upon this, men were levied in all the maritime counties, and watch and ward appointed to be kept upon the sea-coast. The apprehension was as general as it had been in 1588; and now, too, as then, the sense of danger brought with it nothing

like dismay. It was, indeed, lamented that so much brave blood and so much treasure had been lost in France, wasted, as it were, in aid of insincere allies ; but "all men," says Camden*, "buckled themselves to war ; and wailing women, with renewed grief, lamented that their sons and brethren who had fallen in that thankless service had not been reserved for these times." On this account the West India voyage was delayed, to the great cost of the adventurers : it was deemed unfit to send away so many good ships and men while there was reason to think they might be wanted in our own seas, and on English ground. The Spaniards, however, effected no more than what sufficed to show that however vigilantly the Channel might be guarded, partial descents were always possible. They had possession at that time of Blavet in Bretagne, a small but strong place upon the river of that name, from the ruins of which Port Louis was afterwards constructed. From thence D. Diego Brochen, with four galleys, under favourable opportunity of weather, crossed the mouth of the Channel, and effected a landing at Penzance. They sacked and burnt that place, with the two poor fishing towns of Mousehole and Newlin ; but the inhabitants had taken flight. No life was lost, and no prisoner taken ; and the galleys returned as safely as they came.†

If the object of this descent was to impress the English with the belief that a great invasion was to follow, it not only failed, but produced an opposite effect. Tyrone, indeed, induced by Romish instigations, and relying upon Spanish support, commenced a rebellion in Ireland, which added new horrors to the barbarous history of that most barbarous island. But though this disquieted Elizabeth's counsels, so little apprehension was entertained of any danger from the Spaniards at home, that

* P. 497.

† Camden, 499. Monson, 167. Lediard, 310. "These," says Camden, "were the first and last Spaniards that ever made any hostile landing in England." It seems that Pero Nifio's name was never so well (or, rather, so ill) known here, as that of his contemporary, Arripay, in Spain.

Hawkins and Drake were allowed to begin their voyage. Their force consisted of 26 sail, and about 2500 men. Six were queen's ships, Drake sailing in the *Defiance*, and his colleague in the *Garland*. Sir Thomas Baskerville was the commander by land, and sir Nicholas Clifford his lieutenant-general. The first intent of this expedition was, that they should land at Nombre de Dios, march across the isthmus to Panama, and seize what treasure might be there, which it was supposed would be much, and if they thought it feasible, keep possession of that place. But a few days only before they sailed from Plymouth letters came from the queen, informing them, upon sure intelligence from Spain, that the West India fleet had arrived, but that one treasure ship, having lost a mast, had put back to Puerto Rico ; wherefore she ordered them to take the good opportunity thus presented, and make for this great prize, — a course which was the more advised, because it was not much out of their way to Nombre de Dios.*

They "brake ground" (in the phrase of their own journalist) "out of Plymouth Sound on the 28th of August, 1595, and at the end of four weeks arrived off the isle of Grand Canary. Drake and Baskerville were for landing here, for the honour of conquering it, as well as for the sake of victualling the fleet. Hawkins was for obeying the queen's instructions, and losing no time in accomplishing the main enterprise ; but the sailors represented their need of a supply of provisions : this is said to have been a pretence on their part, who had the hope of plunder before their eyes ; and when Baskerville engaged to take the place within four days, Hawkins consented. This having been determined, they found at daybreak that they had overshot their mark ; so they stood about, and by nine o'clock were at anchor before the fort, about a league eastward of the city of St. Anna, and at one, 1400 men were in readiness to land in a sandy bay between the city and the fort. But the

* Monson 167.

hours which had elapsed since the fleet first hove in sight had been well employed in erecting a bulwark, and planting ordnance to command the landing place; seeing which, and that a heavy surf was then breaking on the beach, the generals perceived that they could not make the attempt without too great and manifest a risk. After a vain demonstration, therefore, in which some of the smaller ships riding at anchor within musket shot of the shore were in some danger, they went to the western side of the island, and there watered. A few men venturing rashly to some distance from the shore were set upon by the herdsmen, who with their dogs and staves killed most of them, and took prisoner the surgeon of one of the ships, from whom they learnt all that he knew concerning the objects of the voyage. And upon this the governor despatched a caravel to all those places which were threatened. This warning, however, had been anticipated by advices from the Spanish government which reached the West Indies before the expedition sailed from England, — such early and sure intelligence had that government obtained.*

A month afterwards, when they were near Martinico, Drake being ahead with four or five other ships, was separated from the rest of the fleet in a gale. They made for Dominica, he for Marigalante, and they joined company again at Guadaloupe. Some traffic had been carried on at Dominica, where great store of tobacco was grown, which “most of the English and French used to purchase from the Caribs, with knives, hatchets, saws, and such like iron tools,” — no slight indication of improvement in the Indians, if beads, hawk-bells, prisms, and other toys had ceased to be received in payment. It is said that these Indians had plantations of various fruits in Marigalante, which they kept like gardens; but there seems no assignable reason why they should have made their plantations on another island instead of their own. Having reached Guadaloupe, the expedition wa-

tered there, washed the ships, set up the pinnaces, the materials of which they had taken out, and landed the men that they might refresh themselves on shore.*

The day after Drake's arrival there, five Spanish *zabras* were seen, ships of 200 tons; from which, as their course was by Dominica toward Puerto Rico, Drake rightly concluded † that the treasure was still in that island, and that this force had been ordered thither to convoy it: they belonging to a squadron of eight, which had been sent for that purpose, under don Pedro Tello. Captain Wignol in the *Francis*, a bark of thirty-five tons, being the last straggler of Hawkins's fleet, fell in with them, and was captured in sight of a caravel that escaped, and carried tidings of the capture to the commanders. It is said that Hawkins, foreseeing but too clearly the consequences of this misfortune, immediately sickened. Tello, in fact, put his prisoners to the torture ‡, and thus extracted from them a declaration of what he might, with sufficient certainty, have inferred from the appearance of an English force in those seas. The expedition tarried at Guadaloupe three days after this mishap, and for this the commanders have been censured; but it may be doubted whether any haste which

* Hakluyt, 584.

† Purchas, iv. 1171.

‡ Lope de Vega relates this in lines, some of which are as atrocious as the others are characteristic: —

“ Siguiendo pues su curso por la plata,
Y la del mar rompiendo en blanca espuma,
Llevando cada prospera fragata
El mar y el viento como leve pluma;
Dos navios encuentra y desbarata
De aquella Inglesa referida suma,
Entre la Dominica y Matalino,
Islas del mar, y ventas del camino.

“ Huye el uno, ganando el barlovento,
Y abriendo los costados las espuelas
Al cavallo del mar, que yguala al viento,
Lleno de paramentos de sus velas;
Echando el otro a fondo, y siempre atento
A entender sus ardides y cautelas,
Diez y ocho Ingleses que tomo pregunta,
Y el cuero y nervios con los huessos junta.

“ Al tormento confessan los que tienen
Tan gran odio, señor, al confessarse,
Que de Plemua con el Draque vienen,” &c.

Dragontea, c. 4.

they could now have made would have been attended with better speed. Sailing once more on the 4th of November, they came to anchor, on the morning of the 8th, within the Virgin islands: this had been accounted dangerous, but they found a good road, "in which 1000 sail might have lain in fourteen, twelve, and eight fathom, fair sand and good anchorage, with high islands on either side." They could find no fresh water, but plenty of fish to be taken either with hooks or net, and the men went ashore and fowled; after tarrying two days here, they lingered two more in a lesser sound, about a league distant, which Drake explored the preceding night in his barge. If it be true that a difference of opinion had arisen between the commanders, it may explain a delay for which there would otherwise be no apparent reason. That dispute is said to have caused or accelerated Hawkins's death: on the morning of the 12th the fleet passed through the strait; and at night, when it was off the easternmost end of Puerto Rico, he breathed his last.*

Sir Thomas Baskerville took the place of this brave old seaman in the *Garland*, and at two in the afternoon of the same day the fleet anchored in a sandy bay, two miles east of Puerto Rico city, and within reach of its forts. Drake paid dearly for this imprudence. One shot wounded his mizen, another entered the steerage, where he was at supper, and struck the stool from under him: he, indeed, escaped unhurt; but several of the party were wounded, and two of them to death. Sir Nicholas Clifford was one, the other was sir Francis's bosom friend, master Brown, who had been christened by the unseemly name of Brute, taken, no doubt, from the fabled story of our Trojan descent. "Ah, dear Brute," said Drake, "I could grieve for thee! but now is no time for me to let down my spirits!" † No time was lost in removing to a safer distance; and on the

* Hakluyt, 584. Lediard, 310, 311.

† Fuller relates this, "from the mouth of Henry Drake, Esq., there present," whom he speaks of as his "dear and worthy parishioner, lately deceased."—*Holy State*, 129.

following morning they came to anchor "before the point without the town, a little to the westward: there they remained till nightfall, and then twenty-five pin-naces, boats, and shallops, well manned, and furnished with fireworks and small shot, entered the road."

The galleon which was the great object of this enterprise had been completely repaired, and was even on the point of sailing for Spain, when the certain intelligence of this intended attack reached the island. The Spaniards prepared themselves with equal promptitude and determination for defence: they landed the treasure, sunk the galleon in the mouth of the channel, and made a floating barrier of masts, on both sides, almost to the forts and castle, so as to render the passage impassable. Within this barrier the five zabras were stationed: their lading had been taken out; and, that nothing might be unnecessarily risked, all women, children, and unable persons had been sent into the interior, none remaining in the town but men who were able to defend it. A heavy fire was opened, both from the ships and forts, upon the English; and it became more destructive when they had succeeded with their fireworks in setting the ships in flames, for by that broad light the forts were enabled to direct their shot. Yet the adventurers persisted in their desperate attempt, till they had lost some forty or fifty men, by their own account, killed, and as many more wounded; consoling themselves with the thought that "there was also great death of the Spaniards aboard the frigates, with burning, drowning, and killing, besides some taken prisoners." Defeated, but not disheartened, they returned to the fleet, and remained at anchor the next day. One of the zabras had been consumed to the water's edge: the Spaniards employed the day in warping up the other four, all of which had been more or less injured; and one, as they were removing her, was seen to sink. But no renewal of the attack was attempted; Drake lingered another day as if unwilling to abandon the enterprise, though he now perceived it to

be hopeless : two more he was detained by calms ; then proceeded to the south-west point of the island, and there set up more pinnacles, washed his ships, and refreshed his men on shore.* And here a Spanish man and woman took refuge with him. The man's story was, " that he feared some great torment for not having repaired to the town, according to the governor's command, to assist in its defence, — and that the woman was his wife." Whatever may have been the motives for their flight, Drake was too humane a man to refuse them the means of escape.

Taking a final departure from Puerto Rico on the 25th of November, the fleet anchored under Cape de la Vela on the last day of the month ; and on the morrow the troops were landed, and without resistance took possession of Rio de la Hacha, " one of the ancientest towns in all the main, although not very large." After a while the Spaniards " came in to talk of a ransom, but not to the general's liking ;" finding this negotiation fruitless, Drake went with some 150 men by water to the Rancheria, six leagues distant, which was the station for the pearl fishery, and there a few soldiers were taken and many negroes, with some store of pearls and other pillage : after this an agreement was made that the Spaniards should pay 24,000 ducats for the ransom of the town, and one prisoner 4000 for his own. Four days elapsed : the ransom was then proffered in pearls ; but these were rated so dear, that Drake refused to accept them, and sent them back, giving the Spaniards four hours to make a more satisfactory payment, or abide the consequence. His proceeding here was more honourable than theirs ; for after a farther delay of two days, the governor having obtained a safe conduct, came into the town, and told Drake plainly that no ransom would be paid ; that the pearls had been offered without his command or consent ; and, in fact, that he had drawn out the time in negotiations for no other intent than to send intelligence to

* Hakluyt, 584. Lediard, 311.

those towns which were not strong enough to defend themselves, that so they might secure their property by carrying it into the woods. However incensed Drake may have been by this avowal (if it were actually made), he respected the word which he had given, and the Spaniard was allowed to depart in safety.*

The vengeance which the invaders took was to burn the town and the Rancheria "clean down to the ground," the churches only excepted, and the house of a lady, who wrote to Drake, requesting him to spare it. Proceeding now along the coast they came to Santa Martha, and found in the town nothing "but the houses swept clean;" but in the course of the night the lieutenant-general of the Spaniards was taken, and a little booty brought in from the woods. That town also they burnt on the 21st, and on the 27th entered the harbour of Nombre de Dios. The place was abandoned at their approach; but about 100 men kept the fort, played upon the invaders with a few small pieces of ordnance, waited till they could give also a volley of small shot, and then, as the English were running to the assault, took to flight, and struck into the woods. "The name of Nombre de Dios was greater than its strength," this fort being its only work of defence, "though they might have made it stronger if they would." So the invaders thought: they soon discovered that the Spaniards relied, with sufficient wisdom, upon the attachment of the natives, the strength of the country, and its climate—being "very unhealthy as any place in the Indies," and its abundant fruits—being "very dangerous to be eaten for breeding of diseases." The removal of property had been complete: nothing of any value had been left; and "there was a show in their shops of great store of merchandise that had been there." Nothing fell into the conqueror's hands except twenty tons of silver, two bars of gold, some money, and other pillage which they found in a little watch-house, on the summit of a hill, in the woods.†

* Hakluyt, 585.

† Ibid. 586.

Drake remained here with the fleet while Baskerville with 750 men went for Panama, on the second day after their arrival. Two days longer Drake waited, apparently, to see whether the Spaniards would ransom the town: they had either been strictly forbidden to do this, or they were too high minded, or, perhaps, did not think it worth ransoming; for, though large, the houses were all built of timber, and the single church, "which was very fair and large, was of no better materials." On the last day of the year he burnt half the town, and the other half on the morrow, together with all the frigates, barks, and galliots, which were in the harbour, or drawn up on the beach, where houses were built over them to keep the pitch from melting. Baskerville, meantime, found the march on which he had entered "so sore as never Englishman marched before:" the way was very narrow, cut through the woods and rocks, and at that season full of mire and water; and the enemy, knowing the ground well, played upon them from every point of most advantage. When they had advanced some ten leagues, according to their computation, which seems to have measured the distance by the difficulty, they came suddenly upon a fort in a marvellous straight way, by which they needs must pass, and from which, before they were aware, a fire was opened upon them, whereby more than twenty men, including four officers, were killed. This check made Baskerville come to a stand; and understanding then that if he succeeded in taking this fort* there were two other such on the way, and that Panama had been rendered very strong, "the Spaniards knowing of their coming long before," he thought it necessary to return; for which resolution, mortifying as it was, there was this farther urgent motive, that his men had no food left, nor any means of getting it. There had either

* Fuller says, "They had so much of this breakfast, they thought they should surfeit of a dinner and supper of the same. No hope of conquest, except with cloying the jaws of death, and thrusting men on the mouth of the cannon. Wherefore, fearing to find the proverb true, that gold may be bought too dear, they returned to their ships."—*Holy State*, 130.

been great improvidence on his part in not being better provided, or Drake had relied upon his old friends the Maroons, who on this occasion failed him. He returned, therefore, with a weary, hungry, and dispirited army to Nombre de Dios on the fourth day.*

Nor was this the last disaster that befell this unfortunate expedition. There was an Indian settlement some half a league inland, toward which a detachment of about 100 men advanced, while Drake and Baskerville were with a watering party in the river about a mile distant. The Indians broke down a bridge to impede their passage, and from an ambush killed an officer, and wounded several others; then taking to flight, fired their own houses, thereby manifesting the deep hatred against the English with which the Spaniards had now possessed them. On the 5th the fleet departed, having tarried there too long, and on the 10th anchored off an island called Escudo, some thirty leagues westward of Nombre de Dios, and nine or ten from the main. There was good anchorage there, on fair sand, in twelve fathoms, and the island was covered with wood, and abounded with excellent water. Here they washed their ships, and set up the rest of their pinnaces. But this also was "a sickly climate, and given to much rain: one of the captains died here, and Drake began to keep his cabin, being extremely sick of a flux." Death was now busy in the fleet. Two more captains and the chief surgeon died of the prevailing sickness. On the night of the 27th, Drake's disease stopped on him, but there was no symptom of amendment. His mind seems to have wandered at three in the morning: "he used some speeches a little before his death, rising and apparelling himself; but, being brought to his bed again, he died within an hour." Some have asserted that he was poisoned†; but of this there is

* Hakluyt, 586, 587.

† "Sir Francis Drake," says Monson, "who was wont to rule fortune, now finding his error, and the difference between the present strength of the Indies and what it was when he first knew it, grew melancholy upon this disappointment, and suddenly (and, I hope, naturally) died at Porto

neither proof nor probability: the climate was poison enough, and a wounded spirit* may, perhaps, have pre-disposed the body to imbibe it.†

The fleet anchored the same day at Puerto Bello; and it was in sight of that place "from whence he had borrowed so large a reputation by his fortunate successes" that Drake received a sailor's funeral‡, his body in a leaden coffin being committed to the deep,

Bello, not far from the place where he got his first reputation." P. 167. — And again (p. 368.), "Fortune did much for him; but at his death she was angry with him: first, in that there was a doubt whether it was natural; secondly (and the best his friends can say), that it was caused by grief, for failing of his expectation in that voyage."

Lope de Vega represents his own people as giving him poison, at the instigation of one of the furies. "Drake," he says, "was aware of this intention, and would taste no food till it had been tasted; upon which they administered the poison *en una medicina*, and by that means reached his heart.

"Mirad la desventura y la ruina
De aquel hombre atrevido y indomable!
Mirad que triste genero de muerte
Del cuerpo el alma a los infiernos vierte."

Dragontea, p.472.

* This was Fuller's opinion, who had heard the particulars from a kinsman of Drake's present in the expedition. His account is, that sir Francis's discontent began "to feed upon him. He conceived that expectation — a merciless usurer — computing each day since his departure, exacted an interest and return of honour and profit proportionable to his great preparations, and transcending his former achievements. He saw that all the good which he had done in this voyage consisted in the evil he had done to the Spaniards afar off; whereof he could present but small visible proofs in England. These apprehensions, accompanying, if not causing, the disease of the flux, wrought his sudden death. And sickness did not so much untie his clothes, as sorrow did rend at once the robe of his mortality asunder." — P. 130.

† Hakluyt, 587, 588.

‡ Instead of an epitaph, these verses were written on him: —

"Where Drake first found, there last he lost his name,
And for a tomb, left nothing but his fame.
His body's buried under some great wave;
The sea, that was his glory, is his grave:
On whom an epitaph none can truly make,
For who can say, 'Here lies sir Francis Drake?'"

"Nor shall I here pass over in silence," Prince adds, "what another in those days added on the same occasion: —

'The waves became his winding sheet, the waters were his tomb;
But for his fame the ocean sea was not sufficient room.'"

The notice of his death in the *Indice Chronologico Peruano* is curious for its double error, and as showing how important a personage he appeared to the Spaniards: — "El año de 96 murió Francisco Draque el Cosario que dio tanto cuidado en ambos mares. Su muerte fue de enfermedad en Portobelo. Su madre le abia parido en un navio en el mar, y fue harto muriese en tierra."

with the solemn service of the English church, rendered more impressive by volleys of musketry, and firing of guns in all the ships of the fleet. He had made his will, appointing Thomas his brother and captain Jonas Bodenham executors, and leaving all his lands to that brother's son, except one manor, which he bequeathed to Bodenham.*

The remaining history of the expedition may briefly be told. Baskerville succeeded to the command of the Admiral, Bodenham to the *Defiance*. They found nothing to plunder at Puerto Bello and little to destroy. A council was held, and it was determined to "turn up again for Santa Martha," if by any means they could, otherwise to go directly for England; their whole numbers at this time, sick and sound, amounting only to 2000. Baskerville put all his prisoners ashore; an act of commendable humanity on his part, for two of them had been liberated on condition of returning with the ransom agreed on for some of the rest, and nothing had been heard of them. It was an act of consideration also for those of his own people who were in the Spaniards' hands. As he was setting sail, there came one with a flag of truce, to say that, if he would tarry eight or ten days, eighteen of his men, who had been taken prisoners and well used, should be brought to him from Panama. The Spaniards were probably sincere in this; but the English supposed their offer was meant only as "a delay to keep them there till the king's forces had come about by sea, as they daily expected;" and, perhaps, they were as desirous of hastening from that deadly region as of escaping a conflict with a far superior force. So they departed; and not being able to hold their course for Santa Martha, fell in off the isle of Pinos with twenty sail, which having been refreshed at the Havannah, were then standing for Cape de los Corrientes. This was a third part of the Carthagena fleet, which was sent out with instructions

* Hakluyt, 588.

to seek the English with its whole force wheresoever they might be heard of. "As soon as they descried us," says the writer, "they kept close upon a tack, thinking to get the wind of us, but we weathered them. And when our admiral with all the rest of our fleet were right in the wind's eye of them, sir Thomas Baskerville putting out the queen's arms, and all the rest of our fleet their bravery, bare room with them, and commanded the Defiance not to shoot, but to keep close by to succour him. The Vice-Admiral of the Spaniards being a greater ship than any of ours, and the best sailor in all their fleet, luffed by and gave the Concord the two first great shot, which she repaid presently again. Thus the fight began: the Bonaventura bare full with her, ringing her such a peal of ordnance and small shot withal, that he left her with torn sides. The Admiral, also, made no spare of powder and shot. But the Defiance, in the midst of the Spanish fleet, thundering off her ordnance and small shot, continued the fight to the end; so that the Vice-Admiral and three or four of her consorts were forced to tack about to the eastward, leaving their Admiral and the rest of the fleet, who came not so hotly into the fight as they did. The fight continued two hours and better. At sunset all the fleet tacked about to the eastward: we continued our course to the westward. That night, some half hour after, their fleet keeping upon their weather quarter, we saw a mighty smoke rise out of one of their great ships which stayed behind, which happened by means of powder, as we think; and presently after she was all on a light fire, and so was consumed, and all burnt, as we might well perceive."*

The English were evidently so weak, that they did not seek a renewal of the action, and the Spaniards were glad to shun it. Baskerville touched at Flores on his way home, and there landed two Portugueze pilots whom they had taken with them from England. They

* Hakluyt, 588, 589.

reached Plymouth early in May ; and as the expedition had utterly disappointed the expectation which had been encouraged of its success, Baskerville seems to have obtained little credit* for the concluding action in which he had deserved much. If Hawkins and Drake had returned, their characters, and the signal services which both had formerly performed, were such, that they would have retained their place in the queen's judgment, and soon have recovered it in the opinion of the people. There were no two commanders in that age whose names inspired their followers with more confidence, or struck so much fear into their enemies. Drake, indeed, has attained the highest degree of fame : no other military or naval name is so universally known among his countrymen ; and it is the only one of modern history which has acquired in local tradition a sort of mythological celebrity. This probably originated with the Spaniards, who may truly be said to have honoured his memory in the bitterness of their enmity towards him. Two days' holydays were kept at Panama for his death and damnation ; and the most popular of the Spanish poets composed an epic poem to revile him. It was likely, according to a Spaniard's belief, that being a heretic Drake should have dealings with the devil ; that notion prevented them from feeling any mortification at his successes, which they imputed to the devil's aid ; and it enhanced their exultation over the failure of his last expedition, which they considered as the triumph of their religion over heresy and magic. The imputation of magic when it reached his own country was readily received, not by the Hispaniolized

* Camden says, " Baskerville and Troughton, the latter in the Vice-Admiral, the other in the Admiral, did so entertain the Spaniards, that with small loss received, and greater given (if a man may believe them), our fleet escaped." (502.) — Monson's account is not more favourable : — " Baskerville," he says, " met and fought with a fleet of Spain ; though not long, by reason of the sickness and weakness of his men. This fleet was sent to take the advantage of ours on its return ; thinking, as indeed it happened, that they should find them both weak and in want : but the swiftness of our ships, in which we had the advantage of the Spaniards, preserved us." (167.) Monson here ascribes to the ships what was due to the courage of the sailors.

Romanists alone, with whose persuasions political and religious it accorded, but by the common people also, who believed that there was a white as well as a black art magic, and that Drake, like Shakspeare's Prospero, and friars Bacon and Bungay, with whom they were better acquainted, employed the spirits under his command only in good works.

The fables which have been grafted upon this belief are fanciful enough for the legend of a British or Irish saint. According to the popular traditions of the western counties, it was not by his skill as an engineer, and the munificent expenditure of the wealth which he had so daringly obtained, that Drake supplied Plymouth with fresh water; but by mounting his horse, riding about Dartmoor till he came to a spring sufficiently copious for his design, then wheeling round, pronouncing some magical words, and galloping back into the town, with the stream in full flow, and forming its own channel at the horse's heels. Nor was it with the queen's ships that he defied and baffled the invincible armada, but by taking a piece of wood and cutting it in pieces over the side of his own vessel, when every chip as it fell into the sea became a man of war. There is another version of this miracle,—that he was playing at *kalcs* (or skittles) on the Hoe at Plymouth, when tidings came that the Spanish fleet was sailing into the harbour, and that he heard the news without the slightest emotion, and played out his game. But when that was ended he called for a block of wood and an axe, bared his arms, chopped the block into smaller pieces, and threw them into the sea, when every piece became a fine ship, and presently formed a fleet by which the enemy were attacked and destroyed.

To sail round the world was in the popular belief an adventure of the most formidable kind, and not to be performed by plain sailing, but by reaching the end of this round flat earth, and there shooting the gulf, which is the only passage from one side of the world to the other: Drake shot the gulf, one day: when on the

other side, he asked his men if any of them knew where they were, a boy made answer that he knew, and that they were then just under London bridge: upon which, stung by jealousy, Drake exclaimed, "Hast thou too a devil? If I let thee live there will then be one greater man than myself;" and with that he threw him overboard. When sir Francis left home to embark for this long voyage, upon taking leave of his wife, he told her that if he did not return within a certain number of years she might conclude him to be dead, and consider herself at liberty to take a second husband. One version fixes the term at seven years, another at ten. During those years, madam Drake, though assailed by many suitors, remained true as Penelope to her absent lord; but after the term had expired, she accepted an offer. One of Drake's ministering spirits, whose charge it was to convey to him any intelligence in which he was nearly concerned, brought him the tidings. Immediately he loaded one of his great guns, and fired it right down through the globe on one side, and up on the other, with so true an aim, that it made its way into the church, between the two parties most concerned, just as the marriage service was beginning. "It comes from Drake!" cried the wife to the now unbridled bridegroom; "he is alive! and there must be neither troth nor ring between thee and me." This is the Devonshire tradition of the "old warrior," as they call him, and his lady. The story in Somersetshire is, that as they were on the way to church a huge round stone fell from the sky, close by the intended bride, and alighted upon the train of her gown. She said, "it came from her husband," and immediately turned back; and it was not long before he returned, and, imitating Guy earl of Warwick, asked alms of her at his own door in disguise: a smile betrayed that he was telling a feigned tale, and the faithful wife recognised him, and fell upon his neck. It is said that the stone still remains upon the estate where it fell; that it is there used as a weight upon the harrow; and is so well contented with this usage, un-

ceremonious as for so extraordinary a relic it may be deemed, that if it be removed from the estate, it always returns thither, no person knows how.

This is the latest instance in which such fictions have been invented unconnected with Romish fraud or sectarian fanaticism ; and it shows how strongly the romantic character of Drake's exploits, and the extraordinary celebrity which he obtained, impressed the imagination of his countrymen. He left a widow, Elizabeth, daughter and sole heiress of sir George Sydenham, of Combe-Sydenham, in the county of Devon : she afterwards married William Courtenay, esq. of Powderham Castle. He had no children, and of his eleven brothers nine also died childless. The property which he left was much diminished by a prosecution which the crown instituted against his executor Thomas Drake, for what is said to have been " a pretended debt : " it would have been becoming in the government to have relinquished even a just claim. Drake, however, though a bountiful man, possessed the virtue of economy ; and the estate which remained placed his nephew in such a station that he was created a baronet by James I., and represented the county of Devon in the beginning of the ensuing reign. Sir Francis himself was twice returned to parliament for Bossiney *alias* Tintagal in Cornwall, afterwards for Plymouth. He was of low stature, but well set ; his chest broad, his hair a fine brown, his beard full and comely, his head remarkably round, his eyes large and clear, his complexion fair, and the expression of his fresh and cheerful countenance open and engaging. His temper was quick, and he is said to have been " hard to be reconciled ; " but the same strength of feeling made him constant in friendship. The gift of eloquence he possessed in a remarkable degree, and was fond of displaying it. One who served under him says that he was ambitious to a fault ; and the vanity which usually accompanies that sin laid him open to flattery : but he encouraged and preferred merit wherever he found it ;

and his affable manners gave him a sure hold upon **the** affections of his men, while they had the most perfect confidence in his unrivalled skill as a seaman, and **his** never-failing promptitude in all cases of emergency. At all times he was a willing hearer of every man's opinion ; but for the most part—as a truly great man for the most part must be—a follower of his own.

Hawkins led the way to the West Indies, Drake to the South Sea ; opening thereby a course for adventurers who at length rivalled the vikingar in atrocity. The effect upon the Spanish colonies was most injurious ; for rising and flourishing settlements were some subverted, and others removed into the interior, to be beyond the reach of a descent : hereby much growing civilisation was destroyed, and the people were withdrawn from the influence of maritime commerce, which is of all things most conducive to its progress. The expeditions undertaken in Elizabeth's reign against the Spaniards are said to have produced no advantage to England in any degree commensurate with the cost of money and expense of life with which they were performed, though great evil was inflicted upon the enemy. If the advantage were to be calculated by the rule of profit and loss, and consisted only in tangible gain, this would be undeniable ; but the effects produced upon the navy and upon the national character must be taken into the account. In these expeditions it was that those seamen were trained by whose skill, so far as human skill was rendered instrumental in our deliverance, the Spanish armada was averted from our shores ; and a succession of such seamen has from that time been uninterruptedly maintained from generation to generation.

THOMAS CAVENDISH, ESQ.

THE most successful of all those adventurers who followed in Drake's track was Thomas Cavendish, who was born to a large possession and a fine mansion at Trimley St. Martin, in the county of Suffolk. Having in a few years almost consumed his whole estate in extravagance, and following the court, he "thought to recover himself by a voyage into the South Sea, at a time when ^{1586.} the war having openly begun it was lawful to make any spoil upon the Spaniards." This resolution was taken while he had yet means enough remaining from the waste of his fortune to build from the stocks one ship of 120 and one of 60 tons, to purchase a bark of 40, fit them out, and victual them for two years; and with 123 persons of all sorts in this little squadron he sailed from Plymouth on the 21st of July, 1586. The names of his vessels were the Desire, the Content, and the Hugh Gallant.

They made the Canaries on the 5th of August, and on the 26th anchored at Sierra Leone. The next day two negroes came aboard, but not without first requiring that a hostage should be sent ashore for their own security; for European villany had taught them the necessity of such a precaution. They informed him by signs that there was a Portugueze ship farther up the river; and the Hugh Gallant was sent after her, but, after going three or four leagues up, returned for want of a pilot, "for the harbour runneth up three or four leagues more, and is of a marvellous breadth, and very dangerous." On the morrow some of the men went ashore, and played and danced all the forenoon with the negroes, with a view to learning some good news of the ship on which they had fixed their hopes. They spied a Por-

tugueze among the bushes, whom they seized and carried aboard: the account of the navigation which they obtained from him convinced them that it was prudent to leave the ship unmolested; "Whereupon," says master Francis Pretty, of Ely in Suffolk, a gentleman employed in the voyage, "we went not to seek her, because we knew he told us the truth; for we bound him, and made him fast, and so examined him." Whether this means that they tortured him is uncertain, and is of little consequence to the character of this commander. Cavendish landed the next day with some seventy men, and for no assigned provocation attacked the negro town, burnt some of the houses, and took what little spoil was worth taking. In consequence, when his people were watering and washing "very quietly, afterwards, they were suddenly attacked, many of them hurt, and one mortally wounded."*

They now sailed for Brazil, went in between the island of St. Sebastians and the shore, landed, and remained there from the 1st of November to the 23d, building a pinnace, repairing their casks, and completing their water. While they were thus employed, a canoe, bound from Rio de Janeiro to San Vicente, fell into their hands. One Portugueze was on board, with six naked Indian slaves. The Portugueze knew the master of the Admiral, who had been at St. Vicente in the Minion of London five years before. There was an Englishman residing then at that port, probably the first of his nation who settled in Brazil: by his means Cavendish thought to obtain fresh provisions, little caring to what after account his countryman might be called for communicating with him; so pretending to the Portugueze that they were merchants, and would gladly traffic with him, he set him at liberty, on condition of his carrying a letter to Whital, and returning with an answer, or sending one in ten days. The distance was about twenty leagues. But the merchant

* Hakluyt, iii. 803, 804. Burney, iv. 84, 85.

seems to have been too wary to hold any intercourse with so suspicious a squadron: nothing more was heard of the messenger; and Cavendish, having despatched his business, sailed toward the south, and on the 17th of December anchored in a harbour, which he named Port Desire, the discovery of which is the only one of any importance that can be attributed to him.* This being a good place for laying the ships aground, they “graved and trimmed them” there, finding, meantime, “marvellous good meat” in the young seals, which, “being roasted or boiled, were hardly to be known from lamb or mutton;” and in the penguins, which burrowed in the ground like rabbits.†

The greatest inconvenience in this port was the want of fresh water. The best they could obtain was by digging, and that proved brackish; and some of their people, while engaged at this well, were attacked with bows and arrows by about fifty Indians. Two of them were severely wounded, and the savages were pursued in vain by Cavendish himself and some twenty men. These Indians had old wrongs to avenge, and nothing is more tenaciously remembered in that stage of society. On the 6th of January Cavendish arrived at the entrance of the straits, and in the evening anchored near what is called the first Angostura, or Strait of the Straits. During the night lights were observed on the north shore, apparently intended as signals to the ships, and lights accordingly were shown as answers. In the morning Cavendish went himself in a boat to that side of the strait, and three men were seen on the shore waving a white flag. Upon this the boat stood in: it was asked, in Spanish, what ships they were? and answered in the same language that they were English, bound for Peru. Bitterly, no doubt, disappointed by this reply, the Spaniards were silent, till the English spokesman told them that if they chose to embark, the general would carry them to Peru. To

* Burney, 93.

† Hakluyt, 804, 805. Burney, 66.

this the reply was, that they would not trust themselves to the English for fear they should be thrown into the sea. The interpreter made answer they might very well trust themselves, for the English were better Christians than they. With this the boat put off, leaving them to abide by their own determination. But they presently considered that it were better at any risk to embark than remain where they must inevitably perish; and they called after the boat, which put back, took one of them aboard, Tomé Hernandez by name, and again pushed off, not receiving the other two. Hernandez entreated that they also might be taken, in reply to which Cavendish enquired how many Spaniards there were in those parts? The answer was, twelve more men and three women. Cavendish then bade him tell his companions to go to them, and bid them all come and embark, and he would wait for them. With this joyful message the poor men went their way. But when Cavendish got on board again, the wind was fair for advancing up the straits: he ordered the anchors to be taken up; and not thinking it proper to lose, even for two or three hours, a fair wind, for the sake of humanity, sailed away.*

These men belonged to an expedition, which, in consequence of Drake's appearance in the South Sea, had been sent from Spain to fortify the strait, and form settlements there. The viceroy of Peru, D. Francisco de Toledo, apprehending, from the daring conduct of such an enemy, and that enemy an English heretic, that nothing less than the Spanish dominion in those seas, with the property, bodies, and souls of the inhabitants was at stake †, had with great personal exertions and extraordinary speed despatched captain Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa, with two ships, to survey the strait, and take especial notice of all places therein which appeared convenient for a settlement, or to be

* Viage al Estreche, &c. Declaracion de Tomé Hernandez, xvi.—xviii. Burney, ii. 67—70. Hakluyt, 806.

† Viage, &c. p. 4.

fortified for guarding the passage. When this service was performed he was to send one ship back with advices to Lima, and proceed in the other to Spain to lay the business before the king and the supreme council of the Indies. Part of his instructions was, that he was to take and carry away some of the natives, in order to acquire by that means some knowledge of their language. Sarmiento, though abandoned by his consort, completed with great diligence and ability the service on which he was sent. He marked two points near the eastern entrance, in the narrowest part, as well adapted for defence; the breadth at the westernmost being a geographical league and a half, at the easternmost less than half a league; and he made it known to all men by a declaration, a copy of which was buried there in an earthen jar at the foot of a cross, which he erected pursuant to the usual form of taking possession, that "having, in conformity to the viceroy's instructions, taken our most serene Lady, the Virgin St. Mary, for the advocate and patroness of this voyage, for that reason, and because of the wonders which, through her intercession, had been wrought in its behalf, he had given to the strait formerly called after Magellan the name of Estrecho de la Madre de Dios,—the Strait of the Mother of God." *

When Sarmiento arrived in Spain he proposed that both shores of the eastern Angostura should be fortified, whereby, in his opinion, the passage would be completely defended; and he represented that there were places within the strait convenient for the settlement of colonies. The duke of Alva opposed the project, though his own son had originated it: "if a ship," he said, "only carried out anchors and cables enough for her security against the storms in that part of the world, she would go well laden." But it was believed by the Spanish government at that time that the English were making preparations for establishing themselves in the strait,

* Viage, 239. Burney, ii. 39.

and so taking possession of the passage ; and under this belief an armament of twenty-three ships and 3500 men was equipped at Seville for South America. Diego Flores de Valdes was appointed commander ; and with the whole fleet, which was formed into three divisions, each for a separate service, he was first to sail for the straits, and there assist Sarmiento in planting the projected colony, for the use of which one division was allotted. That done, another division was to proceed to Chili, 1581. and the third put back to Brazil. This expedition sailed at the autumnal equinox, against the pilots' remonstrance, but by peremptory orders from the government ; and on the eighth day after leaving Seville, while yet near their own coast, five of the ships went down in a violent storm from the S. W., and 800 men perished. The remainder put back to Cadiz in distress, two of them being totally disabled for service.*

It was December before the fleet, now reduced in number to sixteen, was again ready for sea ; and as the season was thought too far advanced for their proceeding directly to the strait, they were ordered to winter at Rio de Janeiro. Sarmiento and other officers objected against this port, because the ships, while lying there, would be liable to much injury from the worm. This objection, like that of the pilots at their first outset, was disregarded. The fleet sailed, stopped a month at the Cape de Verds, and took from thence a disease which carried off 150 men during the passage to Brazil, where they arrived toward the end of March : as many more died while they remained at the Rio, and many of the intended settlers (happily for themselves) deserted, and remained in a good country. Here the frames of a brigantine and launch, intended for service in the strait, were set up, and those of two wooden houses were made for immediate use on their arrival there. But the evil which Sarmiento anticipated took place ; the ships were attacked by the worm ; several

* Burney, 45, 46.

became leaky ; one was abandoned as unserviceable ; and when, at the end of November, the fleet proceeded on its destination, the brigantine and launch were lost in the first boisterous weather ; and one of the largest ships, of 500 tons, with most of the stores for the new colony on board, and 350 persons, twenty of whom had embarked as female settlers, sprung so fatal a leak, that before any assistance could reach her she went down. Disheartened by this last calamity, Valdes put back toward Brazil, and, before he reached the island of St. Catalina, another of his ships was wrecked on the coast. After some dispute between the commanders it was at length agreed to make another attempt ; but three of the largest ships were now in too shattered a state for such a service, and they were left here with 300 of the sick and least serviceable men, and with orders to return to the Rio.*

Once more this unfortunate fleet set forth for the strait, and as they were leaving the island another ship got on a bank, and was wrecked. Sarmiento's vessel became leaky and unfit for proceeding : it was again taken into consideration what should be done, and, against the opinion of Valdes, the determination was to persevere ; but it was agreed that the part of the force which was intended for Chili, and which was now contained in three vessels, should make for the Plata, and from thence proceed to their destination by land. The remainder of the fleet, now reduced to five, arrived on the 7th of February in the mouth of the strait, and cast anchor in the first Angostura. During the night they were forced out by a gale of wind ; and after beating about till the end of March, without being able to regain an entrance, Valdes returned in despair to Rio de Janeiro. There they found four ships from Spain, laden with stores for their use, and bringing letters which exhorted the chiefs to perseverance. Valdes, however, quitted the command, and sailed for Europe, leaving

* Burney, 47, 48.

Diego de la Ribera to act in his stead. On the 2d of December the expedition again sailed, consisting now of five ships and 530 souls. They arrived safely in the strait on the 1st of February, passed the first Angostura, and anchored between it and the second; but the ebb tide forced them from their anchors, and carried them back into the open sea. They anchored again close to Cape de las Virgenes, and because Ribera would risk no farther loss of time, there they began to disembark. Three hundred persons had landed, when, on the 5th, a gale of wind compelled the ships to quit the anchorage; on regaining it one of them ran aground within the entrance, and was wrecked: the people, artillery, and provisions were saved, but the provisions damaged. Before all the stores could be landed, Ribera, with three ships, left the strait during the night, and returned to it no more. He has been reproached as if he had wilfully abandoned the settlers, and sailed for Spain; but it is more likely that he was forced from his anchors, and that his people, finding the opportunity favourable, insisted upon bending their course for Spain.*

Sarmiento was now left with one ship, 400 men, thirty women, and eight months' provision. He laid the foundation of a town near the entrance, on the north side, and named it the City of the Name of Jesus, *la Ciudad del Nombre de Jesus*. Leaving Andres de Viedma in the command there, with 150 men, he sent the ship to Point St. Anna, which is on the same shore, about twenty-five Spanish leagues within the first Angostura, while he, with 100 men, proceeded thither by land. During a difficult and inauspicious march skirmishes took place with the Indians, whom he should have sought by every possible means to conciliate: several of his own people were wounded, and one of their chiefs killed. Near the point he founded his second town, which he called San Felipe: the situation was well chosen. There was a port with good anchorage, from whence a boat could

* Burney, 50—52.

reach the first Angostura in one tide: there was a fresh water river, the country was well wooded, the port abounded with fish, and the shore with birds; but the snow which, during the month of April, fell for fifteen days, without intermission, made the unfortunate Spaniards apprehend what sort of winter they might expect in this inhospitable region. This, however, was to be their abiding place: they surrounded it with a strong palisade, and at each of its three entrances, one towards the port, the other towards the interior, planted two pieces of artillery. Sarmiento, nevertheless, found it necessary for his own security to sleep every night on board, lest the dissatisfaction which was felt toward him as the promoter of so disastrous an undertaking should break into open mutiny, and end in his destruction. In fact, he was secretly informed that a soldier, by name Juan Rodriguez, and Alonso Sanchez, a secular priest, had formed a conspiracy for murdering him, seizing the ship, and escaping in it to Brazil. Of this information he made such good use, that he got Rodriguez, the priest, and three others of the ring-leaders, on board, and charged them with their guilt. They confessed it: the four lay culprits were taken ashore, labelled as traitors on their shoulders; they were beheaded backwards for the greater infamy, and their heads exposed upon poles. The priest was kept prisoner on board. This execution is said to have made the settlers quiet and peaceable; and Sarmiento, with thirty men, left them for Nombre de Jesus on the 25th of May: his intention was to give directions for fortifying the Angosturas, to convey more settlers to San Felipe, and then sail for Chili in order to obtain supplies.*

He reached Nombre de Jesus, was driven from his anchorage, and, after contending twenty days against the weather, saw that his only course must be to steer for Brazil, and there obtain provisions, which it was now

* Burney, 52—54. Tomé Hernandez, viii.—xiii.

impossible for him to seek in Chili. It was midwinter in those regions when he arrived at Rio de Janeiro. There he procured a bark, loaded her with meal, and, leaving directions for her to sail at the proper season, proceeded along the coast in search of further supplies : his ship was driven ashore and wrecked, many of the crew perished, and he himself with difficulty escaped on a plank. He procured another bark, freighted her with necessaries for his colony, and sailed in her from the Rio : but when he had got as far as 39° S. a storm compelled him to throw every thing over board, and return to the port from whence he had departed more than seven weeks before ; and where he found that the vessel which he had first despatched had put back without effecting her passage. Hitherto Sarmiento, when he reflected upon his multiplied disappointments, could call none but the elements unkind ; but the Portuguese governors were now weary of his solicitations : they had learned from Spain that both he and his undertaking were out of favour there ; Ribera having reported on his return that the strait was more than a league across in its narrowest part, and that if a ship had wind and current in her favour no ordnance on shore could stop her. Sarmiento, therefore, as a last resource, sailed for Spain, there to justify his own statements, and, it may be hoped, to urge upon the government the duty of taking some measures for the relief of the miserable settlers. After his departure, the governor of the Rio sent one ship with supplies for them ; but this vessel also was driven back, and no farther effort was made for their relief, either by the colonial governors or Spain : those in America, upon whom any responsibility might be supposed to lie, transferred it in their own minds each from himself to another ; and all, no doubt, rested in the persuasion, that the Spanish government, having planted the colony, would take all necessary measures for preserving it. But in Spain ample provision having been made in fitting out the expedition, the possibility of so many losses, and of such

repeated failures, had evidently never been considered as it ought. If Sarmiento's ill fortune had not still pursued him, his personal representations might, probably, have produced some effect in Spain. But he was captured by some English cruisers off the Azores, and carried to England; and though Elizabeth, it is said, gave him his liberty, after an interview in which she conversed with him in Latin, provided him with a passport, and presented him with 1000 crowns, various misadventures retarded for some years his return to his own country. And from the time he left the straits no vessel reached them till Cavendish appeared there.*

There are few tales in colonial history more calamitous than the fate of this forlorn and forsaken colony. Sarmiento had left them at the end of May. In August (which corresponds to our February, and is, therefore, one of the severest months in that miserable climate,) the settlers at Nombre de Jesus thought it necessary to remove to San Felipe. Thither, accordingly, they went by land; but Viedma, who commanded there, having no provisions for such increased numbers, sent 200 men back under Juan Iñiguez, to support themselves as they could by picking up shell fish, and in other ways, and to be on the look out for a ship with succours. Spring and summer passed, and no relief: winter was approaching; and lest those at San Felipe, who had thus long endured, should irremediably perish of hunger, as they must if they remained there, Viedma built two boats, embarked in them with all the survivors there, then reduced to fifty men, five women, a friar, Sarmiento's nephew, Juan Suarez, and Viedma himself. They had proceeded some six leagues toward Nombre de Jesus, when one of the boats got upon a reef, and was lost. The people were saved; but in so hopeless a situation that it was deemed best for Viedma to return in the other boat with the friar and twenty men, and for the remainder to remain where

* Burney, 54—56. Hernandez, xiv.—xviii.

they got to shore, hut themselves there, and find provisions as they could. The seals and penguins, of which our navigators made such use, were inaccessible to them; and they divided themselves into small parties of three or four, for the better chance of finding wherewith to prolong a wretched existence. When summer came, and Viedma collected the survivors, only fifteen men and three women were left; and with these Viedma was endeavouring to reach Nombre de Jesus when the English ships appeared. They had passed on their way many dead bodies of their countrymen.*

The utter want of compassion with which Cavendish left these poor wretches to their fate, after he had promised to take them on board, excited no animadversion in his own times. The single Spaniard, who was fortunate enough to escape with him, relates it without any expression of feeling: the weather was fair for sailing, he says, and he did not choose to wait. Whether there were any survivors at that time at Nombre de Jesus is not known: probably not; for it may well be supposed that they also would have made signals to the ships. An English vessel which entered the strait in the year following took one Spaniard on board near San Felipe: he had supported himself with his gun, having long lived in a house by himself, being the last survivor of these poor colonists; and, except Hernandez, the only one who escaped from the deplorable situation in which their government had first placed and then abandoned them. All that is known of the others, whom Cavendish might have saved, is that their intention was to travel towards the Plata, and that they must have perished on the way.

At San Felipe, which had been founded for the sole purpose of securing the passage of the strait against all foreigners, the English ships "watered and wooded well and quietly, and remained there five days thus employed." The journalist of Cavendish's voyage says,

* Burney, 71—73.

“ they had contrived their city very well, and seated it in the best place of the straits for wood and water.” By his account there were four forts, each having one cast piece : the pieces had been dismantled and buried, but the English dug for them, and “ had them all.”—“ They had built their churches apart,” he says, “ and they had laws very severe,—” of which the gibbet bore certain proof. But all attempts to raise provision having failed, their stores being consumed, and game rendered so scarce and wild that it was hopeless for men, in their weak state, to go in search of it, they had “ died like dogs in their houses, and in their clothes.” Thus the survivors, when they took their miserable departure, had left them ; and thus they were found by Cavendish, who named the place, in memorial of their fate, Port Famine. That name it still retains in English charts ; the Spaniards themselves have adopted it, and *Puerto de Hambre* marks in their maps the place where the Ciudad de San Felipe had been founded !

Cavendish buried one of his men on the northern shore. This was the only loss that he sustained in the passage ; but he acted inconsiderately toward the natives, believing them to be treacherous cannibals, on the report of Hernandez, and seeing that they had fastened knives and pieces of swords to their spears.* Instead of endeavouring to make them understand that the English were not their enemies, like the Spaniards, he ordered his men to fire upon them after some friendly intercourse had previously taken place ; and in this unprovoked attack many were killed. He entered the South Sea on the 24th of February, with a favourable wind ; and in the middle of March a party landed on the isle of Mocha, near the coast of Chili, “ where the Indians attacked them with bows and arrows, but were marvellous wary of the calivers.” The English supposed these to be Araucans, whose heroic efforts in defence of their country the Spaniards themselves had rendered famous ;

* Hakluyt, 807, Burney, 78.

recording at the same time the magnanimity of their enemies and their own atrocious cruelty. Cavendish landed next on the island of St. Maria with seventy men, where they were mistaken for Spaniards, submissively received, and "plentifully supplied with wheat and barley ready threshed, as fair, as clean, and every way as good as any in England; and with potato roots very good to eat," all stored in vessels, and lodged in storehouses, as tribute for the Spaniards, who had erected a church there. In addition to these welcome supplies, the Indians brought them hogs, fowls, maize, and dried dog-fish; and Cavendish, in return, entertained some of the chief people on board, and made them merry with wine.*

Missing Valparaiso, where he meant to have stopped, Cavendish anchored about seven leagues N. of that port, in Puerto de Quintero. A herdsman who was sleeping on the brow of the hill at this time awoke; and seeing three ships, was observed to catch a horse that was grazing near, and to ride away as fast as he could. The general landed with thirty men: before he had been an hour on shore, three horsemen came galloping toward them sword in hand; but stopped short at respectful distance. He sent two of his people with Hernandez toward them: they made signs that only one should approach, and without arms. Hernandez went; and after much talk returned, telling Cavendish that he had parlied with them concerning provisions, and had been promised as much as might be wanted. He was sent back to complete the negotiation, and a man with him; but, as before, the Spaniards made signs that they would not hold parley with two persons; Hernandez was again trusted; and being at some distance from the English, after a few words he leaped up behind one of his countrymen, and rode off; "for all his deep and damnable oaths which he had made," says Pretty, "continually to our general and all

* Hakluyt, 808.

his company, never to forsake him, but to die on his side before he would be false. Our general, seeing how he was dealt withal, filled water all that day with good watch, and carried it aboard; and night being come, he determined next day to send into the country to find their town, and take the spoil of it, and fire it if it could be found." In this he failed; the party which was ordered upon the service discovering nothing but great store of cattle which were "wonderful wild, and of horse which were unhandled," and of dogs as wild as the cattle, on which they fed. They returned after a whole day's march, without loss, though without success in their search for the town. But on the morrow, as they were carelessly watering about a quarter of a mile from the shore, a strong party of horsemen, who had been too cautious to attack them when they were on their guard the preceding day, surprised them, and twelve* of the English were cut off; of these three appear to have been slain, and six of the prisoners were hanged at Santiago.

After this loss Cavendish remained in the road four days, and watered in despite of the Spaniards, with good watch and ward. On the 23d he took a small bark coming out from Arica which he kept, and named the *George*. The crew took to their boat, and were pursued by the admiral's pinnace into Arica road: they got ashore, and the pinnace laid aboard a great ship of 100 tons, in which, however, neither men nor goods were found. The Admiral and the *Hugh Gallant* followed into the road, but the *Content* was out of sight,

* Pretty states the loss at twelve, and gives the names of all and of the ships to which they belonged. He says the prisoners were rescued, and that some twenty-four Spaniards were killed in the skirmish, which continued an hour. Hernandez says no Spaniard was hurt, twelve English were killed, and nine taken; and he mentions the execution of six of these; the others, perhaps, called themselves Roman Catholics. Admiral Burney thinks this may have been an act of vengeance for the Spaniards in the strait, whom Cavendish, when he might so easily have saved them, had left to perish there. There could be no plea for putting them to death as pirates, because Spain and England were then at open war. But the law of nations was as little regarded by the one people as the other, when there happened to be both inclination and opportunity to violate it.

otherwise Cavendish "would resolutely have landed to take the town, whatsoever had come of it." The *Content* had been more pleasantly employed than in attacking a town which was likely to be well defended:—she had found at a place where some Spaniards had landed a whole ship's lading of Spanish wine, and tarried to take on board as much as she could conveniently carry, then in the course of the same day joined the squadron. By that time Cavendish perceived that Arica was well prepared for defence, found reason for believing that the treasure had been carried away and secured upon the alarm of his approach, and saw that there was no landing without the loss of many men; "wherefore he gave over that enterprise." However, he fetched out another bark, in spite of their forts, and then sent a flag of truce to ask if they would redeem their ship. He did this in hope that he might recover some of his men who had been captured, otherwise he would have made no offer of parley; but their answer was that they had received special orders neither to buy any ship nor ransom any man on pain of death: upon this he burnt the ship, sunk the bark, and so departed, having been three days in the road.*

On the 27th they took a small bark sent from a place near Quintero, where Cavendish had lost his men, with despatches concerning him to Lima. There were on board three Spaniards, an old Fleming, and one George a Greek, who was "a reasonable pilot for all the coast of Chili." In obedience to their orders, and to an oath which had been administered to them by some friars before they set sail, these men, as soon as they saw themselves in danger, threw the despatches overboard; but Cavendish "wrought so with them," that they confessed their errand: "But he was fain," says his journalist, "to cause them to be tormented with their thumbs in a winch, and to continue them at several times with extreme pain. Also he made the old Fleming believe that he would hang him; and the

* Hakluyt, 809, 810. Burney, 82.

rope being about his neck, he was pulled up a little from the hatches; and yet he would not confess, choosing rather to die than be perjured. In the end it was confessed by one of the Spaniards; whereupon we burnt the bark, and carried the men with us." This cruelty was a work of supererogation, for which there was no such pretext as in those days was thought to justify such actions. After plundering two little settlements, the ships were all separated for awhile, during which time the Hugh Gallant, with sixteen hands, captured, after half an hour's fight, a ship of 300 tons with a crew of twenty-four men. They took from her her fore-sails, and left her, "seven leagues from land, very leaky and ready to sink:"—it is to be hoped the men were taken out. On the 17th of May the fleet was again collected; two other prizes meantime had been captured, of which one "would have been worth 20,000*l.* in England, or in any other place of Christendom, where it might have been sold." They took out as much as they could stow, and burnt the rest with the ship. The men and women, "who were not killed," were set on shore.*

The next enterprise was at Paita. Cavendish anchored in the road, landed with sixty or seventy men, and drove the inhabitants out of the town, "which was very well built, and marvellous clean kept in every street, with a town-house in the midst, and to the number of 200 houses at the least." This flourishing place he burnt to the ground, he and his people deriving no other advantage from this exploit than twenty-five pounds' weight of silver among them, and the satisfaction of reflecting upon the mischief they had done. Thence they went to the island of Puna, where most of the cables used in the South Sea were made: there they sunk a ship "with all her furniture," which was lying ready to be hauled ashore, being in "a special good placé for that purpose." It was learnt from an Indian, whom they took at sea, that the lord of the

* Hakluyt, 810, 811. Burney, 83.

island, with most of the inhabitants, had fled to the mainland, seeing his fleet, when (luckily for them) it was becalmed; and that they had taken with them treasure to the amount of 100,000 crowns. This lord was an Indian cacique, who, "by reason of his pleasant habitation, and of his great wealth, had got a beautiful Spanish woman for his wife." His "sumptuous house," which stood by the water-side, was "marvellous well contrived, with very many singular good rooms and chambers; and out of every chamber was framed a gallery, with a stately prospect to the sea on one side, and into the island on the other, with a marvellous great hall below, and a very great storehouse at one end, filled with jars of pitch, and bass for making cables. On one side was a fair garden, in which were fig trees, that bore continually, pompions, melons, cucumbers, radishes, rosemary, and thyme, with many other herbs and fruits. There was a well in this garden, and a cotton plantation round it. On the other side was an orchard, stocked with oranges, sweet and sour, lemons, limes, and pomegranates. Hard by was a very large and great church, with five bells. There were at least 200 houses in the town, near the palace, and as many in one or two towns more upon the island, which is almost as big as the Isle of Wight."*

"This great cacique," says Pretty, "doth make all the Indians upon the island to work and to drudge for him." But if the description be not overcharged, he had brought his island to a degree of civilisation which had not then been exceeded in any part of Spanish America, if it has since. "The Spanish woman, his wife," he continues, "is honoured as a queen, and never goeth on the ground upon her feet; holding it too base a thing for her. But when her pleasure is to take the air, or to go abroad, she is always carried, in a conveyance like unto a horse-litter, upon four men's shoulders, with a veil or canopy over her, for the sun or the wind;

* Hakluyt, 811—813.

having her gentlewomen still attending about her, with a great troop of the best men of the island." Cavendish had been told by an Indian prisoner that he might easily take the cacique, and the treasure which he had carried off, for the place to which he had retreated consisted of only three or four houses, without any means of defence. Relying upon this, he crossed over to the mainland; and on reaching the place where he designed to land, found there four or five large balsas, which had newly arrived, laden with provisions. Marvelling "what they were and what they meant" Cavendish commanded the Indian to speak the truth, as he valued his life. The poor wretch was bound fast, for torture or for execution, — he might well suppose, — or both: he answered, "being very much abashed," says Pretty, "as well as our company were, that he neither knew whence they came, nor who they might be; for there was never a man in any one of the balsas; but he supposed they might have brought threescore soldiers, who he had heard were to go to Guayquil (six leagues from the island), and reinforce the garrison of 100 men, for the better protection of some king's ships then on the stocks there. Not discouraged at this, Cavendish animated his company to the exploit, and marched by night, "along a most desert path in the woods," till he reached the place of which the Indian had truly informed him.* But the cacique had kept a good look-out; the people and the treasure were gone. It would have been rash to pursue the one, and hopeless to search for the other in the woods and in the darkness; and the adventurers were fain to console themselves for their disappointment by regaling upon the food, which they found at the fire, prepared for the cacique's supper.

So little did Cavendish apprehend any activity on the part of the Spaniards, notwithstanding they had received this reinforcement, that he laid the Admiral aground at Puna, to examine and clean her bottom; keeping, how-

* Hakluyt, 812.

ever, continual watch and ward on the cacique's great house night and day. In an adjacent island he discovered a great quantity of stores which had been removed thither for concealment, with all the cacique's "household stuff, and his chamber-hangings, which were of Cordovan leather, all gilded over, and painted very fair and rich." A Spanish wife had inspired him with a taste for the refinements and luxuries of Spanish civilisation; and he seems to have inspired the Spaniards with more promptitude and resolution than at this time they were wont to display. The English had got their ship into the water again; when, early one morning, every one of the watch being gone abroad marauding, "some one way, some another, some for hens, some for sheep, some for goats," about 100 Spaniards, who had landed during the night, with all the Indians of the island, came upon them; and of twenty Englishmen who were ashore only eight escaped. In the course of the day, Cavendish landed, with seventy men, to revenge their loss, drove the enemy from the town, set fire to it, and burned it to the ground. He burned, also, four ships which were building on the stocks; burned the church, and brought away the bells, and "made havoc" of the fields, orchards, and gardens; then hauled the Vice-Admiral ashore "to grave at the same place in despite of the Spaniards," and repaired his pinnacle, which they had set on fire, and in which one of his men had perished in the flames. There can be no excuse for the negligence which allowed his people to be a second time surprised, and little for the ferocious spirit of revenge in which he laid waste what, when in evil hour he landed there, was a happy and an improving island. A hundred years* afterwards

* In Dampier's time there was only one Indian town in the island, consisting of about twenty houses, and a small church. The Indians were all seamen, and the only pilots in those seas. "The houses stand all on posts ten or twelve foot high, with ladders on the outside to go up into them. I did never see the like building any where but among the Malaysians in the East Indies. They are thatched with palmeto leaves, and their chambers well boarded; in which last they excel the Malaysians." i. 151.—What a contrast to the cacique's mansion, with its Cordovan hangings, and its gardens!

it had not recovered from the devastation then committed.*

Having remained at Puna eleven days, Cavendish departed on the 5th of June, sunk the *Hugh Gallant* for want of men, proceeded to the coast of New Spain, and there captured a ship in which was one Michael Sancius, a Marseillois by birth, who was one of the best coasters in the South Sea, and who was, therefore, detained "to serve their turn in watering along the coast." He served it another way, by giving them news that a great ship, called the *Santa Anna*, was expected at Acapulco from the Philippines. There were six men more in the prize, whom they took out, together with the sails, ropes, and firewood, and then set the vessel on fire. She was going along the coast to give the alarm; and another vessel, upon the same service, came to the same fate, except that the men got to shore. Cavendish next landed at Guatulco, a town of about 100 houses, which he plundered and burned. In the custom house, "a very fair and large" building, they found 600 bags of indigo, valued at forty crowns each; and 400 bags of cacao, each worth ten crowns. "These cacaos go among them for meat and money: 150 of them are in value one real of plate in ready payment. They are very like an almond, but are nothing so pleasant in taste: they eat them, and make drink of them." The Spaniards found these nuts in use as currency among the Mexicans, and learned from that people the preparation of chocolate, which every where retains its Mexican name.†

Cavendish burned the church here as he had done at Puna. He might have known that by burning a church he excited, among the Spaniards, greater horror and hatred against England than was felt there when the Spaniards burned an Englishman; sacrilege being a crime less frequent in the one country than cruelty in the other, and a crime by which even criminals were shocked. Advantage was made of this feeling at

* Hakluyt, 813, 814. Burney, 84.

† Hakluyt, 814.

Guatulco in another way. There was a wooden cross there, five fathoms in height, which, the Spaniards say, Cavendish's men pulled down, smeared it with pitch, piled dry reeds around it, and then endeavoured to consume it by fire. The reeds burned and the pitch,—not so the cross: more and more combustibles were thrown on; and when the invaders re-embarked, after three days' tarriance, during all which time they had continued their vain endeavours, they left it under a heap of ashes and burning brands unconsumed. And when the Spaniards returned to their ruined dwellings, they found it brightened and beautified by its fiery trial, and were consoled for their own injuries by seeing that Heaven had manifested itself in the protection of the holy rood. The cross, before it underwent this assay, had been in good odour: it was made of a fragrant wood which was not known to grow within forty leagues of that place: it had been presumed that one of the apostles had planted it there, and that one was supposed to have been St. Andrew. Now, however, when it had merits enough of its own, the likelier opinion was preferred that it had been erected when Cortes built some ships there for a voyage of discovery. The report of its miraculous preservation spread far and wide; and from all parts devotees who could come to visit it, and to carry away fragments, the smallest splinter of which, if cast into the sea, stilled a tempest; if thrown into a fire, quenched the flames; and if put in water, changed it into a sovereign medicine. This waste of its substance was not miraculously supplied; and when about a fifth part only was left, the bishop of Antiquera removed it to his city, built a chapel for it, and enshrined it there with all possible honours upon a holyday appointed for the occasion. There its history continued to be told to the reproach of the English name.*

Aug. Sailing from thence, Cavendish overshot the haven of
2. Acapulco; and on the 24th of August he landed with

* Torquemada, l. xvi. c. 28. pp. 205, 206.

thirty men at Puerto de Navidad, where they surprised a man in his bed who had been sent with letters to give the alarm along the coast of Nueva Galicia: they took his despatches, killed his horse, set fire to the town, burnt two ships on the stocks, and re-embarked. In the river of Santiago his people dragged for pearls, and took "some quantity;" and in the Indian town of Acatlan, from which the inhabitants fled at their approach, they "defaced" a church, the commander being of the party. The Marseillois by this time had entered thoroughly into the interests of his captors; he guided a party of them from Chaccalla Road to a settlement some two leagues inland, "by a most villanous path through the woods and wilderness:" there they surprised three householders, with their wives and children, some Indians, a Portugueze, and a Spanish carpenter; all whom they bound and carried to the seaside. The women were then ordered to fetch "plantains, lemons, oranges, pine-apples, and other fruits, whereof they had abundance;" and when this was done the rest were liberated, except the Portugueze and the carpenter. They tarried five days at the little woody island of St. Andrew, where they dried and salted as many birds as they thought fit, and killed abundance of seals and of yguanas, which they describe as "a kind of serpents, with four feet and a long sharp tail; strange to them that have not seen them, but very good meat." In another week they reached the bay of Mazatlan: "there is a very great river within, but it is barred at the mouth; upon the north side of the bar withal is good fresh water, but there is very evil filling of it, because, at low water, it is shoal half a mile off the shore." Their intention of watering here was disappointed, and what little fruit they obtained was "not without danger."*

Sept.

9.

Sept.

24.

They trimmed their ships and new built their pinnace at an island about a league from this bay; "and there," says Pretty, "we found fresh water, by the

* Hakluyt, 815.

assistance of God, in that our great need, and where no water nor sign of water was before to be perceived ; otherwise we had gone back twenty or thirty leagues for it, which might have been occasion that we might have missed our prey we had so long waited for. But God raised one Flores, a Spaniard, which was also a prisoner with us, to make a motion to dig in the sands. Now our general, having had experience once before of the like, commanded to put his motion in practice ; and in digging three foot deep we found very good and fresh water : so we watered our ships, and might have filled 1000 tons more, if we had would." How much suffering might have been averted, and how many lives saved, had it been generally known that filtered water may always thus easily be obtained !

- Oct. 9. Cavendish now quitted the coast of New Spain, and sailed for the south cape of California. Within that cape is the bay called Aguada Segura, into which " a fair fresh river falls." They watered there, and lay off and on from the 14th of October to the 4th of November, looking out for their expected prey, " the winds hanging still westerly." On that day, between seven and eight in the morning, the Admiral's trumpeter going into the top, espied a sail standing in for the cape. The cheerful tidings were presently verified ; and Cavendish, " who was no less glad than the cause required, ordered the whole company to put all things in readiness." That done, he gave chase some three or four hours, standing with the best advantage, and working for the wind: in the afternoon he came up with her, gave a broadside with his great ordnance, and a volley of small shot, and presently laid the enemy aboard. The size of the ship, 700 tons, made it evident that it was the galleon for which they had been lying in wait, the Santa Anna, from the Philippines, with the king's treasure on board ; and, in his eagerness for such a prize, Cavendish began the fight with more spirit than discretion. When his men, who were not more than sixty in his own vessel, were on their ship's side ready to board, they perceived that

the Spaniards "had made fights fore and aft, and laid their sails close on the poop, the midship, and the fore-castle," and stood close under their covering, so that not a man was to be seen, from whence they plied their pikes, and threw great stones upon the heads of the assailants so fast, that they beat them off, with the loss of two killed and some four or five wounded. For all this, the English "new trimmed their sails, and fitted every man his furniture, and gave them a fresh encounter with the great ordnance, and also with small shot, raking them through and through." The Spanish captain, don Tomas de Alzola, still, "like a valiant man, stood stoutly to his close fights*," and this "second encounter" was resisted as successfully as the first; but Cavendish appears to have fallen off in time to avoid further loss, and to have carried on the remainder of the action with guns, "encouraging his men afresh with the whole noise of trumpets." After an action of five or six hours, the Spaniards being "in danger of sinking by reason of the great shot, some of which were under water, set out a flag of truce, and parleyed for mercy, requesting the English commander to spare their lives and take their goods."

Then, in the characteristic words of one of the fortunate adventurers, "our general of his goodness promised them mercy, and willed them to strike their sails, and to hoise out their boat, and to come aboard; which news they were full glad to hear of, and presently one of their chief merchants came aboard; and, falling down upon his knees, offered to have kissed our general's feet, and craved mercy. Our general most graciously pardoned both him and the rest, upon promise of their true dealing with him and his company concerning such riches as were in the ship; and he sent for the captain and the pilot, who, at their coming aboard, used the

* Yet Christoval Suarez de Figueroa represents the ship as unprepared for, and taken without, resistance:—"Hallavase (por ser aquel mar pacifico) sin una espada, y bien segura de semejante novedad. Candi abordando, la entrò y robo." (P. 211.) He says also that Cavendish hung a priest who was on board.

like duty and reverence that the former did. **The** general, of his great mercy and humanity, promised their lives and good usage. The said captain and pilot presently certified the general what goods they had within board, to wit, 122,000 pesos of gold : the rest of the riches that the ship was laden with was in rich silks, satins, and damasks, with musk, and divers other merchandise, and great store of all manner of victuals, with choice of many conserves of all sorts for to eat, and of sundry sorts of very good wines."

On the second day after the action Cavendish brought his prize into the bay, then called Aguada Segura, but now Bahia de San Bernabé, on the east side of Cape San Lucas, and there he set "the whole company of the Spaniards, both of men and women, to the number of 190 on shore. It was not his intention to keep the Santa Anna, with which, indeed, it would have been unwise to encumber himself; nevertheless, he would not, "of his great mercy and humanity," after he had despoiled the ship, give it to these poor people.* His journalist, who seems to have had about as much humanity as himself, complacently relates that they had a fair river of fresh water, with great store of fresh fish, fowl, and wood, and that there were many hares and conies upon the mainland. How they were to reach the mainland, he neither knew nor cared; and he did not know that a colony which Cortes had sent to that part of California had abandoned it, because they could not find means of subsistence there. "Our general also gave them great store of victuals, of garvanzos, pease, and some wine. Also they had all the sails of their ship to make them tents on shore, with licence to take such store of planks as should be suffi-

* Fuller says, "Mr. Cavendish's mercy after, equalled his valour in the fight, landing the Spaniards on the shore, and leaving them plentiful provisions." Mercy, indeed! But this is not the only reprehensible passage in his brief and very inaccurate account of this commander. Speaking of the Spaniards' design to fortify the straits, he says,—"But God, the promoter of the public good, destroyed their intended monopoly, sending such a mortality among their men, that scarce five of five hundred did survive."

cient to make them a bark. Then," says Pretty, "we fell to hauling in of our goods, sharing of the treasure, and allotting to every man his portion; in division whereof many of the company fell into a mutiny against our general, especially those in the Content, which, nevertheless, were after a sort pacified for the time." The discontents of the Content were soon, after another sort, put to rest for ever!

To stow their booty was a work of some time. It was on the 6th of November that they anchored in the bay. On the 17th, the day of queen Elizabeth's "happy coronation," salutes were fired from both ships with all their guns and small shot; and at night they "had many fireworks and more ordnance discharged, to the great admiration of the Spaniards, for the most part of them had never seen the like before." This ended, he discharged the captain, and gave him, in Pretty's words, "a royal reward, with provision for his defence against the Indians, and his company, both of swords, targets, pieces, shot, and powder, to his contentment." But he took into his own ship three Philippine boys, and two Japanese youths, who could read and write their own language, and were both of very good capacity. He likewise detained one Nicolas Rodriguez, a Portuguese, who had "not only been in Canton and other parts of China, but also in the islands of Japan, being a country most rich in silver mines, and also in the Philippines;" and a Spaniard, Tomas de Ersola by name, "which was a very good pilot from Acapulco and the coast of New Spain to the Ladrones, where the Spaniards, sailing between Acapulco and the Philippines, put in, and find fresh water, plantains, and potato roots." All having been done, on the 19th, about three in the afternoon, he set fire to the Santa Anna, which had still goods in her to the quantity of 500 tons, waited till he saw her burned, as he believed, to the water's edge, then fired a piece of ordnance; and, with this triumphant mark of barbarous animosity against the Spaniards, set sail "joyfully homewards toward

England with a fair wind." Night was closing when they sailed out of the road, leaving the *Content* astern ; when morning came that ship was not in sight, and she was never heard of afterwards.*

Cavendish had delayed his departure till evening, that he might see the *Santa Anna* destroyed ; nevertheless, that malicious purpose was defeated. Down to the water's edge he saw her burned, but the fire then freed her from her anchor, and the hull drifted ashore, for the salvation of the Spaniards.† They lightened it by throwing out the ballast, fitted it with jury masts, and were thus enabled to reach Acapulco, instead of perishing, as in all likelihood they otherwise must, upon that dreary peninsula.‡

Jan. 3. The *Desire* (now the only remaining ship of Cavendish's fleet) pursued her course across the Pacific, with a fair wind for five and forty days, when they came in sight of Guahan, one of the *Ladrones*. Some sixty or seventy boats came off to them with fruits, potatoes, and fish, which they exchanged for little pieces of old iron : but when the English were sufficiently supplied, and would have closed the market, these pertinacious traders were for forcing their commodities upon them ; and swarmed so thick about the ship, that it stemmed and broke one or two of their canoes. Nor could Cavendish be rid of them till he ordered some half dozen *harquebusses* to be made ready, and struck one of them himself: the

* Hakluyt, 817.—It was supposed that the captain, Stephen Hare, "was gone for the north-west passage." The people in that ship were discontented with Cavendish, and probably had got their share of the booty on board.

Fuller says, "The ship called the *Content* did not answer her name, whose men took all occasions to be mutinous."—*Worthies*, ii. 339.

† Yet these Spaniards, though thus providentially delivered themselves, acted tyrannically and wickedly toward the natives, carrying away a man and woman by force, and in bonds. Fifteen years afterwards, when a Spanish squadron was sent from Acapulco to survey those parts, the loss of these two Indians was still lamented by their countrymen ; and they would hold no communication with the ships. "This is related," says Torquemada, "that care may be taken to do no injury to such people, because it may prevent them from ever peaceably submitting to the Spaniards, or believing them when they preach the Gospel. The devil desires nothing more than that any handle should be given them for refusing to be converted."

‡ Torquemada, t. i. p. 699. Burney, 89.

others then fired ; but these islanders were “ so *yare* and nimble, that it could not be seen whether they were killed or not, so ready were they at falling backward into the sea and diving.” On the 14th they made the Philippines at Cape del Espiritu Santo, and passing on the morrow through the strait of San Bernardino anchored at the isle of Capul. A cacique, “ whose skin was carved with sundry strokes and devices all over his body,” came off to trade with them, taking them for Spaniards : under this notion a friendly intercourse was established ; and the English refreshed themselves “ marvellously well with hens, hogs, cocoas, and *camotes*.”* This was an unfortunate tarriance for the Spaniard Tomas de Ersola : he prepared a letter to the governor of Manilla, intending to send it by one of these natives. Rodriguez the Portugueze betrayed him : the letter was found in his chest ; and Cavendish “ willed that he should be hanged, which was accordingly performed.”

Here Cavendish remained nine days, demanding and receiving tribute, as if he had been a Spanish commander, from that and the adjacent islands. It was paid in pigs, poultry, cocoa nuts, and *camotes*. The day before his departure he caused the chief of this island, “ and of a hundred more,” says Pretty, “ to appear before him, and then made himself and his company known that they were Englishmen, and enemies to the Spaniards ; and thereupon spread his ensign, and sounded up the drums, which they much marvelled at. To conclude, they promised, both for themselves and all the islands thereabout, to aid him whensoever he should come again to overcome the Spaniards. Also our general gave them money back again for all the tribute which they had paid ; which they took marvellous friendly, and rowed about our ships to show us pleasure, marvellous swiftly. At the last he caused a saker to

* The English took these for potatoes. But in the description of these islands, prefixed by F. Juan Francisco de S. Antonio to his *Chronicles of the barefoot Franciscans in the Philippines, China, and Japan*, (a most rare work, printed in a convent at Manilla,) the *camote* is mentioned with several other wild roots, *que equivalen á las batatas en el gusto*. P. 28.

be shot off, whereat they wondered, and with great contentment took their leave of us."

Leaving this place on the 24th, they chased on the 28th a vessel from Manilla, along the coast of Panamao, and came so near that she stood in to shore close by a wind until she was becalmed, and then struck her sail, and "banked up with her oars." Cavendish anchored, manned his boat with twelve men, and sent them to pursue this vessel up the river into which she had run. They were, luckily for themselves, not able to find the opening; but they took a Spaniard out of a balsa, though fired at by a body of Spaniards from the shore, and pursued by a frigate which was sent in chase of the only prisoner aboard. He proved to be neither soldier nor sailor, but "a very simple soul," and one who could answer to very little that he was asked concerning the state of the country. Cavendish dismissed him with a message to the Spanish commander, whom he desired to provide good gold against the next visit, which he and his company meant to make him in a few years: nothing, he said, but the want of a larger boat to have landed his men had prevented him from seeing him now.

After passing the Moluccas, several of the men sickened, "by reason of the extreme heat and untemperateness of the climate," and captain Havers died, to Cavendish's no small grief. Three guns with a volley of small arms served for his passing bell: the corpse was shrouded in a sheet; and after a prayer said was heaved overboard with great lamentation of all. They passed through one of the straits formed by the islands east of Java, and anchored in a port on the south side of that great island, where, by means of a negro* taken out of the St. Anna, they could communicate with the inhabitants. But when the rajah of that district knew of their arrival, he sent to visit them; and an interpreter came, who, being a mestizo, spoke Portugueze as his

* Pretty says he could speak the Morisco tongue. The Malay is probably meant.

father tongue. Cavendish had now been taught by experience to guard against all surprise ; and when the rajah's minister past a night on board, he commanded every man in the ship to provide his harquebuss and his shot, and so with shooting off forty or fifty small shot and one saker, himself set the watch with them. " This was no small marvel unto these heathen people, who had not commonly seen any ship so furnished with men and ordnance." Here they were plentifully supplied by the rajah's orders ; and two Portugueze came on board, " men of marvellous proper personage, each in a loose jerkin and hose, which came down from the waist to the ankle, because of the use of the country, and partly because it was Lent, and a time for doing of their penance (for they account it as a thing of great dislike among these heathen to wear either hose or shoes on their feet) ; they had on each of them a very fair and white lawn shirt with falling bands on the same, very decently, only their bare legs excepted. These Portugals," says Pretty, " were no small joy to our general, and all the rest of our company ; for we had not seen any Christian that was our friend of a year and half before. Our general entreated them singularly well with banquets and music. They told us they were no less glad to see us than we to see them, and enquired of the state of their country, and what was become of don Antonio their king, and whether he were living or no, for they had not of long time been in Portugal, and the Spaniards had always brought them word that he was dead. Then our general satisfied them in every demand, assuring them that their king was alive and in England, and had honourable allowance from our queen ; and that there was war between Spain and England, and that we were come under the king of Portugal into the South Sea, and had warred upon the Spaniards there, and had fired, spoiled, and sunk all the ships along the coast that we could meet withal, to the number of eighteen or twenty sail. With this report they were sufficiently satisfied. They told us that if their king

don Antonio would come unto them, they would warrant him to have all the Moluccas at command, besides China, Sangles (?), and the isles of the Philippines, and that he might be sure to have all the Indians on his side. They took their leave with promise of all good entertainment at our return."*

1588. Cavendish sailed from Java on the 16th of March, passed round the Cape of Good Hope on the 18th of May, and on the 9th of June anchored in the road of St. Helena. Landing there they found "a fair and pleasant valley, wherein divers handsome buildings and houses were set up, and a church tiled and whited on the outside, very fair, and with a porch." The inside was hung with stained cloths, "having many devices drawn on them. There were two houses adjoining the church, one on each side, serving for kitchens to dress meat in, with necessary rooms and houses of offices: the coverings of the said houses were flat, whereon was planted a very fair vine, and through both ran a good and wholesome stream of fresh water." Opposite was a fair stone causeway leading to a valley wherein a garden had been planted with great store of pompions and melons. And upon this causeway was erected a frame with two bells, wherewith they rang to mass; and hard by a well made stone cross, bearing date 1571, in which year it had been erected. The Portugueze had stocked the island with all sorts of fruits and esculent herbs, partridges, pheasants, guinea-fowl, goats, and swine. They had thus colonised it for the use of their ships homeward bound from India; "and when they come they have all things plentiful for their relief, by reason that they suffer none to inhabit there who might consume the fruit of the island, except some very few sick persons which they stand in doubt will not live until they come home: these they leave to refresh themselves, and take away in the next year's fleet, if they live so long." Three negroes were the only persons there when Cavendish

* Hakluyt, 821, 822.

arrived. They told him that the fleet had left it twenty days before, consisting of five sail, the least of which was in burden 800 or 900 tons, "laden with spice and calicut cloth, with store of treasure, and very rich stones and pearls."

Having cleaned their ship, taken in wood and water, June and refreshed themselves during eleven days, they now 20. sailed for England, the wind and weather favouring them. On the 3d of September they were informed by a Flemish hulk coming from Lisbon of the discomfiture of the armada, "to their singular rejoicing and comfort." And on the 9th, "after a terrible tempest, which carried away most part of their sails, by the merciful favour of the Almighty they recovered their long wished for port of Plymouth, two years and fifty days after their departure from that place."* As the third circumnavigation of the globe, Cavendish's voyage deserved to be thus fully related: the circumstances are creditable to his activity, and seamanship, and courage, but honourable in no other way. Immediately on landing he wrote to the lord chamberlain Hunsdon, to inform the queen of his success; "and as it hath pleased God," said he, "to give her the victory over part of her enemies, so I trust ere long to see her overcome them all: for the places of their wealth, whereby they have maintained and made their wars, are now perfectly discovered, and, if it please her majesty, with a very small power she may take the spoil of them all. It hath pleased the Almighty to suffer me to compass the whole globe of the world, entering in at the Straits of Magellan, and returning by the Cape de Buena Esperanza. In which voyage I have either discovered or brought certain in-

* "He who went forth with a fleet," says Fuller, "came home with a ship. Thus having circumnavigated the whole earth, let his ship no longer be termed the *Desire*, but the *Performance*. He was the third man, and second Englishman, of such universal undertakings."

Suarez de Figueroa says, that he entered London with sails of green damask, and his sailors all dressed in silk. — P. 211.

It is remarkable that Lope de Vega, in the explanation prefixed to his *Dragontea*, of "lo que se ha de advertir para la inteligencia deste libro," confounds Oxenham with Cavendish, and gives an account of him under the name of Thomas Candir.

telligence of all the rich places of the world that ever were known or discovered by any Christian. I navigated amongst the coast of Chili, Peru, and Nueva España, where I made great spoils. I burnt and sunk nineteen sail of ships, small and great. All the villages and towns that ever I landed at, I burnt and spoiled; and had I not been discovered upon the coast, I had taken great quantity of treasure. The matter of most profit unto me was a great ship of the king's which I took at California; which ship came from the Philipinas, being one of the richest of merchandise that ever passed those seas, as the king's register and merchants' accounts did show, for it did amount in value to in Mexico to be sold; which goods, for that my ships were not able to contain the least part of them, I was enforced to set on fire. From the Cape of California, being the uttermost part of all Nueva España, I navigated to the islands of the Philippinas, hard upon the coast of China; of which country I have brought such intelligence as hath not been heard of in these parts: the stateliness and riches of which country I fear to make report of, lest I should not be credited; for if I had not known sufficiently the incomparable wealth of that country, I should have been as incredulous thereof, as others will be that have not had the like experience. I sailed along the islands of the Malucos, where among some of the heathen people I was well entreated, where our countrymen may have trade as freely as the Portugals, if they will themselves. From thence I passed by the Cape of Buena Esperanza, and found out by the way homeward the island of St. Helena, where the Portugals use to relieve themselves, and from that island God hath suffered me to return to England. All which services, with myself, I humbly prostrate at her majesty's feet, desiring the Almighty long to continue her reign among us, for at this day she is the most famous and victorious prince that liveth in the world."*

* Hakluyt, 837.

In what a different odour would the memory of Cavendish be held, if he could have said, in this brief summary of his proceedings, that having found in the Straits of Magellan the miserable remains of a Spanish colony, he had taken them on board to save them from perishing by famine, and on the first safe opportunity had landed them among their own countrymen!

The success of this voyage induced him to tempt his 1591. fortune in a second with three tall ships and two barks: one of the barks was the property of Mr. Adrian Gilbert, a great promoter of the attempts for discovering a north-west passage. The other four were fitted out by Cavendish: they were the Leicester Galleon in which he sailed himself, his old ship the Desire, commanded by master John Davis, one of the best seamen of those times, the Roebuck under master Cocke, and the Black Pinnace. The number of men is supposed to have been little short of 400: among them were the two Japanese youths whom he had taken out of the St. Anna. But the fleet was ill-fitted for such an expedition: his means would probably have been inadequate to the great expenditure that it required, had they been strictly applied to it; but he advanced 1500*l.* to adventurers, who, instead of equipping themselves, absconded with the money.* Having reached the coast of Brazil, Cocke was sent forward with two ships to attack Santos, in order to obtain provisions. He surprised the inhabitants at mass; but instead of bargaining with them for a supply, made good cheer upon what he found, while they escaped and carried away whatever was portable. Here Cavendish waited five precious weeks, and departed worse furnished than he came: then having burned St. Vicente by the way, proceeded to the straits. The fleet was separated in a storm: Gilbert took the opportunity of returning to England, leaving his captain on

* "These varlets, whom the justice had before sought with great diligence, I saw, within a few days after his departure," says sir Richard Hawkins, "walking the streets of Plymouth without punishment."—*Observations*, &c. 15.

board one of the other ships "without any provision more than the apparel he had on." Davis fell in with the Roebuck: both proceeded to Port Desire, and there the Black Pinnace and the Admiral joined them.* Cavendish had lost his boats, and quarrelled with his company: in consequence of this he removed into the Desire.†

By this time it was the middle of March: "such," says Cavendish, "was the adverseness of our fortunes, that in coming thither we spent the summer, and found the straits in the beginning of a most extreme winter." They entered it on the 14th of April with favourable weather; but on the 21st were stopped by a wind from the W.N.W., and put into a small cove on the south shore opposite to Cape Froward. There they remained above three weeks, during which they endured great storms, with perpetual snow; and many of the men "died with cursed famine and miserable cold, not having wherewith to cover their bodies, nor to fill their bellies, but living by muscles, water, and weeds of the sea, with a small relief of the ship's store in meal sometimes."‡ Discouraged by these hardships, and doubting what the end would be, Cavendish asked Davis's opinion, "because he was a man that had good experience of the north-west parts in his three several discoveries that way, employed by the merchants of London." Davis, who felt as much at home among ice and snow as a white bear, or a walrus, told him the snow was a matter of no long continuance. However, he called together the whole company, and told them he would tarry no longer

* Mr. John Jane's remark, therefore, seems hardly to be warranted, when he says, that his "captain (Davis) could never get any direction what course to take in any such extremities, though many times he had entreated for it, as often I have heard him with grief report."—*Hakluyt*, 842.

Jane's narrative is written evidently with a malevolent feeling towards Cavendish. And in this he is contradicted by Knyvet, who, though a liar, could have no motive for lying in this case.

† *Hakluyt*, 842, 843. Burney, 98. 100.

‡ Jane says, "All the sick men in the Galleon were most uncharitably put ashore into the woods, in the snow, rain, and cold, when men of good health could scarcely endure it, where they ended their lives in the highest degree of misery; master Cavendish all this while being in the Desire."

in the straits, but turn back, and make for the Cape of Good Hope. The general opinion was, that being within forty leagues of the South Sea, it was better to "stay God's favour for a wind," and endure any hardships rather than give over the voyage; nevertheless, what he determined on they would perform. Upon this he declared his resolution to go for the Cape of Good Hope. But when he returned on board the *Desire* Davis represented to him that this would be a desperate undertaking: "if the rest of your ships," said he, "be furnished answerable to this, it is impossible to perform it; for we have no more sails than masts, no victuals, no ground-tackling, no cordage more than is over head, and among seventy-and-five persons there is but the master alone that can order the ship, and but fourteen sailors; the rest are gentlemen, serving-men, and artificers." Davis made the same representations to Cocks: the "chiefs of the whole company" drew up a petition in consequence; and Cavendish, yielding to the general voice so far as to give up his own rash intention, determined to leave the straits and return for Santos. But as if he had been displeased with Davis for having influenced others in this matter, he left the *Desire*, and went again on board the *Leicester Galleon*.*

On the 18th they were free of the straits: on the 20th the *Desire* and the *Black Pinnace* separated from the other two vessels; Cavendish thought wilfully: but, according to their protestation, by unaccountable accident.† They returned to Port Desire, thinking that

* Hakluyt, 843, 844.

† Admiral Burney says, "The circumstances are certainly of a suspicious nature; and there is some reason for believing that captain Davis considered the engagement mutual between Mr. Cavendish and himself to make a voyage into the South Sea; and that he was determined, if possible, not to be disappointed of an enterprise which he had been brought thus far to prosecute. Instances without number are to be met with of ships deserting their commander-in-chief, to escape the perils of a long or dangerous undertaking; but the case of captain Davis is of a different character, and is one of the few in which the separation, if contrived, was for the purpose of persevering in a pursuit after it had been abandoned by the chief commander as hopeless and impracticable."—Pp. 101, 102.

This is the same distinguished seaman who discovered and has left his name to Davis's Strait. He afterwards made several voyages to the East Indies, and lost his life there in a quarrel with the crew of a Japanese vessel."—Ib. 106.

he would put back there; waited there till that expectation could no longer be entertained; were driven to the Falkland Islands, "which had never before been discovered by any known relation;" entered and passed the straits; were driven back, and, after enduring such sufferings as none but sailors can be exposed to, and with a perseverance and patient fortitude which never has been exceeded, reached Ireland in the June of the following year, having lost sixty men out of a crew of seventy-six. Jane was one of the survivors.

Cavendish, who had parted from the Roebuck also, arrived with only his own ship on the coast of Brazil, and landed twenty-five men about three leagues from Santos, to seize provisions for the relief of their sick and starving comrades. The principal persons in the ship were of this party, and not a man returned. The Indians, who carried two of their prisoners to Santos, entered that town in savage triumph with the heads of all the rest. After these mishaps Cavendish was joined by the Roebuck: they coasted along ravaging houses and plantations as they went, and attempted with their boats to cut out some ships which were at anchor in the river near the town of Espirito Santo. The attempt was rashly made, and ended in the loss of eighty men killed, wounded, or basely abandoned by their comrades; after which the master of the Roebuck, by whose orders they were thus abandoned, and whom Cavendish calls "a most cowardly villain that ever was born of a woman," thought proper to shift for himself with that ship, and desert his unfortunate commander.* Nothing remained for Cavendish then but to make for England; but his heart was broken. Assured by his own unerring feelings that death was at hand, he wrote a letter to sir Tristram Gorges, giving a brief account of this unhappy voyage, and complaining of the conduct of his officers and men. Having vented his complaints, he proceeded thus:—

"And now to tell you of my greatest grief, which

* Purchas, b. vi. c. 6. p. 1195. History of Brazil, i. 359—364.

was the sickness of my dear kinsman John Locke, who by this time was grown in great weakness, by reason whereof he desired rather quietness and contentedness in our course, than such continual disquietness, which never ceased us. And now by this, what with grief for him, and the continual trouble I endured among such hell-hounds, my spirits were clean spent, wishing myself upon any desert place in the world, there to die, rather than thus basely to return home again ; which course I had put in execution, had I found an island which the cards make to be eight degrees to the southward of the line. I swear to you, I sought for it with all diligence, meaning, if I had found it, to have there ended my unfortunate life. But God suffered not such happiness to light upon me, for I could by no means find it ; so as I was forced to go towards England, and having gotten eight degrees by north the line, I lost my most dearest cousin.

“ And now consider whether a heart made of flesh be able to endure so many misfortunes, all falling upon me without intermission ! I thank my God that, in ending of me, he hath pleased to rid me of all further trouble and mishaps. And now to return to our private matters : I have made my will, wherein I have given special charge that all goods (whatsoever belong unto me) be delivered into your hands. For God's sake refuse not to do this last request for me. I owe little that I know of, and, therefore, it will be the less trouble ; but if there be any debt that, of truth, is owing by me, for God's sake see it paid. To use compliments of love, now at my last breath, were frivolous : but know that I left none in England whom I loved half so well as yourself ; which you in such sort deserved at my hands as I can by no means requite. I have left all (that little remaining) unto you, not to be accountable far any thing. That which you will, if you find any overplus (yourself especially being satisfied to your own desire), give unto my sister Anne Candish. I have written to no man living but yourself, leaving all

friends and kinsmen, only reputed you as dearest. Commend me to both your brethren, being glad that your brother Edward escaped so unfortunate a voyage. I pray give this copy of my unhappy proceedings to none but only to sir George Cary, and tell him, that if I had thought the letter of a dead man acceptable, I would have written unto him. I have taken order with the master of my ship to see his pieces of ordnance delivered unto him, for he knoweth them. And if the Roebuck be not returned, then I have appointed him to deliver him two brass pieces out of this ship, which I pray you see performed. I have now no more to say; and take this last farewell, that you have lost the lovingest friend that ever was lost by any. Commend me to your wife. No more! But as you love God, do not refuse to undertake this last request of mine. I pray, forget not master Carey of Coakington: gratify him with something, for he used me kindly at my departure. Bear with this scribbling; for I protest I am scarce able to hold a pen in my hand."*

Cavendish's history cannot be concluded better than by these his dying words: they are most touching in themselves, and leave us with an opinion of him far more favourable than could be deduced from any thing that is recorded of his life.

* Purchas, b. vi. c. 6. p. 1200.

SIR RICHARD HAWKINS.

WHILE the great seamen of Elizabeth's age were influenced, some by the love of enterprise, and others by the hope of plunder, the queen's ministers had in view the discovery of distant countries, the opening a trade with them by just and peaceful means, and the establishment of better discipline in the ships. These objects were distinctly declared in the instructions to Mr. Edward Fenton for an intended voyage to the East Indies and Cathay, which was planned after Drake's return from his circumnavigation. He was charged not to receive "any disordered or mutinous person;" and if any were found to be such, to remove him before he sailed, or by the way as soon as could conveniently be done. The extent of the captain-general's authority was defined, and eight assistants were named, with whom he was to consult in all cases not provided for in his instructions. They were "straightly enjoined, as they would answer the contrary by the laws of the land, that neither going, tarrying abroad, nor returning, they should spoil or take any thing from any of the queen's friends, or any Christians, without paying justly for the same, nor to use any manner of violence or force against any such, except in their own defence." Item, it was said, "we will that you deal altogether in this voyage like good and honest merchants, trafficking and exchanging ware for ware, with all courtesy to the nations you shall deal with, as well Ethnicks as others; and for that cause you shall instruct all those that shall go with you, that whensoever you or any of you shall happen to come in any place to conference with the people of those parts, that in all your doings and theirs,

you so behave yourselves towards the said people, as may rather procure their friendship and good liking by courtesy, than move them to offence or misliking, and especially you shall have great care of the performance of your word and promise to them."

Where they succeeded in settling "a beginning of further trade," they were charged to bring home, if they might, some few men and women, leaving one, two, or more well-chosen persons as pledges for them, and "to learn the tongue and secrets of the country; having diligent care that in thus giving hostages they should not deliver personages of more value than they received, but rather mean persons under colour of men of value, as the infidels do for the most part use." None were to traffic on their own account, nor make any charts or descriptions of the voyage, except those whom the general deputed, and these on their return were to be delivered to the queen's council, no copies being kept. "And to the end that God might bless their voyage with happy and prosperous success, especial care was to be taken that reverence and respect were had to the ministers appointed to accompany them, as appertaining to their place and calling; and that such good order as they should set down for reformation of life and manners should be duly obeyed, and enforced by severely punishing the transgressors and contemners of the same. The ministers were sometimes to remove from one vessel to another."*

As this expedition was planned before there was open war with Spain, and as the object, indeed, on the part of government, appears to have been altogether pacific, Fenton was ordered not to pass by the Straits of Magellan, either going or returning, except upon great occasion, and by the advice of his assistants. They, however, determined upon taking that course, and persisted in it for awhile after they had learnt on the coast of Brazil that the Spanish fleet had sailed from Rio de

* Hakluyt, iii. 754—757.

Janeiro for the purpose of securing that passage. Drawing nearer they began to weigh the danger of encountering a very superior force, in disobedience of their explicit orders: this made them abandon the intention. They returned to Brazil, hoping there to obtain provisions; fell in at St. Vicente with three of the Spanish ships, and, after an indecisive action with them, made for England, "without having attempted any thing creditable to themselves or beneficial to their employers." A pinnace, commanded by John Drake, was cast away on their return near the Plata: the captain was one of those who escaped from the Indian to the Spanish settlements; and nothing more is known of his fate than that he was sent to Peru. That, and many other particulars relating to the relations between Spain and England, and the treatment of English prisoners in Spanish America, would have been made known if sir Richard Hawkins had lived to complete the narrative of his own adventures.

Sir John Hawkins's father bred this son to the sea-service; and it is evident that his education, in other respects, had not been neglected, but that his mind was well stored with various and useful knowledge. After distinguishing himself in what was then called (in Spanish idiom) the journey against the Spanish armada, he, who with his father's counsel, consent, and help, had resolved upon a voyage for the islands of Japan, of the Philippines, and Moluccas, and the kingdoms of China and the East Indies, by the way of the Straits of Magellan and the South Sea, caused a ship to be built for it on the Thames, of between 300 and 400 tons. The work was finished to his entire content; "for she was pleasing to the eye, profitable for stowage, good of sail, and well conditioned."—"The day of her launching," he says, "being appointed, the lady Hawkins, my mother-in-law, craved the naming of the ship, which was easily granted her; and she, knowing what voyage was pretended to be undertaken, named her the *Repentance*. What her thoughts were was kept secret to

herself; and although many times I expostulated with her to declare the reason for giving her that uncouth name, I could never have any other satisfaction than that 'Repentance was the safest ship we could sail in to purchase the haven of Heaven.' Well I know she was no prophetess, though a religious and most virtuous lady, and of a very good understanding. Yet too prophetic it fell out by God's secret judgments, and was sufficient for the present to cause me to desist from the enterprise, and leave the ship to my father, who willingly took her, and paid the entire charge of the building and furnishing of her, which I had concerted or paid. And this I did, not for any superstition I have in names, or for that I think them able to further or hinder any thing; for that all immediately dependeth upon the providence of Almighty God, and is disposed by him alone. Yet advise I all persons ever (as near as they can) by all means, and on all occasions, to presage unto themselves the good they can."*

It chanced, however, that when the *Repentance* had been "put in perfection," and was riding at Deptford, the queen, passing by on her way to the palace of Greenwich, "commanded her bargemen to row round about her, and viewing her from post to stem disliked nothing but her name, and said she would christen her anew, and that thenceforth she should be called the *Dainty*. Under that name she made many prosperous voyages in the queen's services; and when her owner, sir John, resolved to sell her, though with some loss, because she "never brought but cost, trouble, and care to him," his son, sir Richard, whose forebodings con-

* The Observations of Sir Richard Hawkins, Knight, in his Voyage into the South Sea, A. D. 1593. London, 1622. He advises them also, "in giving names to terrestrial works (especially to ships), not to give such as merely represent the celestial character; for few had he known or seen come to a good end which have had such attributes." He instances the *Revenge*, in which sir Richard Greenville was taken, as "ever the unfortunatest ship" in Elizabeth's service, being even a ship laden and full fraught with ill success; and the *Thunderbolt* of London, which had, first, her mast split by lightning; secondly, had her poop blown up; and, lastly, was burnt with all her crew in the river at Bourdeaux.

cerning her had been removed when she was anabaptized, and who ever had had "a particular love unto her, and a desire that she should continue in the family," repurchased her from him, with all her furniture, at the price for which he had formerly disposed of her. And having "waged a competent number of men," and purchased sufficient stores for his journey "so often talked of, and so much desired," he was ready, at the beginning of April, 1593, to sail from Blackwall to Plymouth, there to join the other two vessels destined for this expedition, the one a ship of 100 tons, the other a pinnace of 60, both his own. An expectation that the lord high admiral with sir Robert Cecil, principal secretary to the queen, and sir Walter Raleigh, would honour him and his ship with their presence and farewell, detained him some days. But rain and "untemperate" weather deprived him of the favour which he hoped to have received at their hands; and the wind serving, according to his wish, he caused the pilot to "wayle down to Gravesend, took an unhappy last leave of his father, and followed in his barge."* April
8.

Coming to Barking he saw the Dainty at anchor in the midst of the channel, and soon learnt that he had been in no small peril of losing both ship and goods. They had sailed with an E.N.E. wind, which veered southerly, and forced them, in doubling a point, to tack aboard and luff up; just then the wind freshened, and the ship heeled; she was very deeply laden, and her ports open; the water began to enter at them; the crew paid no regard to this, thinking themselves safe in the river, till the weight of water, more than the wind, began to press down the side, and when the danger was perceived, and the sheets flown, she could hardly be brought upright. "The peril," he observed, "from which it pleased God that with the exertions of his people she escaped, might be a gentle warning to all such as take charge of shipping, even before they

* Observations, 4, 5.

sail, either in river or harbour, to have an eye to their ports, and see those shut and calked, which might cause danger, for avoiding the many mishaps that daily chance through the neglect thereof." He called to mind, upon this occasion, the loss of the *Mary Rose*, as in this age, and in ages to come, that of the *Royal George* will be remembered.*

The men now refused to proceed, unless the ship were lightened. Sir Richard thought this needless, and that there would have been no danger but for their negligence. Mariners, however, he said, "are like a stiff-necked horse, who takes the bridle between his teeth;" and he was obliged to content them by engaging a hoy, into which he "loaded some six or eight tons." Untoward weather delayed them on the way to Plymouth; and in the course of a month after his arrival there, by his "continual travail, the help of his good friends, and excessive charge, which none," he says, "could easily believe but those who had proved it," he was ready to set sail with his three ships, drawn out into the sound, and began to gather his company aboard. But then "began a storm of wind westerly," in which the *Dainty* was hardly saved by cutting away her mainmast, and the pinnace sunk. A "well-willing friend" forewarned him that these mischances were presages of bad success, and endeavoured to dissuade him from proceeding with an adventure which had begun so ill; yet "the hazard of his credit, and danger of disreputation, to take in hand that which he should not prosecute by all means possible, was more powerful to cause him to go forward than this grave good counsel to make him desist." The pinnace was raised: his own credit, with the help of his wife's father, enabled him, in ten days, to put all in as good a state as before; "and once again," says he, "in God's name, I brought my ships out into the sound, and began to take leave of

* Observations, 5.

my friends, and of my dearest friend *, my second self, whose unfeigned tears had wrought me unto irresolution, and sent some other in my room, had I not considered that he that is in the dance must needs dance on, though he do but hop, except he will be a laughing stock to all the lookers on. So remembering that many had their eyes set upon me, with diverse affections, as also the hope of good success (my intention being honest and good), I shut the door to all impediments, and mine ear to all contrary counsel, and gave place to voluntary banishment from all that I loved and esteemed in this life." †

The account of his departure ‡ is beautifully given in

* Lope de Vega introduced in his *Dragontea* a parting scene between Hawkins and

— "su esposa,
Que avia sido de la Reyna Dama,
Mas que se puede encarecer hermosa
Si fè se deve à la estrangera fama."

Hawkins, whose name is transformed into Achines, he describes as

"Mozo de treyuta y tres años gallardo
Que Richart en su lengua se dezia,
Y que nuestro Español llama Ricardo." Canto ii.

† Observations, 6—14.

‡ His friends, and the justices of the town, were employed two days in searching all lodgings, taverns, and ale-houses, before his people could be got aboard: "for some would ever be taking their leave and never depart; some drank themselves so drunk, that, except they were carried aboard, they of themselves were not able to go one step; others, knowing the necessity of the time, feigned themselves sick; others, to be indebted to their hosts, and forced me to ransom them; one his chest, another his sword, another his shirts, another his card and instruments for sea; and others, to benefit themselves of the imprest given them, absented themselves, making a lewd living in deceiving all whose money they could lay hold of, which is a scandal too rife among our seamen, and an abuse in our commonwealth necessary to be reformed. In what sort they dealt with me is notorious, and was such that if I had not been provident to have had a third part more of men than I had need of, I had been forced to go to sea unmanned, or to give over my voyage. And many of my company at sea vaunted how they had cousined the earl of Cumberland, master Cavendish, master Raymond, and others, some of five pounds, some of ten, some of more, and some of less; and truly I think my voyage prospered the worse for theirs and other lewd persons' company."

This evil he thought "might be redressed by some extraordinary, severe, and present justice to be executed on the offenders by the justice in that place where they should be found. And for finding them it were good that all captains and masters of ships at their departure out of the port should give unto the head justice the names and signs of all their runaways, and they presently to despatch to the nigher ports the advice agreeable, where meeting with them, without further delay or process to use martial law." He thought also that the custom of making imprests to the sailors,

his own narrative. All being come aboard, and all put in order, in the afternoon of the 12th of June, "I looft near the shore to give my farewell to all the inhabitants of the town, whereof the most part were gathered together upon the Howe, to show their grateful correspondency to the love and zeal which I, my father, and predecessors have ever borne to that place as to our natural and mother town. And first with my noise of trumpets, after with my waytes, and then with my other music, I made the best signification I could of a kind farewell. This they answered with the waytes of the town, and the ordnance on the shore, and with shouting of voices, which, with the fair evening and silence of the night, were heard a great distance off."*

When they were near the line, his men began to fall sick of the scurvy, which, "though in all seas it is wont to help and increase the misery of man, reigned especially in that climate;" and he thought the English were more subject to it than any other people. "I wish," said he, "some learned man would write of it, for it is the plague of the sea †, and the spoil of mariners. Doubtless it would be a meritorious work with God and man, and most beneficial for our country; for in

which had lately crept into the commonwealth, "was of much more hurt than good, experience having shown that the men for the most part consumed the money lewdly before they departed, and returned more beggarly than when they went forth, having received and spent their portion. All which go to the sea now-a-days," he adds, "are provided of food and *house-room*, and all things necessary during the time of the voyage, and in all long voyages, of apparel also; so that nothing is to be spent during the voyage. That money which is wont to be cast away in imprests might be employed in apparel and necessaries at sea, given to those that have need, at the price it was bought, to be deducted out of their shares or wages at their return, which is reasonable and charitable." Imprests to married men, made in the form of a monthly allowance to their wives during their absence, he thought useful. — Pp. 14—16.

* Observations, 16.

† His own observations upon it, both as to the causes and remedies, are very sensible. What he had found most profitable, he says, were "sour oranges and lemons, and a water which amongst others (for my particular provision) I carried to the sea, called Dr. Stevens his water, of which, for that his virtue was not then well known unto me, I carried but little, and it took end quickly; but it gave health to those that used it. The oil of vitry is beneficial for this disease, taking two drops of it mingled in a draught of water, with a little sugar. But the principal of all is the air of the land, for the sea is natural for fishes, and the land for men." — P. 37.

twenty years, since I have used the sea, I dare take upon me to give account of 10,000 men consumed with this disease." Having stood to the westward some hundred leagues and more, the wind continuing contrary, and the sickness so fervent that every day there died more or less, the men lost heart, and desired to return homeward. He represented to them that to hold on was the surest way of soon finding relief, "for every night they might see the reach go contrary to the wind, verifying the mariner's old proverb, that he who will sail by the reach hath need of a long mast." The speediest refreshing they could look for was the coast of Brazil; and were they to put all their sick in one ship, and send her homeward, it would be making her their grave; for they could spare but few sound men, and those also were liable to take the disease. So leaving all to their choice, they assented to his opinion, and resolved to continue their course till God should please to look upon them with his fatherly eyes of mercy. Hawkins, who was a religious man himself, endeavoured to encourage in his people those religious feelings which they had rather disregarded than despised; and after they had solemnly returned thanks to God for their deliverance when the ship was on fire and in imminent danger of being consumed, he took occasion, with their general consent, "to banish swearing out of the three ships." This was effected by ordaining that in every ship there should be a ferula, or palmer, given to the keeping of the first who was "taken with an oath." He could be rid of it only by taking another in the same offence, when he was to give him a *palmada*, or stroke on the palm, and transfer to him the instrument of punishment. Whoever had it in his possession at the time of evening or morning prayer was to receive three *palmadas* from the captain or master, and still bear it, till he could make a transfer agreeable to the law. This in a few days "brought both swearing and ferulas out of use. And, certainly," he adds, "in vices custom is the principal sustenance; and for their reformation it is

little available to give good counsel or make good laws and ordinances, except they be executed." *

When they were about twenty degrees south of the line, an unfavourable wind and the sickness of the people, for there were not more than four and twenty sound men in the three ships, induced Hawkins to seek the shore; and anchoring two leagues off the port of Santos, he endeavoured to procure there by policy what he was too weak to obtain by force. He sent, therefore, his captain with a flag of truce, "a piece of crimson velvet and a bolt of fine holland, with divers other things, as a present to the governor, and a letter written in Latin, saying, that being bound to the East Indies to traffic in those parts, contrary winds had forced him upon that coast, and proposing to exchange some of his goods for the commodities which that country yielded in abundance. There were sixteen well armed men in the boat, guided by one who "two years before had been captain in that place, and so was a reasonable pilot." The officer in command of the garrison, near the mouth of the harbour, received them courteously, and detained them while the letter was sent to the governor, who was in the town some twelve miles off. As the boat did not return during that day, and there were no signs of it at nine the following morning, Hawkins became uneasy, manned a light horseman and his pinnace, the best he could, "showing strength where was weakness and infirmity," and went with these toward the port, piloted by the gunner who had been there some years before. When they were within the harbour, the boat came aboard, bringing a few fowls, and 200 or 300 oranges and lemons which they had been allowed to purchase from the women, and which were what Hawkins principally sought for, "as the remedy for his diseased company." He now anchored right against the village where the garrison was stationed, to wait the governor's reply: a flag of truce was soon seen from the

* Observations, 35—41.

shore, indicating that it was come; the boat went for it, and brought an unwelcome, but becoming reply. The Portugueze governor said he was sorry he could not consent to so reasonable a request; but that in consideration of the war between Spain and England he had received orders not to suffer any English to trade within his jurisdiction, no, nor to land, nor take any refreshments upon the shore. He craved pardon, therefore, and desired Hawkins to take this for a decisive answer, and to quit the port within three days, which time, he said, was given him in acknowledgment of his courteous manner of proceeding. But if any of his people approached the shore they would be treated as enemies.*

Before this answer came Hawkins had "determined to be packing" with the first fair wind; but the wind sufficed him not all that night, nor the next day. "In which time," he says, "I lived in a great perplexity, for that I knew our own weakness, and what they might do unto us if they had known so much. Any man that putteth himself into an enemy's port hath need of Argus's eyes, and the wind in a bag, especially where the enemy is strong, and the tides of any force; for with either ebb or flow those who are on the shore may thrust upon him inventions of fire, and with swimming or other devices may cut his cables,—a common practice in all hot countries. The like may be effected with rafts, canoes, boats, or pinnaces, to annoy and assault him; and if this had been practised against us our ships must of force have yielded, for they had no other people in them but sick men: but many times opinion and fear preserveth the ships and not the people in them." That the ships should not be dismayed at his tarriance, he sent off the light horseman with part of the refreshment, and the next night came out of the harbour sounding as he went. When he came aboard "there was great joy among the company, and many with

* Observations, 49—51.

the sight of the oranges and lemons seemed to recover heart." And though when all were "reparted among the sick, there came not above three or four to a share," yet these, with a prosperous wind, so much recruited them, that without any more deaths they reached some islets not far from Cape Frio, where it was his intention to refresh his men. Fresh water had failed them many days before they made the land, by reason not only of their long passage, but of the excessive thirst of the sick; "yet," says he, "with an invention I had in my ship, I easily drew out of the water of the sea sufficient quantity of fresh water to sustain my people with little expense of fuel, for with four billets I stilled a hogshead of water, and therewith dressed the meat for the sick and whole: the water so distilled is found to be wholesome and nourishing."*

Having providentially † escaped shipwreck on the way, they reached these islets, which, he says, some called Santiago's, and some St. Anne's; they set up tents and booths for the sick; upon some smaller isles they found great store of young gannets in their nests,

* Observations, 51, 52.

† Sir Richard Hawkins's own relation may show how justly this escape is called *providential*. "The night coming on, and directions given to our other ships, we set the watch, having a fair fresh gale of wind and large. Myself, with the master of our ship, having watched the night past, thought now to give nature that which she had been deprived of, and so recommended the care of steerage to one of his mates; who with the like travel past, being drowsy, or with the confidence which he had of him at the helm, had not that watchful care which was required. He at the helm brought us in a little time close upon the shore. Doubtless he had cast us all away, had not God extraordinarily delivered us; for the master, being in his dead sleep, was suddenly awaked, and with such a fright, that he could not be in quiet: whereupon, waking his youth, which ordinarily slept in his cabin by him, he asked him how the watch went on, who answered that it could not be above an hour since he laid himself to rest. He replied, his heart was so unquiet that he could not by any means sleep; and so taking his gown came forth upon the deck, and presently discovered the land hard by us; and, for that it was sandy and low, those who had their eyes continually fixed on it, were dazzled with the reflection of the stars, being a fair night, and so were hindered from the true discovery thereof. But he coming out of the dark had his sight more forcible to discern the difference of the sea and the shore. So that forthwith he commanded him at the helm to put it close a-starboard, and tacking our ship we edged off, and sounding, found scant three fathom water, whereby we saw evidently the miraculous mercy of our God, that if he had not watched over us, as he doth continually over his, doubtless we had perished without remedy: to whom be all glory and praise everlastingly, world without end."

which "being boiled with pickled pork, well watered and mingled with oatmeal, made reasonable pottage; they found also abundance of purslane, which boiled, and made into salads, with oil and vinegar, refreshed the sick stomachs, and gave appetite." What with the air of the shore and good cherishing, many recovered, but some died away quickly, and others continued at a stand, so that having lost more than half his people by sickness, Hawkins burnt one of his ships. He tarried here more than a month, then set sail once more, having only six men sick. A few days after they chased and captured a Portugueze ship, laden with mandioc meal (*farinha de pao*), and bound for Angola, there to load negroes for the Plata, from whence they were to be sent to the mines at Potosi. A Portugueze was on board, going out to be governor of Angola, with his wife and daughter, fifty soldiers, and arms for 150. "He was old, and complained that, after many years' service for his king, with sundry mishaps, he was brought to that poor estate, as for the relief of his wife, his daughter, and himself, he had no other substance but what he had in that ship. It moved compassion, so as nothing of his was diminished, which, though to us it was of no great moment, in Angola it was worth good crowns; only we disarmed them all, and let them depart." They took out of their prize some chests of sugar and a good quantity of the meal. The men were much animated with this unlooked-for supply, and "praised God for his bounty, providence, and grace extended toward them."*

Dec.
10.

When they were in the latitude of the Plata, some fifty leagues off the coast, a storm came on from the south, and endured forty-eight hours; and on the first day, "about the going down of the sun," Tharlton, the master of the pinnace, bore up before the wind, without making any sign of distress. Hawkins, seeing her continue this course, bore up after her; and night

* Observations, 54—64.

coming on, he carried a light. The light was never answered; and Tharlton, keeping his course directly for England, "in this shameless manner deserted his commander."*—"But," says Hawkins, "I was worthy to be deceived that trusted my ship in the hands of a hypocrite, and a man which had left his general before on the like occasion, and in the self-same place; for being with master Thomas Cavendish, master of a small ship, in the voyage wherein he died, this captain being aboard the Admiral, in the night-time forsook his fleet, his general and captain, and returned home. Desertions such as these," he observes, "have been the prime cause of many lamentable losses and overthrows, to the dishonour of the nation, and the frustrating of many good and honourable enterprises; and many times the offenders went unpunished, for that there is none to follow the cause, the principal being either dead with grief, or drowned in the gulf of poverty, and so not able to wade through with the burden of that suit, which in Spain is prosecuted by the king's attorney." Suspecting no such baseness, he and his people made account that their comrades had gone down in the storm, and "much lamented them." During the gale "certain great fowls, as big as swans, soared about the vessel, and when the wind calmed they settled themselves, and fed upon the sweepings of the ship." These were albatrosses; and Hawkins, wishing to examine them, "because they seemed far greater in truth than they were," threw out a fishing-line baited with pilchard.† This sort of angling succeeded well; and

* Burney, 122.

† "Our ship driving with the sea, the float in a little time was a good space from us, and one of the fowls presently seized upon it and the hook in his upper beak. It is like to a falcon's bill, but that the point is more crooked, in that manner as by no means he could clear himself, except that the line brake, or the hook righted. Plucking him toward the ship, with the waving of his wings he eased the weight of his body, and being brought to the stern of our ship, two of our company went down by the ladder of the poop, and seized on his neck and wings; but such were the blows he gave them with his pinions, that both left their hand-fast, being beaten black and blue. We cast a snare about his neck, and so tryced him into the ship."—P. 68.

enough were caught to give all the crew good refreshment for that day.*

The ship *Dainty*, now without a companion, pursued her course toward the straits; and falling in with the Falkland Islands, which Davis had discovered eighteen months before, sir Richard, to whom this was not known †, supposed that this *Terra Australis* had not been seen by any European navigator, and in that belief, and “for that it was discovered,” says he, “in the reign of queen Elizabeth, my sovereign lady, and a maiden queen, and at my cost, in perpetual memory of her chastity, and of my endeavours, I gave it the name of *Hawkins's Maiden Land*.” On the 19th of February he entered the straits; and having doubled the point on the starboard, and opened a fair bay, discovered there the hull of a ship beaten upon the beach, one of the fleet which had carried thither Sarmiento's unfortunate colonists. At the Penguin islands they stored themselves with these birds; which were prepared by first cutting off the head that they might bleed well, then splitting them, washing them in sea water, letting them lie some six hours in salt, then pressing them for eight hours, and “the blood being soaked out, salting them again in the casks like beef; instead of which they served for about two months.” All parts of the island where they haunted were undermined with their burrows, “save only one valley, which it seemed they reserved for their food, for it was as green as any meadow in the month of April, with a most fine short grass.” The hunting of them he describes as “a great recreation to his company, and worth the sight. Good store of people were required, each with a cudgel in his hand, to compass them round about, and bring them as

1594.
Feb.
2.

* Observations, 66—68.

† Davis arrived at Bearhaven in Ireland on the 11th of June, 1593, on his return from this voyage, and Hawkins sailed from Plymouth on the 13th. It is certain, therefore, that he could not have received any communication of Davis's discovery. But admiral Burney justly observes, “It cannot easily be imagined that a man so curious as he was after maritime knowledge, should have remained unacquainted with Jane's account of Mr. Cavendish's last voyage, in which it is related.”

it were into a ring. If they chanced to break out, then was the sport; for the ground being undermined, at unawares it failed, and as they ran after them one fell here, another there; another, offering to strike at one, lifting up his hand, sunk up to the arm-pits in the earth; another, leaping to avoid one hole, fell into another. After the first slaughter, on seeing us on the shore, they shunned us, and procured to recover the sea; yea, many times, seeing themselves persecuted, they would tumble down from such high rocks as it seemed impossible to escape with life. Yet, as soon as they came to the beach, presently we should see them run into the sea, as though they had no hurt. Where one goeth the other followeth, like sheep after the bell-wether; but in getting them once within the ring close together few escaped, save such as by chance hid themselves in the burrows; and ordinarily there was no drove which yielded us not a thousand or more.*

The ducks, which were very numerous, "had a part of the island to themselves several: it was the highest hill there, and more than a musket-shot over. In all the days of my life," says this observant seaman, "I have not seen greater art and curiosity in creatures void of reason than in the placing and making of their nests; all the hill being so full of them that the greatest mathematician could not devise to place one more than there was, leaving only one pathway for a fowl to pass betwixt. The hill was all level as if it had been smoothed by art; the nests made only of earth, and seeming to be of the self-same mould: for the nests and the soil is all one, which with water that they bring in their bills they make into clay, and after fashion them round as with a compass. In the bottom they contain the measure of a foot; in the height about eight inches; and in the top the same quantity over; there they are hollowed in, somewhat deep, wherein they lay their eggs without other prevention; and I am of opinion

* Observations, 73.

that the sun helpeth them to hatch their young. Their nests are for many years, and of one proportion, not one exceeding another in bigness, in height, nor circumference; and in proportionable distance one from another. In all this hill, nor in any of their nests, was to be found a blade of grass, a straw, a stick, a feather, a mote, no, nor the filing of any fowl; but all the nests and passages betwixt them were so smooth and clean, as if they had been newly swept and washed." *

Still hoping that the pinnace might be following, he here wrote instructions where she was to seek him, enrolled them in many folds of paper, put them into the barrel of an old musket, carefully secured against the wet, and placed it an end upon one of the highest hills, and the most frequented of the island. Before he left the straits, finding his decks open, with the long lying under the line and on the coast of Brazil, he calked the ship "within board and without, above the decks, from post to stern." And he repaired his water casks, into which it was found that the worm had got when they were taken ashore in Brazil to be trimmed and filled: the manner of sheathing which his father had invented † seems to have preserved the ship from this evil. He had, however, many difficulties to encounter before he could clear the straits. After he had the mouth open, and was in full hope of entering the South Sea on the morrow, a sudden storm carried him back, the current aiding it, above four and twenty leagues in twelve hours, "lying a-hull." From the manner of some Indians with whom he had spoken in the morning, he now concluded that they intended to forewarn him of this, "for they have great insight in the change of weather; and, moreover," he thought, "have secret dealings with the

* Observations, 74.

† Half-inch plank sheathing, lined with tar, half a finger thick, and nailed upon "another half-finger thickness of hair, such as the white-limers use. Some hold opinion that the tar killeth the worm, others that the worm passing the sheathing, and seeking a way through, the hair and the tar so involve him, that he is choked therewith; which, methinks, is most probable. This manner experience hath taught to be the best, and of least cost."—P. 80.

prince of darkness, who many times declareth unto them things to come." Some fortnight after, the ship, with a flaw from the shore, drove off in the channel, struck upon a rock, and hung there, having deep water both ahead and astern; so that when the tide fell, her planks, in the midst, upon the upper deck, began to open. All efforts to warp her off were in vain, till the flood came, and she was then found to have beaten off great part of her sheathing, and "wrested across, like unto a hog's yoke, some four foot long and a foot square of her false stem, joining to the keel, which hindered her sailing very much." Of five anchors which he had brought from England he had now lost two, and two were disabled: bitter weather came on, with blustering and sharp winds, accompanied with rain and sleeting snow; and his men manifested their wish to return to Brazil, and winter there, and so shoot the straits in the spring. But this he would not hear of, having Fenton's fortune in mind, and that of Cavendish in his last voyage, and knowing, by their experience and that of others, that if he consented to turn but one foot back, more than was of mere force, he should overthrow his voyage and lose his reputation; "wherefore he resolved rather to lose his life than give ear to such counsel."*

It was his wise policy to find amusement for his people at such times when they were not necessarily employed; and this he did both during his long passage to Brazil and while he was detained in the straits. At leisure times, he trained them on the shore: one day there was the west-country sport of hurling, in which the bachelors played against the married men; one day they were engaged in wrestling, another in shooting, "so that they were never idle," he says, "neither did they think the time long." One day they attempted to steal upon a great company of ursine seals, which he calls sea wolves †, as they lay sleeping on the shore, and enjoying

* Observations, 76—87.

† They are beneficial to man in their skins for many purposes, in their mostaches for picktooths, and in their fat to make train oil.

the hot sun. Under cover of a hill the men were even close upon them, when the seal centinel wakened the whole herd with his cry of alarm : the sailors got between a part of them and the sea ; but, instead of shunning the invaders, they came directly upon them, and “ not a man that withstood them escaped the overthrow ; and after they had recovered the water, they did, as it were,” he says, “ scorn us, defied us, and danced before us.” Sometimes they collected pearls in considerable quantity from muscles : the pearls were small and of a bad colour, but the muscles exceeding good, and in great plenty, and proved a great refreshing. They gathered, also, the bark and fruit of a certain tree common in those parts : the seeds were much like good pepper but hotter, and the bark had “ the savour of all kinds of spices together, most comfortable to the stomach, and was held to be better than any spice whatsoever.” *

At length, on the 28th of March, the evening being calm, and “ a goodly clear on the eastern-board,” sir Richard ordered the anchor to be weighed, against the opinion of all his men, who were desirous to see the wind settled before they put out of harbour ; and he admitted that in part they had reason, “ considering how they had been canvassed from place to place.” He, however, made himself deaf to their murmurings : having got into the channel, within an hour the wind came good : they sailed merrily on their voyage ; by daybreak the mouth of the straits was open, and in the afternoon they entered the South Sea, Hawkins congratulating himself upon having thus overcome the contradictions and murmurs of his own people, which he considered “ of all calamities the greatest that can befall a man of discretion and valour, and the most difficult to be overcome ; for to require reason of the common sort is, as the philosopher saith, to seek counsel of a madman. The best remedy he could propound,” he said, was “ to wish our nation in this point to be

* Observations, 75. 82. 88.

well advised, and, in especial, all those that follow the sea, ever having before our eyes the ancient discipline of our predecessors ; who, in conformity and obedience to their chiefs and commanders, have been a mirror to all other nations ; with patience, silence, and suffering, putting in execution what they have been commanded, and thereby gaining the blessings due to such virtues, and leaving to posterity perpetual memories of their glorious victories : a just recompence for all such as conquer themselves, and subject their most specious wills to the will of their superiors." *

April 19. On Easter-eve they anchored under the island of Mocha.† Hawkins was on his guard against the Indians here, because Drake had suffered severely by trusting them. It was necessary to communicate with them for the sake of obtaining refreshments ; but he would only confer with them upon a rock, compassed with water, and suffered none to be present with arms. While he was communing with the chiefs, some of the Indians came to the heads of his boats, and incautiously were allowed to enter them : there was a bad surf, so that the men, in order to keep the boats off, were forced to lay down their muskets, and the Indians perceiving this endeavoured to pour water into the barrels, taking it out of the sea in the hollow of their hands. Hawkins saw this in good time, and the caciques followed his example in speedily chastising them ; but he having obtained refreshments would hold no farther dealings with them. They were a prudent people, who would part with no hens among the poultry which they sold, and could not be induced to sell any of their llamas or sheep of burden, though they willingly disposed of those of the European breed. They were at war with the Spaniards, and therefore reasonably supposing that all who came in ships

* Observations, 91, 92.

† " Here our beef began to take end, and was then as good as the day we departed from England. It was preserved in pickle, which, though it be more chargeable, yet the profit payeth the charge, in that it is made durable, contrary to the opinion of many, which hold it impossible that beef should be kept good passing the equinoctial line."—P. 96.

must be enemies, kindled fires at first sight of the Dainty, which were repeated upon the main land to alarm the country.*

It was Hawkins's purpose not to discover himself upon this coast till he should have passed Lima; but his company urged him to depart from this intention: their greediness of spoil "blinded them from forecasting the peril to which they exposed themselves by such a premature discovery;" and he did not venture upon such a point, to assume an authority which he might not have been able to support. They made, therefore, for the port of Valparaiso; and descriing at evening four ships at anchor there manned their boat: the Spaniards immediately ran the ships ashore; they were taken possession of, and the captors longed for morning that they might examine their supposed treasure, and also rifle the storehouses in the port. To their great disappointment they found nothing but stores of various kinds for Lima, good merchandise there, but to them of little account. The owners proposed to ransom them, and he consented for a small price; only he refused to part with the largest, because his people had taken it into their heads that there was much gold hidden in her. A fifth ship entered the harbour and fell into their hands; and here "some good quantity of gold was found:" this put them in good humour; insomuch, that they restored the vessel and the greater part of its loading to the two owners who were on board; and though they detained one of them as a pilot on that coast, yet they soon set him ashore, "moved with compassion, for that he was a man charged with wife and children."† Here he supplied his want of anchors, though none of sufficient size were to be procured at that time in the ports of the South Sea, none larger, indeed, than could be brought across the isthmus upon negroes' backs; and here, too, he furnished his ship with "a shift of cotton sails, far better in that

* Observations, 96—99.

† This person proved thankful when Hawkins was a prisoner in Lima.

sea where they have little rain and few storms than any of our double sails, though not good where rain and storms are frequent, for with the wet they grow so stiff that they cannot be handled."

The person with whom Hawkins negotiated for the ransom of the ships was an ancient captain of noble blood, who was about to sail for Lima, and carry his daughter thither to serve Doña Teresa de Castro, sister to don Beltran de Castro, and wife to the viceroy. Their apparel and divers other things were embarked in the larger ship ; but Hawkins restored the whole, in return for his good offices, and the confidence which he had shown, coming and going only in reliance on his word. In this as in a former instance he afterwards felt the benefit of having acted generously towards a generous enemy. Some six or eight days he spent in this port, treating of the ransom and lading provisions ; during which time he and the master of his ship, Hugh Cornish, " a most careful, orderly, and sufficient man," took little rest, because they knew their own weakness ; for when he entered the harbour, his ship's company amounted to no more than seventy-five men and boys ; with which he had five ships to guard, each moored apart. And the governor of Chili, don Alonso de Sotomayor, an old soldier of much experience, who had served in the Low Countries, was on the shore in sight of them, with 300 horse and foot (as was afterwards known) in ambush, if they had landed, and with balsas ready to have taken advantage of any unwariness in guarding the ships. Hawkins, though ignorant of this, well knew that all his vigilance was needed ; but he feared not the enemy so much as the wine, which, notwithstanding all the diligence and precaution he could use night and day, overthrew, he says, many of his people. He calls it a foul fault, " being too common among seamen ; and deserving some rigorous punishment with severity to be executed, as being daily the destruction of many good enterprises ;" and he declares that, if he might be hired with many thousands, he

would not carry with him a man known to put his felicity in that vice. His own vigilance, however, preserved him here from danger ; and when all was done they set sail, "with reputation among their enemies, and a good portion toward their charges, and their ship as well stored and victualled as the day they departed from England."*

From Valparaiso he sailed for Coquimbo and entered the port, hoping to find some shipping there ; but in this he was disappointed, and was not strong enough to make any attempt upon the town which was half a league inland. Leaving Chili now for the coast of Peru, his men demanded their third of the gold that had been taken. He represented to them that it was not easy to divide the bars, but if divided very easy to be robbed of them ; that many would play away their portions, and return home as beggarly as they came out ; and, moreover, that the shares could not well be apportioned before they reached England, because every man's deserts could not be appreciated and rewarded till the end of the voyage. With much difficulty they were brought to consent that the gold and silver should be deposited in chests with three keys to each, of which he was to have one in his keeping, the master another, and the third, some person whom they should nominate. Frauds were so commonly practised upon the seamen, that there was but too much reason for the suspicion † which they

* Observations, 100—103.

† "The bad correspondence used by many captains and owners with their companies upon their return, defrauding them, or diminishing their rights, hath hatched many jealousies, and produced many disorders, with the overthrow of all good discipline ; for where the soldier and mariner is unpaid or defrauded, what service or obedience can be required at his hands ? The greatest robbery of all, in my opinion, is the defrauding or detaining of the company's thirds, or wages, accursed by the just God who forbiddeth wages to sleep with us. To such I speak as either abuse themselves in detaining it, or else to such as force the poor man to sell it at vile and low prices ; and, lastly, to such as upon feigned cavils and suits do deter the simple and ignorant sort from their due prosecutions ; which being too much in use amongst us, hath bred in those that follow the sea a jealousy in all employments, and many times causeth mutinies and infinite inconveniences."—*Sir R. Hawkins's Observations*, &c. 109, 110.

He then speaks of the abuses committed under the colour of lawful pillage, and shows that in this respect many captains and governors were as bad as the men. "Some of these cause the bills of lading to be cast

manifested at this time ; but they made too sure of their booty, in reckoning their shares before it was safely brought home.

Sir Richard ascribed the misfortune which soon befell him to his having steered for Valparaiso * in compliance with the wishes of his people.† The Spaniards ascribed it to his own imprudence in ransoming the ships which he found there, instead of following Drake's example, who burnt the shipping along the coast, that no intelligence of him might be conveyed by sea ; but in imputing this to any over-confidence ‡ in his own strength

into the sea, or so to be hidden that they never appear. Others send away their prisoners (who sometimes are more worth than the ship and her lading), because they should not discover their secret stolen treasure ; for many times that which is left out of the register, or bills of lading, with purpose to defraud the prince of his customs (in their conceits held to be excessive), is of much more value than that which the ship and lading is worth. Yea, I have known ships worth 200,000*l.* and better, clean swept of their principal riches, nothing but the bare bulk being left unsacked. To prevent these mischiefs my father, sir John Hawkins, in his instructions, in actions under his charge, had this particular article ; that whosoever took any ship should be bound to exhibit the bills of lading, to keep the captain, master, merchants, and persons of account, and to bring them to him to be examined, or into England, if they should be by any accident separated from him. Whatsoever was found wanting, the prisoners being examined, was to be made good by the captain and company which took the ship, and this upon great punishments. I am witness that this course did redound much to the benefit of the general stock, to the satisfaction of her majesty and counsel, the justification of her government, and the content of her followers." — *Sir R. Hawkins's Observations*, &c. 113.

* Admiral Burney observes upon this, that "if he had kept at a distance from the coast till to the north of Lima, other prudential reasons might then have occurred for preserving that distance in their farther progress northward, and the object of their undertaking have been defeated, without any opportunity of success. With so small a force as sir Richard Hawkins commanded, it seems evident that an expeditious scouring of the coast would have been the most proper plan to have pursued. Celerity, however, was neglected. — ii. 127.

† Arauco Domado, 307. Hechos de D. Garcia Hurtado, 212.

‡ "Vino a concierto con el pueblo en razon del rescate de las naves, sin reparar en si era acertado, o no, dexar libre a quien pudiesse dar aviso de su venida ; tal era la estimacion en que tenia su vaxel, (por extremo armado y guarnecido de gente platico, y de hecho,) y tampoco el caso que hazia de las fuerzas maritimas de todo el Peru." — *Suarez de Figueroa*, 202.

The Chilese poet, Pedro de Oña, censures him with more justice for having wasted time there after he had taken

" La rica pesca ;
Porque serà de veyute mil dorados,
Con otras deferencias de pescados.
Mas no sabrà el Ingles lo que se pesca,
Que alli estarà perdiendo el aura fresca,
Y dando larga cuerda a sus soldados ;
Que no la dar le fuera mas cordura,
Pues desto ha de nacer su desventura."

Arauco Domado, f. 307.

they did him wrong. Advices were despatched with all possible speed both by sea and land to the viceroy of Peru, don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza, marques de Cañete. The first arrived by sea. The marquis, who was confined to his bed by the gout, rose immediately upon receiving them, and gave orders for protecting the port of Callao: for this purpose three captains were ordered to levy a hundred men each, wherewith to man three ships, that with all speed were to be sent in pursuit of the pirate, for by that appellation the English commander was called, though the two countries were now at open war. His next care was to send the alarm to all the ports upon the coast, to Guatimala also, and to Mexico, and to Panama. His brother-in-law, don Beltrande Castro, was appointed to the command of the squadron: public opinion answered so well to his exertions, that many volunteers presented themselves, and there were two hidalgos who embarked each with ten men raised at his own cost. In eight days the three galleons were ready for sea, two of them carrying twenty brass guns, and the third thirty-four. The marquis went to visit them himself before their departure, well pleased at so fair an opportunity of signalling his administration. They were scarcely out of sight before intelligence came that Hawkins had been seen with three ships off Arica: it was thought, therefore, that he had been joined by his comrades which had been supposed to be lost, and farther preparations were deemed necessary, seeing that in the port of Callao there were some thirty vessels which any armed boat might have captured. The guards on the shore accordingly were strengthened, and another galleon, a brigantine, and a galizabra equipped, as well for the defence of the ships, as to reinforce the squadron, if it should put back in need of repairs.*

The ships which had been seen in Hawkins's company were the prize which he had brought from Valparaiso, and a smaller vessel captured near Arica.

* Observations, 213—215.

The former was found very leaky, and his people being "satisfied that their hope to find any thing of worth in her was vain, having searched her from port to stern," they burnt her, their number not being enough to bear any division, more than of mere necessity: the other they kept, intending to make her serve as a pinnace. With this pinnace and their boat they ranged the bay of Pisco without success; and shortly afterwards, about the middle of May, at daybreak, Hawkins came in sight of the Spanish squadron, being some two leagues to windward of it, but with little or no wind. The pinnace being furnished with oars came to him, and though his first thought had been to abandon her, it was held more advisable to keep her as long as they could, and that if it came "to likelihood of boarding," she should lay the boat aboard, enter all her men, and from thence enter the ship, and so to be forsaken. They then prepared for action, "praying," says sir Richard, "unto the Lord God of battles for his help and our deliverance, and putting ourselves wholly into his hands. About nine A. M. the breeze began to blow, and we to stand off into the sea, the Spaniards cheek by jowl with us, ever getting to the windward upon us, for that the shipping of the South Sea is moulded sharp under water and long, all their voyages depending upon turning to windward, and the breeze blowing ever southerly."*

The Spanish squadron consisted of three galleons†, and three smaller vessels. As the sun rose the wind freshened, which coming from the west, together with the swell that ever beats upon that coast, caused a chopping sea, "wherewith," says Hawkins, "the admiral of the Spaniards snapt his mainmast asunder, and so began

* Observations, 107.

† Six ships, sir Richard says, with well near 2000 men. Suarez de Figueroa mentions only the three galleons; but the Chilese poet confirms sir Richard's statement:—

"Apercibio en tres fuertes galeones
 Quanto era menester para el intento,
 Poniendo en orden otros tres patajes,
 Que puedan yr sirviendoles de pages." F. 316.

to lag astern, and with him other two ships. The vice-admiral split her mainsail, being come within shot of us upon our broadside, but to leewards: the rear-admiral cracked her mainyard asunder in the midst, being ahead of us; one of the armada which had gotten upon the broadside of us to windward durst not assault us. With these disgraces upon them, and the hand of God helping and delivering us, we began to consult what course was best to be taken to free ourselves. The admiral with other two were astern of us some four leagues; the rear-admiral in a manner right ahead, within culverine shot; and one upon our luff within shot also; the moon was to rise within two hours. After much debating, it was concluded that we should bear up before the wind, and seek to escape between the admiral and the vice-admiral, which we put in execution, not knowing of any other disgrace befallen them, but that of the rear-admiral, till after our surrender. In the morning, at break of day, we were clear of all our enemies, and so shaped our course along the coast for the bay of Atacames, where we purposed to trim our pinnace, and to renew our wood and water, and so to depart upon our voyage with all possible speed.”*

It does not appear that the *Dainty* suffered any thing from the weather, though the Spanish ships sustained so much injury that they put back to Callao, and the gale which disabled them was represented as one of the most violent storms that had ever been known in those parts.† The condition in which they returned might have convinced any reasonable persons that no blame could fairly be imputed to them for having failed in the object of their pursuit; but expectation had been raised so high by the unusual spirit which the government had manifested, and the still more unusual activity of its preparations,

* Observations, 218, 219.

† The Spaniards say that Hawkins was obliged to throw his booty overboard in this storm. (Pedro de Ofia, f. 333.) He says no such thing himself, — but it may very possibly have been convenient to his captors to say so. — Suarez de Figueroa, 216.

that the women of Callao and Lima reviled the soldiers, as cowards, when they landed: those of the lower order insulted them by strutting about with daggers and pistols at their sides; they even asked the viceroy to let them embark instead of those poltroons, and engaged that they would bring in the English pirate.* These unmerited reproaches wrought such an effect upon the men that they vowed to follow Hawkins to England, rather than return again without him, and be exposed to such dishonour.† As it had now been ascertained that Hawkins had only his own ship, so large a squadron was not thought necessary: one of the galleons, therefore, was refitted forthwith, and, with the galizabra, which was an excellent vessel though small, and a launch, was deemed force sufficient. The preparations were made with such haste lest the enemy should escape, that many boats were staved upon the stony beach, and many persons killed or maimed, and more would have been lost, if the viceroy had not personally set the example of going into the water to assist them.‡

Hawkins, meantime, holding on his course, captured a ship some fifty leagues north of Lima, took what provisions he required out of her, and then burnt her: the crew he put ashore near Truxillo, reserving only their pilot and a Greek, both at their own request; for they were afraid to land, having broken the law by weighing anchor from the port of Santa, before it was known that the coast was clear. He had manned his pinnace and boat to search the port of Payta, when he had sight of

* This is twice remarked by Pedro de Oña.

“ Con una brevedad jamas pensada,
 (A lo que de esta tierra se entendia,
 Y aun a lo que en España ser podia)
 Se puso a punto, y orden el armada.” F. 321.

And again,

“ Buelvo a dezir que es cosa estraña y nueva,
 El ver aca en las Indias despachada,
 No mas que a buelta de ojos una armada,
 Como esta, con la maquina que lleva.” F. 322.

† Observations, 118.

‡ Figueroa, 217.

a tall ship: this vessel having heard that he was on the coast, thought herself safer at sea than in the harbour, and had got under sail for that reason. Hawkins chased her all night and all the next day, but finally she escaped, for the Dainty was but a slow sailor; "a very bad quality for a ship engaged in such an expedition." Two other vessels in like manner outsailed him, and one of them "entreated his pinnace badly," when it was seen that the Dainty could not get up to support her; yet the Spaniards were so alarmed that they threw their despatches into the sea, and cast out great part of their lading, "for the ships in the South Sea, presuming upon the security from storms, load themselves like lighters or sand barges." On the 10th of June, he put into the bay of Atacames, about 260 leagues from Lima; and supposing themselves safe from any immediate pursuit, they stopped there to take in wood and water, and to repair the pinnace: this being done, they proposed to depart on the morning of the 18th, but on the preceding evening a sail was seen in the offing, and Hawkins at the importunity of his captain and company allowed the pinnace to give her chase, "which I should not have done," says he, "for it was our destruction." He gave the men precise orders, that if they did not return the same night, they should seek him at Cape San Francisco, seven leagues off. Accordingly, at nine on the following morning he weighed anchor and stood for that cape: after beating on and off two days without sight of the pinnace, he returned to the bay, where he descried her turning in without a mainmast, which had been carried away by their imprudent management in a squall. Nor was this their only misfortune; for standing in with the shore after the accident, they had mistaken the land, and, fancying themselves to windward of the bay, bore up, and put into the bay of St. Matthew, from whence, when they discovered their error, they had to "bring their tacks aboard, and turn and tide it up as they could." Two days were lost in repairing the

damage, and on the morrow they were to set sail, and "leave the coast of Peru and Quito."*

At daylight, the *Dainty* and her pinnace began to weigh their anchor, "to quit a station in which they had remained too long." As they were loosing their sails, a man from the mast-head descried two large ships and a small bark, near the cape, steering toward the bay. By the course they kept, Hawkins presently understood who they were: his men made them to be the fleet bound for Panama, and laden with treasure, and importuned him to "cut sail in all haste, and stand with them;" but he well knew that no shipping would stir upon that coast till they were sure he had left it, unless they were sent to seek him, and that this was not the time of year for the treasure ships. Moreover he represented that in remaining at anchor he kept the weather-gage; whereas if he got under sail, it being ebb tide, he should give them the advantage which was now his, by reason of the point of the bay: nothing was lost if they should prove to be merchantmen, for they were standing directly toward him; and should it prove to be the armada, time was gained for preparing themselves the better to fight. Thus he reasoned with them; but they, "altogether without reason, or against reason, broke out, some into vaunting and bragging, some into reproaches for want of courage, others into wishings that they had never come out of their country, if they should refuse to fight with any two ships whatsoever. And to mend the matter," says sir Richard, "the gunner for his part assured me, that with the first tire of shot he would lay one of them in the suds; and our pinnace that she would take the other to task. One promised that he would cut down their mainyard, another that he would take their flag. To some I turned the deaf ear; with others I dissembled, soothing and animating them to the execution of what they promised: and to give them better satisfaction, I condescended that

* Observations, 119—125. Burney, 129, 130.

our captain, with a competent number of men, should go with the pinnacle to discover them, giving them strict orders that they should not engage themselves in that manner, as they might not be able to come to us, nor we to succour them. In all these divisions and opinions, our master, Hugh Cornish, (who was a most sufficient man for government and valour, and well saw the errors of the multitude,) used his office as became him; and so did all those of best understanding.”*

The pinnacle soon discovered what they were, and they chased her back, “gunning at her” all the way. Sir Richard then stood out of the bay to meet them, that he “might have sea-room to fight.” He hoped to keep the weather-gage; “but the wind,” says he, “scanting with us and larging with them, we were forced to leeward; and the admiral †, weathering us, came down upon us; which, being within musket-shot, we hailed first with our noise of trumpets, then with our waytes, and after with our artillery, which they answered with artillery, two for one; for they had double the ordnance we had, and almost ten men for one. Immediately they came shoring aboard of us, upon our lee-quarter, contrary to our expectation and the custom of men-of-war; and, doubtless, had our gunner been the man he was reputed to be, and as the world sold him to me, she had received great hurt by that manner of boarding: but, contrary to all expectation, our stern pieces were unprimed, and so were all those which we had to leeward. Hereby all men are to take warning by me, not to trust any man in such extremities when he himself may see it done: this was my oversight, this my overthrow. For I, and all my company, had that satisfaction of the sufficiency and care of our gunner, as not any one of us ever imagined there would be any defect found in him. For my part, I,

* Observations, 125, 126. Burney, 130.

† *Aviendola ganado el barlovento,*
Ganancia en estos juegos de momento.

Arauco Domado, f. 337.

with the rest of our officers, occupied ourselves in clearing our decks, lacing our nettings, making of bulwarks, arming our tops, fitting our waste-clothes, tallowing our pikes, slinging our yards, doubling our sheets and tacks, placing and ordering our people, and procuring that they should be well fitted and provided of all things; leaving the artillery and other instruments of fire to the gunner's disposal and order, with the rest of his mates and adherents; which (as I said) was part of our perdition. For bearing me ever in hand that he had 500 cartridges in readiness, within one hour's fight we were forced to occupy three persons only in making and filling cartridges; and of 500 ells of canvass and other cloth given him for that purpose at sundry times, not one yard was to be found. For this we had no excuse; and, therefore, could not avoid the danger to charge and discharge with the ladle, especially in so hot a fight. Those instruments of fire wherein he had made me to spend excessively before our going to sea now appeared not, neither the brass balls of artificial fire, to be shot with slurbows (whereof I had six bows and 200 balls, and which are of great account and service, either by sea or land): he had stowed them in such manner (though in double barrels) as the salt water had spoiled them all; so that coming to use them, not one was serviceable." In fine, the man proved as inefficient in action as he had been negligent in his office before; and was either so conscious of his incapacity, so cowardly, or so false *, that sir Richard himself, and the master of the ship, "were forced to play the gunners." †

The pinnace had advanced so far that she was in

* "Some of our company," says Hawkins, "had him in suspicion to be more friend to the Spaniards than to us, for that he had served some years in the Terceras as gunner, and that he did all this of purpose. Few of our pieces were clear when we came to use them, and some had the shot first put in, and after the powder. Besides, after our surrendry, it was laid to his charge that he should say he had a brother that served the king in Peru, and that he thought he was in the armada, and how he would not for all the world he should be slain. Whether this were true or no, I know not; but I am sure all in general gave him an ill report, and that he in whose hands the chief execution of the whole fight consisted, executed nothing as was promised and expected."

† Observations, 126, 127.

danger of being cut off: coming to lay the *Dainty* aboard, the vice-admiral was close up with her, and some of the men entered their own ship over the enemy's bowsprit. Hawkins says they were not a little comforted when they got their people on board, for they were but threescore and fifteen in all, men and boys, when the action began, and the Spaniards were 1300, "little more or less, and those of the choice of Peru." The Spanish commander, don Beltran de Castro, had had no naval experience, but don Miguel Angel Felipon, who had for many years had the command at sea * on that coast, was associated with him. Twice in the course of the day the enemy were beaten off; towards evening they made a third attempt, having concerted that the capitana (or admiral) should approach upon the weather-bow, and fall aboard the *Dainty* upon her broadside; and that the vice-admiral should lay his ship upon the capitana's weather-quarter, and reinforce her with men, or act otherwise, as occasion might require. Not waiting to observe this order, the vice-admiral, eager to secure the credit for his own company, came to windward on the English ship's broadside: he paid dearly for this rashness; for "being utterly without fights or defences, the English, what with their muskets and what with their fireworks, cleared his decks in a moment;" and Hawkins says, that if he had then had but a dozen men to have entered her, she might have been carried: "but our company," he adds, "being few, and the principal of them slain or hurt, we durst not; neither was it wisdom to adventure the separation of those which remained:" so it was held for the best and soundest resolution to keep their force together in defence of their own. In this attempt the vice-admiral lost six and thirty men, including his pilot. The admiral came to his assistance, and brought him off, not without loss himself; and this third lesson made the

* Hawkins calls him general of the South Sea, for the carriage and waftage of the silver from Lima to Panama. No doubt this is the person whose name was used by Drake in the harbour of Callao. See p. 147.

enemy determine upon the course which from the first they ought to have taken, — to make use of their artillery only, and either sink the *Dainty*, or compel her to strike. This they “ put in execution, placing themselves within a musket-shot of her weather-quarter, and sometimes on her broadside,” and thus continually playing upon her without intermission, “ which was, doubtless, the best and securest determination they could take.” *

Meantime the English had lost many men. Of the two persons on whom Hawkins principally relied for the prosecution of the voyage, in case of his own sickness or death, one was mortally wounded, the other slain ; and he himself had received six wounds, “ one in the neck, very perilous ; another through the arm, perishing the bone, and cutting the sinews close by the arm-pit.” † At times, the Spaniards parleyed, and invited them to

* Observations, 132, 135, 136.

† The Chilese poet says, that Hawkins himself seized the admiral's standard, and that don Diego de Avila, from whose hand Mars himself could not have wrested it, defended it, with five others, so well that the Englishman came badly off.

“ Supo con otros cinco defendello
De suerte que el Ingles salio mal dello.”

There were various reports concerning this, some saying that it was another English officer who laid hold of the standard, rather by chance than design, others that Hawkins

“ El mismo por las suyas le echa mano
Valiendose de un lazo.”

I am not sure that I interpret this rightly in supposing it to mean that he threw a noose (the Indian *lasso*) over it ; but the anecdote, as relating to sir Richard, is altogether false ; and this circumstance, which, if the rest were true, might seem to cast a suspicion over it, is likely enough to have been reported and believed in Peru. Suarez de Figueroa gives the same account, p. 218. The poet admits that all his details here are doubtful.

“ Fuera de que ninguno niega en ello
Que padeciese fuerza el estandarte,
Y que esto fue en el tiempo que Richarte
Sacó de un arcabuz herido el cuello :
Y aunque se alabasse menos dello,
Un fiero pedrefial por otra parte,
A la misma sazon le dio en un brazo,
Dexandole sin carne gran pedazo.” F. 339, 340.

Pedro de Oña concludes his poem in the middle of this action. He promised a second part, but it never appeared. Two editions of the first were published, both at Madrid, in 1596 and 1608. Both are exceedingly scarce. My copy (which has the arms of the Gama family on the binding) is of the later edition.

surrender, promising them the usages of good war. The captain of the Dainty "came, with some other," to sir Richard, and, in the whole company's name, urged him to accept of these terms, saying that "scarcely any men were left to traverse the guns, or oppose themselves for defence, if the enemy should board with them again." Hawkins was in a state of extreme suffering, believing himself to be at the point of death: he roused himself, however, so as to protest * against any such opinion, and to entreat his people that they would not commit themselves to the mercy, or trust the promises of the Spaniards, who had so often broken their faith, and who either put their English prisoners to death as pirates, or, which was worse, delivered them over to the inquisition. This argument had its due weight with them: the captain declared that he entirely agreed in opinion with him, "and had only made the proposal in condescension to others; and all who were present vowed either to remain freemen, or sell their lives at a price which the enemy would not be willing to pay for them. With this resolution," says sir Richard, "both captain and company took their leave of me, every one particularly, and the greater part with tears and embracings, as though we were forthwith to depart this world, and never see one the other again, but in heaven, — promising never more to speak of surrendry." †

True to this determination, they continued the action through the night: an hour before daybreak, the enemy edged off "to breathe, and to remedy such defects as were amiss." This "time of interdiction" the English employed in "repairing their sails and tacklings, stopping their leaks, fishing and wolling their masts and yards, mending their pumps, and fitting and providing themselves for the day to come." Little as the interval was wherein so much was to be done, "yet gave it

* In his book he has given what he said in the form of an oration. It is remarkable that so judicious a man should not have perceived that no oration could ever have been more unfitly introduced.

† Observations, 143—147.

great relief and comfort to them, and made them better able to endure the defence; for, otherwise, the ship must have sunk before its surrender, having many shot under water, and the pumps shot to pieces." When the action was renewed on the second day, the vice-admiral came upon their quarter, and a shot from one of the stern pieces carried away his mainmast close by the deck: this brought the admiral to his assistance. If the *Dainty* had been a better sailor she might at this time have escaped*; and if Hawkins had not been incapable of giving any directions, good use might have been made of the time while one of the enemy was thus disabled: but he knew nothing of what passed; "neither," he says, "was I able to direct, though I had known it, being in a manner senseless, what with my wounds, and what with the agony of the surrendry proposed; for that I had seldom known it spoken of but that it came afterwards to be put in execution. And so we stood away from them, which we should not have done, but have prosecuted the occasion, and brought ourselves close upon her weather-gage, and with our great and small shot have hindered them from repairing their harms: if we had thus done, they had been forced to cut all by the board; and, it may be, lying ahull, or to leeward of us, we might have sunk her. At the least it would have declared to our enemies that we had them in little estimation, when, able to go from them, we would not; and, perhaps, have been a cause to have made them leave us. But this occasion was let slip:" so was the opportunity of getting the weather-gage; and while they vainly endeavoured to make off, the Spaniards had time to repair their damage, so as again to come up with them, and renew the fight.†

The action continued through the second night: before daybreak there was the same intermission as on the preceding day; but there had been no interval for rest, nor had the men on either side taken any other refresh-

* Burney, 130.

† Observations, 147—149.

ment than bread and wine, of which latter the English took too largely. In other respects they behaved like Englishmen ; and had they been under better discipline, and not deprived of their best officers, it seems probable that, even against so great a superiority of force, they might have proved victorious ; their artillery, " being of greater bore, was of better effect for sinking and spoiling." But the enemy had the weather-gage : his guns, therefore, told with terrible effect ; and, on the afternoon of the third day, " the Dainty had fourteen shot under water, seven or eight foot of water in the hold, the sails all torn, the masts all perished, and the pumps shot to pieces : " many of her crew had fallen, and most of the survivors were wounded ; for under the excitement of wine they had exposed themselves madly * to the Spanish

* Sir Richard mentions " two things, which were most prejudicial unto us, and the principal causes of our perdition, the errors and faults of late days, crept in among those who follow the sea, and learned from the Flemings and Easterlings. The one is to fight unarmed where they may fight armed ; the other is, on coming to fight, to drink themselves drunk. Yea, some are so mad, that they mingle powder with wine, to give it the greater force ; imagining that it giveth spirit, strength, and courage, and taketh away all fear and doubt. The latter is, for the most part, true ; but the former is false and beastly, and altogether against reason. In fights, all receipts which add courage and spirit are of great regard to be allowed and used ; and so is a draught of wine to be given to every man before he come to action : but more than enough is pernicious ; for, exceeding the measure, it offendeth and enfeebleth the senses, converting the strength, which should resist the force of the enemy, into weakness : it dulleth and blindeth the understanding, and consequently depraveth any man of true valour ; for that he is disenabled to judge and apprehend the occasion which may be offered to assault and retire in time convenient, the reins of reason being put into the hands of passion and disorder. After I was wounded this *nimum* bred great disorder and inconvenience in our ship : the pot continually walking, infused desperate and foolish hardiness in many, who, blinded with the fume of the liquor, considered not of any danger, but thus and thus would stand at hazard ; some in vain glory vaunting themselves ; some other railing upon the Spaniards ; another inviting his companion to come and stand by him, and not to budge a foot from him ; which cost the lives of many a good man, slain by our enemies' musketeers, who suffered not a man to show himself, but they presently overthrew him with speed and watchfulness."

He says also that though he had " great preparation of armour, as well of proof, as of light corselets, not a man would use them ; " and this he calls " great madness and a lamentable fault, worthy to be banished from among all reasonable people, and well to be weighed by all commanders." In his opinion armour was more necessary by sea than by land ; for on shore the bullet only hurteth, but in a ship he had seen the splinters kill and hurt many at once, when the shot passed without touching any person. The greatest care of the Spaniards was to be well armed : " he who cannot come to the price of a corselet will have a coat of mail, a jacket, at least a buff jerkin, or a privy coat ; and hardly will they be found without it, albeit they live and serve in extreme hot countries."

musketeers. The Spaniards still offered "good war, life and liberty, and an embarkation to England." All were now of opinion that it was best to accept these terms before the ship sunk, seeing that unless a miracle were wrought in their behalf by God's almighty power, it was impossible by any other way to expect deliverance or life. Hawkins could no longer refuse his assent: he had nothing to hope from the surrender, desperate as his wounds appeared to be, but for that very reason he might the better consent to it, having done his duty to the uttermost. A flag of truce was, therefore, hoisted in place of the ensign; and a Spanish prisoner, who had kept in the hold during the action, was despatched to tell don Beltran de Castro that if he would give his word and oath for the observance of these terms, the ship should be surrendered; otherwise every man would die fighting.*

Some difficulty occurred before this message could be delivered. Upon sight of the flag of truce the Spaniards wished the *Dainty* to hoist out her boat; but it had been shot all to pieces, and so had theirs. They then called to the English to amain their sails, which could not be done, because they were slung, and there were not men enough left to hand them. Meantime the vice-admiral coming upon the *Dainty's* quarter, and not knowing what had passed, fired two of his chase pieces, wounded the captain very sore in the thigh, and maimed one of the master's mates. He ceased to fire as soon as he knew that the flag of surrender had been hoisted; and when the Spaniards understood that the English could neither hoist out a boat nor strike their sails,

Had it not been for these errors, he thought that the *Dainty* might, perhaps, have freed here, "for our close fights were such as we were secure, and they open to us; and what with our cubridge heads, one answering the other, our hatches upon bolts, our brackes in our decks and gunner-room, it was impossible to take us as long as any competent number of men had remained: twenty persons would have sufficed for defence; and for this such ships are called impregnable, and are not to be taken but by surrender, nor to be overcome but with boarding or sinking, as in us by experience was verified."—Pp. 150, 151.

* Observations, 153—155.

the admiral laid them aboard. Before any man entered the Spanish prisoner made his way to the general. He was received with great courtesy ; and don Beltran, in answer to his message, said that he received the commander and his people *a buena guerra*, to the laws of fair war and quarter : he swore, by the Almighty's name, and by his habit of Alcantara, the green cross of which order he wore upon his breast, that he would give them their lives with good treatment, and send them as speedily as he could to their own country. Hawkins had required some pledge for confirmation, and, as such, don Beltran took off his glove and sent it him.*

Sir Richard always believed that it was don Beltran's intention honourably and faithfully to perform all that he had engaged for. " Lest some insolency," he says, " might be offered to me by the common soldiers, who seldom have respect to any person on such occasions, especially in the case I was, he sent a principal captain, brought up long time in Flanders, called Pedro Alvares de Pulgar, to take care of me, and while the ships were on aboard the other to bring me into his ship, which he accomplished with great humanity and courtesy, despising the bars of gold that were shared before his face, which he might alone have enjoyed if he would ; and truly he was, as after I found by trial, a true captain, — a man worthy of any charge, and of the noblest condition that I have known any Spaniard. The general received me with great courtesy and compassion, even with tears in his eyes, and words of great consolation, and commanded me to be accommodated in his own cabin, where he sought to cure and comfort me the best he could. The like he did with all our hurt men." The number killed sir Richard has not mentioned : the wounded, who survived the first day, were nearly forty, and of these every man recovered. †

* Observations, 156.

† " The thing," says Hawkins, " that ought to move us to give the Almighty especial thanks and praises was that they were cured in a manner without instruments or salves." Considering what the instruments and salves in those days were, this explains why the wounded recovered :

The Spaniards were so eagerly employed in ransacking their prize that they had nearly lost her: her mainmast fell by the board; and the water increased so fast in the hold, that it was necessary immediately to send a large party of able men, who, by great exertion, saved her from sinking, and in six and thirty hours so far repaired her that they could make with her for Perico, the port of Panama, that, though more than 200 leagues distant, being the nearest place to leeward where their wants could be supplied. They anchored there, some two leagues from the town, about three weeks after the action: as soon as don Beltran had advised the audience of his success, orders were given that "bonfires should be made, and every man put luminaries in their houses, according to the fashion used by the Spaniards on their great holydays, or for glad tidings; so that with the lights in their churches, in their windows and galleries, and in the corners of their houses, the city, being close by the sea-shore, appeared in the distance, when night came on, to those on board, as though it had been in flames."

During their passage* to this place sir Richard heard

—"For the chests were all broken to pieces, and many of their simples and compounds thrown into the sea: those which remained were such as were thrown about the ship in broken pots and bags; which, at the end of three days, were, by the general's orders, sought and gathered together. These, with some instruments of small moment procured from those who had reserved them to a different end, did not only serve for our cure, but also for the curing of the Spaniards, being many more than those of our company."—P. 159.

Suarez de Figueroa says, that the English were 120 in number; of whom 27 were killed, and 17 wounded. The loss of the Spaniards he states at 28 killed and 22 wounded.

* Miguel Angel one day asked sir Richard "for what purpose the little short arrows served, which were found aboard his ship in so great quantity. I satisfied him that they were for our muskets. They are not as yet in use among the Spaniards, yet of singular effect and execution, as our enemies confessed; for the upper work of their ships being musket proof, in all places they passed through both sides with facility, and wrought extraordinary disasters, which caused admiration to see themselves wounded with small shot, when they thought themselves secure, and by no means could find where they entered, nor come to the sight of any of the shot. Hereof they proved to profit themselves after; but for that they wanted the tampkins, which are first to be driven home before the arrow be put in; and as they understood not the secret, they rejected them as uncertain, and therefore not to be used. But of all the shot used now-a-days,

enough to make him fear that the terms on which he had surrendered were likely to be disregarded. There were some who censured the general for giving such good treatment to Lutherans, with whom they said no faith was to be kept. And there were some who maintained that men, who had fought like good soldiers, deserved good quarter, even these; and don Beltran himself held all English men of war to be pirates. He flattered himself that he had succeeded in satisfying them on this point; and establishing that men, acting under their sovereign's commission against an enemy, with whom there was open war, were entitled to all the honourable usages comprehended under the title of good war. A discussion afterward arose upon what that term imported, and sir Richard's opinion was required, which he, not without some apprehension that a bait might be laid to entrap him, at length gave to this effect; that he had ever understood it to secure for the prisoner not only his life and good treatment, but also that he should not be urged to any thing contrary to his conscience as touching religion, nor be seduced or menaced from his allegiance, but rather to be ransomed for his month's pay, this being what he had known practised in his time among all civil and noble nations. And the English had enlarged it in one point more toward those Spaniards who had rendered them upon the terms of *buena guerra*, delivering them without ransom: "but the covetousness of our age," he pursued, "hath brought on many abuses, and excluded the principal officers from partaking the benefit of this privilege, in leaving them to the discretion of the victor, being many times poorer than the common soldiers, their qualities considered, whereby they are commonly put to more than the ordinary ransom; and not being able of themselves to accomplish it, are forgotten of their princes,

for the annoying of an enemy in fight by sea, few are of greater moment for many respects, which I hold not convenient to treat of in public."—
P. 164.

and sometimes suffer long imprisonment, which they should not." Don Beltran bade him not trouble himself concerning the last point ; and gave him his word that if the king left him to his disposal, as of right he belonged, his ransom (if any were thought due) should be only a couple of greyhounds for himself, and another couple for his brother the conde da Lemos.*

Don Beltran showed sir Richard a letter from the king of Spain to the viceroy, giving him an accurate account of his intended voyage, the ships, their burthen, and their force, artillery and men. Hereby the Spaniard told him he might discern whether the king had friends in England, and good and speedy advice of all that concerned him there. Sir Richard replied it was no wonder, for he had plenty of gold, which worked stranger effects than this, and his expedition was public and notorious to all the kingdom.† He learnt here that the viceroy of Mexico had fitted out an armada to seek him, and to defend the coast. Here, too, he had the mortification to hear that his poor ship, which had received her Dainty name from the lips of queen Elizabeth herself, had imposed on her, with all solemnity, the Spanish and Roman Catholic name of La Visitacion, having been captured on the day of that festival, by the Roman style. She was shored up at the time ; and in the midst of the ceremony the props on one side gave way, and she fell over, " entreating many of them that were in her very badly."

Here sir Richard ends the account of his unfortunate voyage. What happened to him and to the rest during their imprisonment, with the rarities and particularities of the Peru and Tierra-firma, his voyage to Spain, and what happened to him in prison both in Peru, Tercera, Seville, and Madrid ; these things " I leave," said he, " for a second part of this discourse, if God give life and convenient place and rest, necessary for so tedious and troublesome a work ; desiring God that is Almighty

* Observations, 162, 163.

† Ibid. 168.

to give his blessing to this and the rest of my intentions, that it and they may be fruitful to his glory and the good of all : then shall my desires be accomplished, and I account myself most happy." * This intention he had delayed too long ; for having some business in the year 1622, while the first part was in the press, to attend the privy council, he died suddenly of an apoplectic stroke, in one of the outer rooms.† It may seem remarkable that he should have postponed this duty so long, for as a duty he regarded it.‡ The cause, probably, was not merely that it was a painful task, and there was a part of it in which, however satisfied in his own conscience, it would have been difficult for him to have justified himself in the eyes of his countrymen.

The terms on which the Dainty had surrendered were grossly violated. Don Beltran, himself, is said to have sent most of the ship's company to serve in the galleys at Cartagena § ; and some few to Spain, where they were not likely to experience better treatment. Sir Richard, and twenty others, he took with him to Lima. That much kindness was shown them by individuals there is more than once declared in sir Richard's narrative ; but in a despatch from the king of Spain to the viceroy, in reply to the details of the victory, this notable passage occurs : — " Inasmuch as relates to the punish-

* Observations, 169.

† Prince.

‡ This he declared in his dedication to prince Charles : — " Amongst other neglects prejudicial to this state, I have observed that many the worthy and heroic acts of our nation have been buried and forgotten ; the actors themselves being desirous to shun emulation in publishing them ; and those which overlived them, fearful to add or to diminish from the actor's worth, judgment, and valour, have forborne to write them ; by which succeeding ages have been deprived of the fruits which might have been gathered out of their experience had they been committed to record. To avoid this neglect, and for the good of my country, I have thought it my duty to publish the Observations of my South Sea Voyage ; and for that unto your highness, your heirs and successors, it is most likely to be advantageous (having brought on me nothing but loss and misery), I am bold to use your name, a protection unto it, and to offer it, with all humbleness and duty, to your highness's approbation ; which if it purchase, I have attained my desire, which shall ever aim to perform duty."

§ " A Cartagena los Ingleses luego
A las galeras don Beltran destierra,
Esta la chusma fue, que otros embia
A España por memoria de aquel dia."

LOPE DE VEGA, *Dragontea*, f. 382.

ment of the English general, and the others who were taken in the said ship, whom you say the inquisition had demanded, and that having no order there concerning my will as to what should be done with them, you had procured with the holy office that it should defer bringing out the said general in an auto (da fé), because it was understood that he is a person of quality: that which appears good to us in this matter is, that justice should be done conformably to the quality of the persons." *

Here, then, it appears that the pretension of treating the prisoners as pirates was dropped; but that the justice of the inquisition was "to take its course with all who were not of a certain quality:" that is, the Spaniards thought they might burn with impunity such common men as resisted the ordinary and extraordinary means of conversion; but that if they martyred a person of distinction the English government and the English nation might be roused to vengeance. What was the fate of sir Richard's companions is not known; but he himself changed his religion.† It ought to be presumed

* This is stated on Spanish authority, and I subjoin here the original: —
"En quanto al castigo del general Ingles, y los demas que se tomaron en el dicho navio, que dices los pidio la inquisicion, y que por no tener orden alla de lo que es mi voluntad se haga dellos, procurarias con el santo oficio que se fuesse dilatando el sacar al dicho general al auto, por aver entendido que es persona de calidad, lo que en esto ha parecido es, que se haga justicia conforme a la calidad de las personas."—*Suarez de Figueroa*, p. 222.

† Lope de Vega affirms this in his *Dragontea* (canto iii. ff. 383, 384.). I have not seen it mentioned any where else: but it is not a circumstance that he would have invented; and if it had not been true sir Richard would certainly have contradicted it, for it can hardly be supposed that he had not seen this poem (which was first published in 1598), nor that (even in that unlikely case) he should not have heard that he was represented in it as one who had deplored his heresy, and

"A quien movia un pensamiento santo
El corazon, del misma Dios movido;
Y no fue vano el fruto de aquel llanto,
Que su esteril terreno humedecido,
La simiente cvangelica recibe,
Y en el gremio Catholico se escribe."

Something concerning it might, perhaps, be found in *Lima Fundada*, a poem by the many-named doctor don Pedro de Peralta Barnuevo Rocha y Benavides, printed in that city in 1732. The first part of this poem I have never seen: but I see by the second that the fifth canto contains an account of all the viceroys down to the accession of Philip IV.; and in what he says of their successors there is much relating to the Buccaneers. The Spaniards have many historical poems relating to their conquests: the poetry in them is of little value, and the fiction of less, but many facts are preserved there which have been nowhere else recorded.

that he was sincere in the 'change, because the king's letter makes it apparent that he was not in the same danger as his people ; but it would not have been easy to persuade the English of this, even if there had been religious liberty enough at home to have allowed him to enter upon his vindication. This may explain why it was so long before he began to publish his narrative, and why it was found at his death not to have been continued farther.

The change, though it prevented the inquisition from renewing its claims upon him, did not secure his personal freedom ; for the Spaniards raised a question whether don Beltran, who derived his commission mediately from the viceroy and not directly from the king, could grant terms by which the king's government should be bound : and though this was at length conceded, and though don Beltran earnestly solicited that they should fully be observed in sir Richard's case, he was, nevertheless, sent to Spain as a prisoner, and kept in prison some years, with the view of deterring others by this severity from entering the South Sea. At length, the conde de Miranda, as president of the council, delivered a peremptory sentence that he was to be discharged ; " for no enemy," he said, " would ever yield himself, unless terms, deliberately granted by the king's captains, were faithfully kept." *

* Camden, 489.

SIR RICHARD GREENVILLE.

SIR RICHARD HAWKINS and sir Richard Greenville were the only naval commanders during Elizabeth's reign who were compelled to strike their flag to the Spaniards ; and in both cases the circumstances were such, that no victory ever tended to raise the reputation of the English for courage more than these defeats.

Richard, the son of sir Roger Greenville, was born about the year 1540, somewhere, it is supposed, in the west of England, of a family lineally descended from Rollo of Normandy. He was one of those adventurers who in 1566 obtained the queen's permission to serve in Hungary against the Turks ; and it has been said, that he was on board the Christian fleet in the great battle of Lepanto. Serving afterwards in Ireland, sir Henry Sydney was so well satisfied with his conduct, that upon his recommendation the queen appointed him sheriff of the city of Cork during her pleasure. In 1571, he was elected one of the members for the county of Cornwall, and was knighted when he became high sheriff of that county. In 1584 Raleigh obtained a patent to discover, have, hold, and occupy such remote heathen and barbarous lands, not actually possessed by any Christian prince, as to him, his heirs and assigns, should seem good. Sir Richard Greenville is said to have been of the copartners with him in the first voyage to Virginia ; and when upon the report made of that country, it was determined to plant a colony there, he commanded the squadron, consisting of seven sail, in which the adventurers were taken out.

They sailed in April, 1585, and on the 12th of May

anchored in Mosquito bay, in the island of Puerto Rico, within falcon shot of the shore. Sir Richard landed, and fortified himself in a position where one side was protected by the sea, another by a river, and the remaining parts environed with woods. There he felled timber, and built a pinnace with it, "the Spaniards not daring to make or offer resistance." After some days a party of twenty horsemen appeared on the opposite bank: they showed a flag of truce, and two from either side met on the sands. The Spaniards saluted the invaders courteously, but began, "according to their Spanish proud humours (says the English relater), to expostulate with our men about their arrival, and fortifying in their country. They were told in reply, that our intention was only to furnish ourselves with water and other necessaries whereof we stood in need, which we craved might be yielded us with fair and friendly means, otherwise our resolution was to relieve ourselves by the sword." The Spaniards, we are told, upon "this discreet answer," made "large promises of all courtesy and favour." On the morrow the pinnace was finished and launched; and sir Richard marched some four miles into the country, expecting the coming of the Spaniards, according to their promise, to furnish us with victuals: "but they, keeping their old custom for perjury and breach of promise, came not; whereupon the general fired the woods thereabouts. The same day he fired his fort also, and re-embarked his men."*

No suspicion seems to have been entertained that the Spaniards might have alleged a better reason for being late with their supplies, than the adventurers could have given for so hastily acting as enemies. Greenville, however, proceeded as if there had been open war. On the night after he set sail, he took a Spanish frigate, which the Spaniards wisely forsook upon sight of the squadron; and the next day he captured another, "with good and rich freight, and divers persons of account in her, whom

* Hakluyt, iii. 251.

he ransomed for good round sums, and afterwards landed on the island." One of these prizes was sent to Roxo bay, on the south-west of the island, where Ralph Lane, the intended commander of the colony, landed and intrenched himself, while a party in sight, and in defiance of the Spaniards, carried off as much salt from one of their salt hills as was required for the use of the fleet. This done, they sailed for Hispaniola, and anchored at Isabella.*

Here a friendly intercourse took place. The governor came to the sea-side, and Greenville landed. Due precautions were taken on both parts, and due faith observed; and while they conferred, the English "provided two banquetting houses, covered with green boughs, one for the gentlemen, the other for the servants, and a sumptuous banquet was brought in, served all in plate, with the sound of trumpets and concert of music, wherewith the Spaniards were more than delighted." In recompense for this banquet, the Spaniards "caused a great herd of white bulls and kine to be brought together from the mountains, and appointed for every gentleman and captain that could ride a horse ready saddled, and then singled out three of the best of the herd to be hunted by horsemen after their manner." — "The pastime grew very pleasant;" and in the course of three hours the three beasts were killed: one of them having taken to the sea, was there shot with a musket. "After the sport many rare presents and gifts were bestowed on both parts; and the next day we played the merchants, in bargaining with them by way of truck and exchange of divers of their commodities, as horses, mares, kine, bulls, goats, swine, sheep, bull-hides, sugar, ginger, pearl, tobacco, and such like commodities of the island."†

They departed from the Spaniards with great goodwill; yet they imputed the courtesy with which they had been entertained rather to their own vigilance and

* Hakluyt, 252.

† Ibid.

strength than to any hearty good-will. Had they been weaker, doubtless, they said, "they might have looked for no better treatment than Hawkins had received at St. Juan de Ulloa, or Oxenham on the isthmus of Darien." Sailing from thence on the 7th of June, they reached their destined harbour in Virginia by the end of the month. Greenville, in an eight days' expedition, "first discovered the towns of Pomeioc, Aguascogoc, and Secotan, and the great lake called Paquie. One of those towns he burnt, and spoiled the corn about it, because an Indian had stolen from him a silver cup; and having remained about two months to settle the colony, he sailed for England. On the way he captured a Spanish ship of 300 tons, richly laden, boarding her with a boat made from the materials of some chests, and so ill, or hastily put together, that it opened and sunk at the ship's side, as soon as he and his men were out of it."* In the following year he returned with three well appointed ships, to visit and reinforce the settlers; but he found the settlement deserted. The colonists, who had declared it to be "the goodliest soil under the cope of heaven, and a country to which, if it had but horses and kine in some reasonable proportion, and were inhabited by Englishmen, no realm in Christendom would be comparable †," had gladly accepted ‡ Drake's offer of a passage, and forsaken it, leaving all things confusedly, as if they had been chased from thence by a mighty army. "And no doubt," says a contemporary, "so they were; for the hand of God came upon them for the cruelties and outrages committed by some of them against the native inhabitants." After seeking them in vain, and not being able to obtain any tidings concerning them, sir Richard, unwilling to lose the right of possession, landed fifteen men in the isle of Roanoak, supplied them plentifully for two years, and so departed. On his way homewards, he landed on some of the Azores, "and spoiled the towns of all such things as

* Hakluyt, 253.

† Ibid. 255.

‡ See p. 197.

were worth carriage," carrying away also some Spaniards as prisoners. "With these and many other exploits done by him in this voyage, as well outward as homeward, he returned into England." *

A man of sir Richard Greenville's daring disposition was not likely to remain inactive in those stirring times :
 1591. but nothing is related of him till five years afterwards, when he was sent out as vice-admiral, with seven sail of the queen's ships, under the lord Thomas Howard. The object of this expedition was to intercept the Spanish fleet from the West Indies, which had wintered in the Havannah the preceding year, lest it should fall into the hands of Hawkins and Frobisher. It was now open war between Spain and England ; and on this occasion both nations gave proof of vigour and perseverance in their designs. Philip caused this West India fleet to delay sailing till so late in the season, that it endangered their shipwreck, "choosing rather to hazard the perishing of ships, men, and goods, than that they should become the prize of the English." There were two motives for this delay : he wanted time for fitting out a far superior naval force, and he hoped that the lord Thomas would have consumed his provisions, and, therefore, return home : but ships and stores were sent from England to the squadron, which was thus enabled to keep the sea ; and the Spaniards were not less disappointed in their expectation of coming upon the English by surprise : for the earl of Cumberland was then off the coast of Spain ; and he having obtained intelligence of their designs, despatched advice to lord Thomas.†

When this advice arrived, the English fleet was riding at anchor near the island of Flores : it consisted then of six queen's ships, six victuallers of London, the bark Raleigh, and two or three other pinnaces. Many of the men were on shore, some providing ballast, some filling their casks, and others "refreshing themselves with such things as they could either for money or by force recover." The news had scarcely been delivered before
 Aug. 31.

* Hakluyt, 265.

† See p. 11. Monson, 163.

the enemy's fleet hove in sight. It was the first time, except in the case of the great armada, that the king of Spain had "shown himself strong at sea *;" and his force amounted to about fifty sail.† They were "filled with companies of soldiers, in some 200, besides the mariners, in some 500, in others (it is said) 800; whereas in ours there were none beside the seamen, except the servants of the commanders, and some few voluntary gentlemen only." The English ships, too, were "all pestered and romaging; every thing out of order; very light for want of ballast; and what was most to their disadvantage, half the men of every ship sick, and utterly unserviceable."‡ Some of them had not time to weigh anchor, but "were driven to slip their cables and set sail." Greenville was the last that remained, "choosing," says sir Richard Hawkins §, "rather to sacrifice his life, and to pass all danger whatsoever, than to fail in his obligation, by gathering together those who were ashore; though with the hazard of his ship and company.||

The lord Thomas and the other ship "very hardly recovered the wind," which sir Richard was not able to do. Seeing this, the master and others advised him to cut his mainsail and cast about, and trust to the

* Monson, 321.

† The account in Hakluyt (p. 173.) says 53. Monson says 55. (p. 163.) Linschoten states it at 30 great ships, Biscayan, Portugueze, and Spanish, ten Dutch fly-boats, which had been embargoed at Lisbon for the king's use, and other small yachts and *pataxas* for the service of the fleet; "om af en aen te loopen, ende alle dinghen te outdecken."

‡ Hakluyt, 170.

§ Observations, 10.

|| The account in Hakluyt agrees with this. Sir William Monson, on the contrary, says, "that when the lord Thomas warily, and like a discreet general, weighed anchor, and made signs to the rest of his fleet to do the like, with a purpose to get the wind of them, sir Richard Greenville, being a stubborn man, and imagining this fleet to come from the Indies, and not to be the armada of which they were informed, would by no means be persuaded by his master or company to cut his cable, to follow his admiral; nay, so headlong and rash he was, that he offered violence to those that advised him so to do. But the old saying, that a wilful man is the cause of his own woe, could not be more truly verified than in him; for when the armada approached, and he beheld the greatness of the ships, he began to see and repent of his folly, and when it was too late, would have freed himself of them, but in vain." (P. 163.)

The better motive may fairly be ascribed to Greenville in this part of his conduct. That he sacrificed himself and his ships afterwards, in a spirit of obstinate and desperate bravery, seems certain.

sailing of the ship, for the Seville squadron was on his weather-bow. His ship, the *Revenge*, was noted as one of the "best for sail in England;" but he refused to turn from the enemy, declared that he chose rather to die than dishonour himself, his country, and her majesty's ship, and threatened that if any man laid hand upon the sail, he would cause him to be hanged. "He would pass through the two squadrons in spite of them," he said, "and enforce that of Seville to give him way." And this "he performed upon divers of the foremost who sprang and fell under the lee of the *Revenge*; but the other course," he who relates this adds, "had been the better, and might right well have been answered in so great an impossibility of prevailing." While he in this determination prepared for battle, the great *St. Philipe*, "being in the wind of him, and coming toward him, becalmed his sails in such sort that his vessel could neither make way nor feel the helm, so huge and high carged was the Spanish ship, being of 1500 tons, which after laid the *Revenge* aboard." This great galleon "carried three tier of ordnance on a side, and eleven pieces in every tier; and she shot eight forth right out of her chase, besides those of her stern ports." The ships that were under her lee luffing up, also laid him aboard, two on his larboard, and two on his starboard.

In the beginning of the action, the *George Noble* of London, which had received some shot through her, fell under the lee of the *Revenge*, and asked sir Richard "what he would command him, being but one of the victuallers, and of small force?" Sir Richard bade him save himself, and leave him to his fortune. It was said, as if in excuse for the other ships, that "the lord Thomas would have entered between the squadrons, but the rest would not condescend, and his master offered to leap into the sea rather than conduct her majesty's ships to be a prey to the enemy, where there was no hope or possibility either of defence or victory. Master Thomas Vavisor in the *Foresight* stayed two

ours as near the Revenge as the weather would permit, not forsaking the fight, till he was like to be encompassed by the Spaniards, and with great difficulty cleared himself." The others "gave divers volleys of shot, and entered as far as their own necessity to keep the weather-gage allowed, until they were parted by night." From three in the afternoon "the fight continued very terrible all that evening: the Spaniards made many attempts to carry their enemy by boarding, "but were still repulsed again and again, and beaten back into their own ships or into the sea." The great St. Philipe having received the lower tier of the Revenge, discharged with cross-bar shot, shifted herself with all diligence from her side, utterly misliking her first entertainment. It is said that one of the great galleons and the admiral of the hulks were sunk; but as fast as the Spanish ships were disabled or beaten off others supplied their place, the Revenge never having less than two aboard her, and that thus before morning she had been engaged with fifteen opponents. By that time the English had suffered severely. An hour before midnight sir Richard received a musket shot in the body, and was obliged to leave the upper deck: while his wound was being dressed, his surgeon was mortally wounded, and he himself received a second wound in the head. "As the day increased, so our men decreased, and (in the words of the old relation) as the light grew more and more, so by much more grew our discomforts. All the powder of the Revenge to the last barrel was now spent; all her pikes broken, forty of her best men slain, and the most part of the rest hurt." The Spaniards had reinforcements of soldiers from the other squadrons, "all manner of arms and powder at will. Unto our there remained no comfort at all, no hope, no supply either of ships, men, or weapons; the masts all beaten overboard, all her tackle cut asunder, her upper work altogether rased; and, in effect, evened she was with the water, but the very

foundation or bottom of a ship, nothing being left overhead, either for flight or defence."

Sir Richard finding himself in this distress, the *Revenge* not able to move one way or other, but as she rolled with the waves, called upon the company to yield themselves unto God and to the mercy of none else, and commanded the master gunner, whom he knew for a most resolute man, to split and sink the ship, "that thereby nothing might remain of glory or victory to the Spaniards. The gunner readily consented; but the captain and the master were of another opinion: the enemy, they said, would be as ready to entertain a composition as they were to offer it; there were many brave men yet living, and whose wounds were not mortal, who might live to do their country and their prince acceptable service; they besought sir Richard to have some consideration for them: and told him, that as for any triumph which the Spaniards could have in taking one of her majesty's ships, she was so much injured that they could not save her from sinking, and there was at this time six feet water in the hold. Sir Richard continued obstinate in his purpose. Leaving the captain, therefore, to use his influence with the men, and prevent him from effecting it, the master went on board the Spanish general, and easily obtained from a noble enemy that all their lives should be saved, and the company sent to England, the better sort paying such reasonable ransom as their estate would bear; and in the mean season to be free from the galleys or imprisonment. The gunner, finding himself and sir Richard thus prevented and mastered by the greater number, was only by force withheld from killing himself; and many of the people fearing sir Richard's disposition, "shot away" aboard the Spanish ships.

Don Alonso Bazan, brother to the marquis of Santa Cruz, was the general of this fleet. He granted the more readily the terms which were asked, for the great desire he had to save sir Richard, "whom, for his notable valour he seemed greatly to admire," and he

sent for him into his own ship the *St. Paul*, the *Revenge* "being filled with blood, and slain and wounded men, like a slaughter house." Sir Richard said the general might do with his body what he listed; and fainting as he was carried out, when he was brought to himself, he desired the company to pray for him. His wounds were immediately dressed by the Spanish surgeons. Don Alonso did not come near him; but the other captains and men of rank came to visit and comfort him in his misfortune, wondering at his steadfastness and stout heart, for he showed no sign of faintness nor any change of countenance; and feeling that his death was at hand he spake these memorable words in Spanish, that all who heard them might bear witness to their tenour: — "Here die I, Richard Greenville, with a joyful and a quiet mind, for that I have ended my life as a good soldier ought to do, who has fought for his country, queen, religion, and honour. Wherefore my soul joyfully departeth out of this body, and shall always leave behind it an everlasting fame of a true soldier, who hath done his duty as he was bound to do. But the others of my company have done as traitors and dogs, for which they shall be reproached all their lives, and leave a shameful name for ever."* He died on the second or third day after his capture. †

It was a dear-bought victory: the Spaniards lost two

* This latter sentence is omitted in Hakluyt's extract from Linschoten. I find it in the original; so necessary is it to refer to the original authorities whenever they are accessible. It is evident that Greenville thought himself basely abandoned by the lord admiral and the rest of the fleet, and that they thought he had obstinately exposed himself, and would have exposed them to certain destruction.

· Linschoten, who honestly relates what he heard, both from the Spaniards and the English prisoners, says that sir Richard was of a restless spirit, and greatly affected to war and violence. But he had performed many valiant acts, and was much feared in those islands, and known of every man, but very severe of nature, so that his own people hated him for his fierceness, and spake very hardly of him for his tyranny. "He was of so hard a complexion, that often, when he had other captains for his guests, he would carouse three or four glasses of wine, and then in a bravery take the glasses between his teeth and crush them in pieces, and swallow them, so that the blood sometimes ran out of his mouth, but without any farther: this," says, Linschoten, "was told me by divers credible persons, who had many times seen him do it." This brutal exhibition of drunken bravery was not quite obsolete in the last generation.

† Hakluyt, 170—173. 185.

ships in the action, and 400 men : of the English, about 100 were slain.* But the Spaniards triumphed in it greatly, because it was the first queen's ship † that they had ever taken, and some of the English fugitives persuaded them that it was the very best in the service. On the day after the action the India fleet, for which the lord Thomas had waited the whole summer, came in sight, and joined the armada, so narrowly was this great prize saved from the English cruisers. Their joy for their deliverance was of short continuance. The Spanish general waited at Corvo till the whole were collected, to the number of 140 sail; then as they were about to make for Terceira, and so to the Tagus and the coast of Spain, a hurricane arose, and of the whole fleet and convoy not above forty vessels escaped destruction. Among others, the Revenge was driven upon a rock near Terceira, and dashed to pieces, all on board, who were about seventy Spaniards, and a few only of the prisoners, perishing. Some of the superstitious

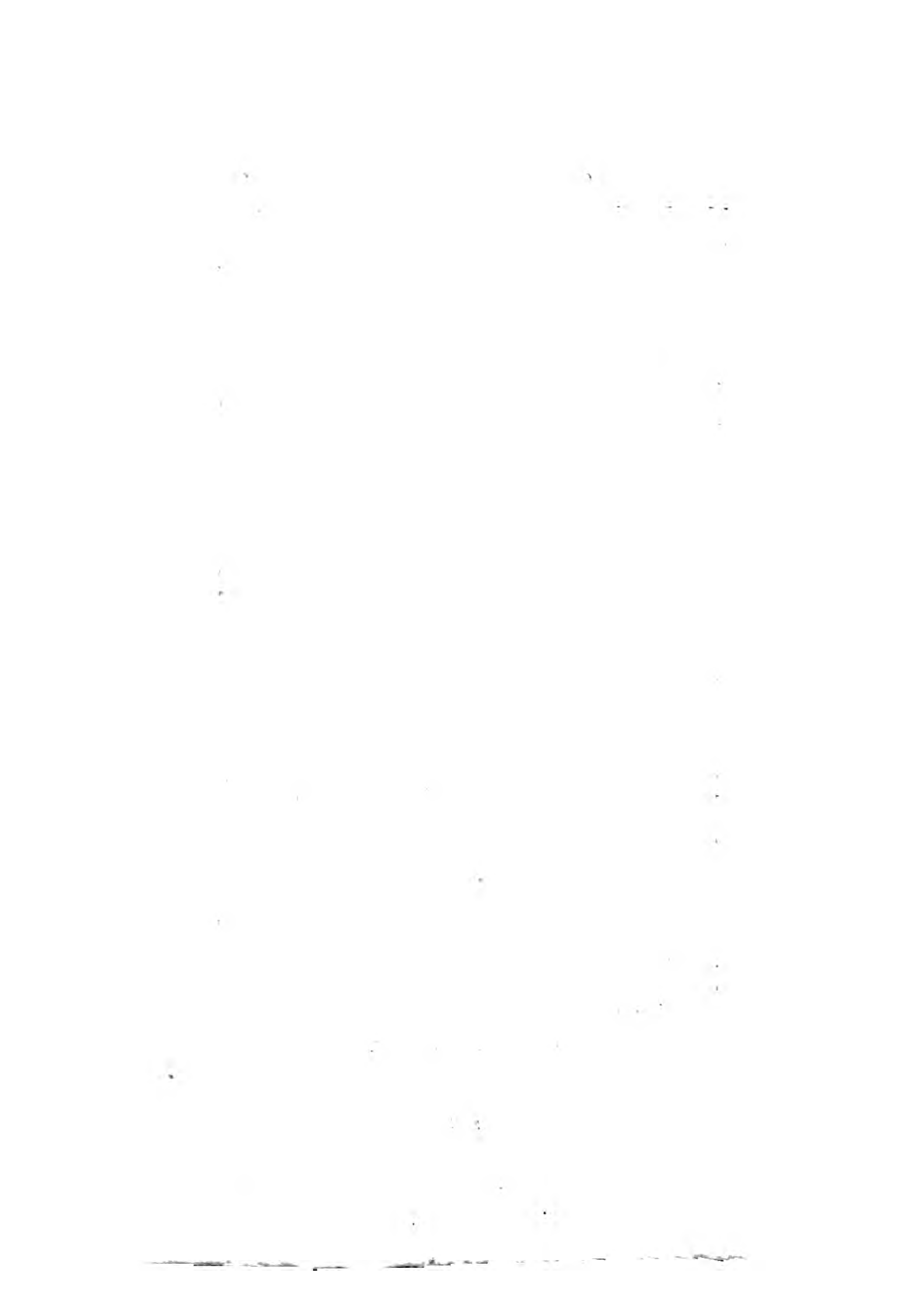
* The relation in Hakluyt says, that in the beginning of the fight the Revenge had but 100 free from sickness, and 90 sick, "laid in hold upon the ballast, a small troop to man such a ship, and a weak garrison to resist so mighty an army." (P. 171.) But sir Richard Hawkins gives a very different account, and, as it appears, upon official documents. "I account," he says, (p. 10.) "that he (Greenville) and his country got much honour on that occasion; for one ship, and of the second sort of her majesty's, sustained the force of all the fleet of Spain, and gave them to understand that they be impregnable; for having bought dearly the boarding of her, divers and sundry times, and with many jointly, and with a continual fight of fourteen or sixteen hours, at length leaving her without any mast standing, and like a log in the sea; she made, notwithstanding, a most honourable composition of life and liberty for above 260 men, as by the pay-book appeareth; which her majesty, of her free grace, commanded, in recompence of their service, to be given to every one his six months' wages."

† Sir William Monson (p. 202.) says, "We may partly judge by that ship the Revenge's precedent misfortunes, that she was designed, from the hour she was built, to receive some fatal blow; for to her, above all other her majesty's ships, there happened these unfortunate accidents. In 1582, in her return out of Ireland, where she was admiral, she struck upon a sand, and escaped by miracle. In 1586, at Portsmouth, being bound upon a southern expedition, coming out of the harbour, she ran aground, and, against the expectation of all men, was saved; but was not able to proceed upon her voyage. The third disaster was in 1589, as she was safely moored at Chatham, where all the queen's ships lay, and as safe one would think as the queen's chamber; and yet, by the extremity of a storm, she was un luckily put ashore, and there overset, a danger never thought on before, or much less happened. And to make this misfortune the more strange and remarkable, the same night (before twelfth-night) it was my chance to be at Cork, in Ireland, and I passed down from thence in a boat to Cross Haven, in the greatest calm I have seen."

islanders imputed it to Greenville's ghost: the devils loved him, they said, because he was of a devilish religion: therefore, as soon as his body was thrown overboard, he presently sunk to the bottom, and so down to hell, and there raised up the devils to revenge him; and they brought these storms, more terrible than any that ever were remembered, upon the Spaniards, because they maintain the holy catholic and apostolic faith!*

Though sir Richard Greenville cannot be justified for entering into the action in which he lost his life, he supported it so bravely, that he raised the character of the British navy, and thereby well entitled himself to the place which he continues to hold in its annals. His death-scene stamped his character in the minds of his contemporaries and of posterity; so great is the effect of any one virtue, when displayed in an eminent degree, even though it be that virtue which is the commonest, as belonging sometime wholly, and generally in great part, to our animal nature, and which may exist with little to ennoble, and nothing to adorn it. At that time, too, a better moral feeling began to prevail between Spain and England. As soon as it was open war between the two countries, the feeling of hatred gradually softened into that of hostility. On the part of the English it was no longer a private quarrel, in which individuals engaged for the strong desire of plunder, or the stronger appetite for revenge; and on the part of the Spaniards it was felt that they were not now engaged with pirates, but with national enemies, who were entitled to the usages of fair warfare. On both sides it became a public quarrel and a public cause. And though there was still too much opportunity and scope for the exercise of evil passions, generous feelings also were called into action; and each nation learnt to respect the characteristic virtues of the other.

* Linschoten. Hakluyt, 187.



NOTES.

Plymouth, p. 204.

DRAKE'S services to this place, and to his native county, are thus recorded by his English eulogist, who, as he appears to have been a west countryman, probably delivers what, in those parts, was the general opinion of Drake's character : —

- “ Like as abroad with unresisted arms,
He tamed his foes' proud insultations ;
Even so at home with lenity he charms
His jarring friends' discordant passions ;
Rescuing the poor from proud vexations.
So all his life he made a warfare long,
Abroad 'gainst enemies, at home 'gainst wrong.
- “ In war he strove (and striving still did gain)
To vanquish all with never-daunted might ;
In peace he sought (and seeking did obtain)
All to excel in equity and right ;
A justicer in peace, in war a knight.
Though hard it were for him that might take ease,
Scipio to be in war, Cato in peace.
- “ The mighty son of more than mighty Jove,
Heaven-bearing Hercules, most famoused
For twelve achievements, and disaster, love
Of Deïanira, being captived,
After so many monsters vanquished ;
Having subdued all monsters, saving one
(Woman), ordain'd to master him alone.

“ Heaven-honour'd poets, in eternal verse,
 Among his many brave achievements done,
 As not the last nor least act, do rehearse
 His fair fame, though by filthy service won,
 Making the Augæan ox-stall shine as sun
 (Which more than thirty years unclesed had been),
 By forcing of Alpheus' river in.

“ Equal with Hercules in all save vice,
 Drake of his country hath deserved grace ;
 Who by his industry and quaint device,
 Enforced a river leave his former place,
 Teaching his streams to run an uncouth race.
 How could a simple current him withstand,
 Who all the mighty ocean did command ?

“ Now Plymouth (great in nothing save renown,
 And therein greater far because of Drake,)
 Seems to disdain the title of a town,
 And looks that man for city her should take,
 So proud her patron's favour doth her make :
 As those whom princes' patronage extoll'd,
 Forget themselves, and what they were of old.

“ Her now bright face, once loathsomely defiled,
 He purged and cleansed with a wholesome river ;
 Her whom her sister-cities late reviled,
 Upbraiding her with her unsavoury savour,
 Drake of this obloquy doth now deliver :
 That if all poets' pens conceal'd his name,
 The water's glide should still record the same.”

*Fitz-Geoffrey, Life and Death of Sir
 Francis Drake, pp. 47, 48.*

Excesses of the Men in the Expedition to Portugal, p. 215.

The excesses to which, in part, the failure of this expedition were attributed, were excused by the shameful argument that drunkenness was the sin of the nation — not of the persons only who embarked in this armament.

“ To them that have made question of the government of the wars (little knowing what appertaineth thereunto), in that there were so many drunkards amongst us, I answer, that in their government of shires and parishes, yea, in their very households, themselves can hardly bridle their vassals from that vice : for we see it is a thing almost impossible, at any of

your fairs or public assemblies, to find any quarter thereof sober; or in your towns any ale-poles unfrequented. And we observe, that though any man having any disordered persons in their houses, do lock up their drink, and set butlers upon it, that they will yet, either by indirect means, steal themselves drunk from their masters' tables, or run abroad to seek it. If then at home, in the eyes of your justices, mayors, preachers, and masters, and where they pay for every pot they take, they cannot be kept from their liquor, do they think that those base disordered persons whom themselves sent unto us, as living at home without rule, who hearing of wine do long for it as a dainty that their purses could never reach to in England, and having it there without money, even in the houses where they lie and hold their guard, can be kept from being drunk, and once drunk held in any order or tune, except we had for every drunkard an officer to attend him? But who be they that have run into these disorders? Even our newest men, our youngest men, and our idlest men; and for the most part our slovenly pressed men, whom the justices (who have always thought unworthily of any war) have sent out as the scum and dregs of their country. And these were they who, distemping themselves with these hot wines, have brought in that sickness which hath infected honester men than themselves."—*Portugal Voyage, Hakluyt, ii. 2. 137.*

It is remarkable that the writer should call the wines hot; when certainly it was not by its strength that the wine brought on the disease.

Spanish Descent at Penzance, p. 225.

"The plotter of this stratagem was one captain Burleigh, an Englishman, who was afterwards well requited for his treachery; for to be even with him for so foul a fact, sir Robert Cecil, the principal secretary, writ a letter to him residing in Lisbon, pretending that he was employed as a spy, and gave him thanks for some particular service he named he had done; when, indeed, there was no such cause, for the man was ever too honest to that side.

"Sir Robert Cecil so ordered it, that this letter fell into the hands of some ministers of the king of Spain; whereupon Burleigh was apprehended, close imprisoned, and cruelly tortured, when he deserved no such severe usage. I speak this," says sir William Monson, "because I would have the world judge how justly he deserved it, and how prettily the Spaniards were imposed upon."—P. 201.

It would be curious if the parties in this case of Burleigh v. Burleigh were kinsmen.

Hawkins's Death, p. 229.

Fitz-Geoffrey makes a grandiloquous lamentation over sir John Hawkins:—

“ Now drop my pen, in ink of dreary tears,
 A name, of late, of laughter and of joy ;
 But now (O Death, the agent of our fears,)
 A name of dolour and of dire annoy,
 The sad memorial of the fates destroy :
 Hawkins— (O, now my heart cleave thou asunder !)
 In naming him, me seems, I name a wonder.

“ Epitome of gods, Heaven's counterfeit,
 Fame's pyramis, honour's imagery,
 High throne whereon all virtues made their seat ;
 True prospective of immortality,
 Fair mirror of celestial majesty ;
 White palm, whose silver bowers enharbour'd rest,
 Snow-feather'd swan, and Nestor of the west.

“ Nestor in wisdom, art, and policy ;
 Nestor in knowledge, skill, and prudence ;
 Nestor in council and in gravity ;
 Nestor in wit, foresight, and modesty ;
 Nestor in might and magnanimity.
 O, would he had, as he had Nestor's hairs,
 Enjoyed Nestor's age and Nestor's years !

“ A mortal man more than a man of late
 (If mortal man more than a man may be),
 Since his life's calendar is out of date,
 And death's new year exacts his custom'd fee,
 No more a man nor mortal now is he ;
 No more a man, because of death bereaven,
 Mortal no more, because a saint in heaven.”

Pp. 67, 68.

Hawkins and Drake, p. 229.

Purchas has preserved the following parallel between these two great seamen, by one who had served with both:—

“ Sir, — I have, according to your request and my plainness, sent you here the comparison between those two commanders, sir Francis Drake and sir John Hawkins. They

were both much given to travel in their youth and age, attempting many honourable voyages alike ; as that of sir John Hawkins to Guiny, to the isles of America, to St. John de Ulva, &c. So likewise sir Francis Drake, after many discoveries of the West Indies and other parts, was the first Englishman that did ever compass the world ; wherein, as in his deep judgment in sea causes, he did far exceed, not only sir John Hawkins alone, but all others whomsoever.

“ In their own natures and dispositions they did as much differ as in the managing the matters of the wars : sir Francis being of a lively spirit, resolute, quick, and sufficiently valiant ; the other slow, jealous, and hardly brought to resolution. In council, sir John Hawkins did often differ from the judgment of others, seeming thereby to know more in doubtful things than he would utter ; sir Francis was a willing hearer of every man’s opinion, but commonly a follower of his own. He never attempted any action, wherein he was an absolute commander, but he performed the same with great reputation, and did easily despatch great matters. Contrariwise, sir John Hawkins did only give the bare attempt of things, for the most part, without any fortune or good success therein.

“ Sir John Hawkins did naturally hate the land-soldier ; and though he were very popular, yet he affected more the common sort than his equals. Sir Francis, contrarily, did much love the land-soldier, and greatly advanced good parts wheresoever he found them ; he was also affable to all men, and of easy access. They were both of many virtues, and agreeing in some : as patience in enduring labours and hardness ; observation and memory of things past ; and great discretion in sudden dangers ; in which neither of them was much distempered. And in some other virtues they differed. Sir John Hawkins had in him mercy, and aptness to forgive, and true of word : sir Francis hard in reconciliation, and constant in friendship ; he was, withal, severe and courteous, magnanimous and liberal.

“ They were both faulty in ambition, but more the one than the other ; for in sir Francis was an insatiable desire of honour, indeed beyond reason : he was infinite in promises, and more temperate in adversity than in better fortune. He had also other imperfections ; as aptness to anger, and bitterness in disgracing, and too much pleased with open flattery. Sir John Hawkins had in him malice with dissimulation, rudeness in behaviour, and passing sparing, indeed miserable. They were both happy alike in being great commanders, but not of equal success ; and grew great and famous by one means, rising through their own virtues and the fortune of the sea. There

was no comparison to be made between their well-deserving and good parts, for therein sir Francis did far exceed. This is all I have observed in the voyages wherein I have served with them.

“ R. M.”

Lope de Vega's Dragontea, p. 238.

Sir Francis Drake has had the rare fortune to have an epic poem written to his intended dishonour by Lope de Vega, the most prolific of the Spanish poets ; in his own age and country the most popular, and still in other countries the most famous. The subject is his last expedition and death. Two motives, Lope says, induced him to write this book : first, that oblivion might not cover so important a victory ; and, secondly, that the people who thought so much of Drake might be disabused concerning him ; the truth being, that he had not taken a grain of gold which had not cost him much blood. There is a prose prologue to the poem by D. Francisco de Borja, the comendador mayor de Montesa, in which it is said, “ Some one will say, why is there a story made in Spain of this victory, if the English have had good success in our Indies and against our fleets ? To this it is answered, that the English never had any good success, unless it were owing to the inclemency of the sea, or to great inequality of numbers ; or because they attacked coasts which were secure, and fleets that were unarmed.”

Among the commendatory poems is a sonnet by the duque de Osuna, and another by Cervantes.

Lope gives preliminary notice to the reader, that whenever he uses the word dragon, Francis Drake is to be understood. He says that he calls the English Caledonians from the *Silva Caledonia*, “ tan celebrada de los antiguos en Inglaterra ; ” but he has not explained for what reason he calls Drake a Scotch pirate, “ el protestante pirate de Escocia.”

In the first canto the Christian Religion presents Spain, Italy, and America to the Almighty ; and prays for protection against the Moorish and heretical pirates, especially against that dragon of the English Medea, Francis Drake, if it were only for his namesake, seeing this English corsair had attacked Nombre de Dios.

“ Por las puras entrañas de Maria
 Que a vuestro hijo carne y sangre dieron,
 Y por el Sacramento de aquel dia
 Que humano y Dios los Angeles le vieron,
 Que detengays su barbarez osadia,
 Siquiera porque el nombre vuestro fueron ;
 Que lugar que de Dios (señor !) se nombre
 No es justo que le ofenda ningun hombre.”

This prayer was heard. Drake is then described as in retirement and in disgrace, because he had not taken Cadiz when he entered the harbour, and because he had been repulsed at Coruña. He is, however, master of more gold than Crassus, and was taking his *siesta* under an elm by the side of a fountain, when Covetousness (Codicia) appears to him in the form of a beautiful woman, not to tell him that the great and august Philip,

“ por armas, obediencia, y gusto,
Es legitimo dueño de dos mundos ;”

but to inflame him by false prophecies, and by extolling his former achievements; and tell him he was the dragon who had prefigured in so many visions. Having said this she plunges into the Acheron with such a splash that Charon drops his oars in affright.

“ Alzo las tres gargantas el Cerbero ;
A Tantalo las ramas se inclinaron,
Y del golpe creciendo el aqua inferna
Comio, y beviò, contra la ley eterna.”

Charon, however, as soon as Drake and Hawkins prepare for the expedition, begins to make ready for the crowd of condemned souls who will soon come posting to him.

Lope introduces the cura and commissary of the inquisition at Nombre de Dios burying two bars of silver in the church beside the font; and recommending them to the font's protection in a speech which savours of the mock heroic. The priest, however, calls, in Catholic sincerity, upon the Virgin to trample on this dragon.

“ Mirad señora, que ay enemistades
Para siempre entre vos y la serpiente ;
Que ansi lo dixo Dios, cuyas verdades
Son mas firmes quel cielo eternamente ;
Se vuestras plantas para mil edades
Y mil sin fin han de pisar su frente,
Pisad este dragon, pues que se atreve
A vuestros pies mas candidos que nueve.”

The priest loses his treasure, much to the poet's satisfaction; who is still more pleased when Drake's nephew is killed.

“ Cavan el prado por lo mas enxuto,
Y entierran el mancebo mal logrado ;
Porque el hombre que vive como bruto
Es justo que le entierran en el prado.”

.. His ghost appears to Drake, and complains of being thus interred and unrevenged.

“ O tio, dize, assi te mueve el pecho
 La sangre de tu sangre derramada,
 Por un barbaro negro, auctor del hecho,
 Que no de blanca mano, o hidalga espada,
 Con enterrarme quedas satisfecho,
 Dexando en tierra estraña sepultada,
 Tu misma carne, que infamado della
 Vendrè a ser Espanol resuelto en ella.

“ Quatro barbaros dexas sin castigo,
 Ladrones de mi vida en parte oculta ;
 Que hizieras con mas aspero enemigo,
 Si aquellos tu venganza dificulta ?
 De que esta ingratitude uses commigo
 Mas infamia que gloria le resulta ;
 Que en enterrarme que grandezas hallo ?
 Pues enterro Alexandro a en cavallo.”

But Lope's great triumph is when Drake himself dies ; poisoned, he says, by his own people, and receives a burial such as he deserves.

“ Miserable de ti dragon cogido
 Del cuerpo del exànime elephante,
 A quien la sangre frigida has bevido,
 Castigo a tus sobervias semejante !
 Agora que del Aguila vencido
 Ya no erizas las conchas arrogante,
 Su planta pone en tu cerviz Britana
 La religion santissima Christiana.

“ Passaste el duro estrecho de la muerte
 Que es otro Magallanes de la vida,
 Y fuyste a ver de Radamanto fuerte
 La India mas adusta y encendida.

* * * * *

“ El Aguila y dragon que Plinio escribe
 Ya dexaron la rigida batalla ;
 Que el Cesar Español premio recibe
 Y el Draque Ingles entre sus plantas calla.
 Ya la gente sepulchro le apercibe,
 No con la gola y la azerada malla,
 No con entierro, caxas y banderas,
 Mas como echan cuerpo muerto a fieras.

“ Una caja lastrada, y dos anclotes,
 Para que el fondo frigido aferrassen,
 Fueron al ataud y sacerdotes
 Que el corrompido cuerpo acompañassen.
 Allí los Protestantes y Uganotes
 No tuvieron sufragio que rezassen ;
 La caja sepultada en la arena
 Quedo de conchas y langostas llena.”

Two days' public rejoicings were made at Panama for the infamous death and final sentence of this fierce monster. Meantime the same personage, with whom the action of the poem opens, again approaches the Almighty's throne, and returns thanks for the event,

“ Gracias te doy, Señor del Cielo y Tierra,
 Que al gran dragon, y la muger sentada,
 Que la abominacion infame encierra
 En la copa del tosigo dorada,
 Con el Cordero tuyo hiziste guerra ;
 Y con la cruz de tu sangrienta espada
 España, Italia, America, contentas :
 Estan a tu servicio siempre atentas.

* * * * *

“ Tu sacaste al dragon en el anzuelo,
 Su lengua ataste, y diste su cabeza
 A la garganta vil del pezezuelo,
 Por mas que estava armada de fiereza :
 Tu mismo que le echaste de tu cielo
 Al centro de la misera baxeza,
 Con el armella, y la azerada evilla,
 Agugeraste su feroz mexilla.”

Lope de Vega has only written two poems of greater length than the *Dragontea* ; and it is a singular tribute to the celebrity of one, “ of whom,” an English poet said, “ the best cannot write too loftily, nor the loftiest too worthily, nor the worthiest sufficiently.” Lope's vituperation, however, is not more remarkable in its kind than the performance of this poet, Charles Fitz-Geoffrey, who entitles his poem *Sir Francis Drake his honourable Life's Commendation, and his tragical Death's Lamentation* ! “ For who,” he says, “ would think that death could conquer Drake ? ”

- “ Great God of prowess, thunderbolt of war,
 Bellona's darling, man of chivalry,
 Bloody Enyo's champion, foemen's fear,
 Fame's stately Pharos, map of dignity,
 Jove's pearl, pearl's pride, pride's foe, foe's enemy,
 Spain-shaking-fever, regent of war's thunder,
 Undaunted Drake, a name importing wonder !
- “ All this, yea thrice a thousand times and more
 Than this untold, though angels' eloquence,
 Though all the souls of poets heretofore,
 And modern muses made their residence
 In mortal mould to pen his excellence ;
 'More than all art's arithmetic can sum,
 Ah me ! are now enclosed in Drake's rich tomb.
- “ Tomb ? ah, no tomb, but Neptune's frothing waves !
 Waves ? ah, no waves, but billow-rolling seas !
 Seas ? ah, no seas, but honour's hallow'd graves !
 Graves ? ah, no graves, but bone's eternal ease !
 Ease ? ah, no ease, but rest born to displease !
 Whate'er it be where worthy Drake doth lie,
 That sacred shrine entombs a deity. |
 * * * * *
- “ Daughter of Time, sincere Posterity,
 Always new-born, yet no man knows thy birth ;
 The arbitress of pure sincerity,
 Yet changeable, like Proteus, on the earth ;
 Sometime in plenty, sometime join'd with dearth ;
 Alway to come, yet alway present here,
 Whom all run after, none come ever near ;
- “ Unpartial judge of all, save present state,
 Truth's idioma of the things are past,
 But still pursuing present things with hate,
 And more injurious at the first than last,
 Preserving others, while thine own do waste ;
 True treasurer of all antiquity,
 Whom all desire, yet never one could see ;
- “ Be thou religious to renowned Drake,
 And place him in thy catalogue of saints ;
 Instead of Neptune, God of sea him make,
 Either to loose or bind the wind's restraints ;
 Let seamen offer him their vows and plaints :
 Envy lives with us while our lives survive,
 But when we die, it is no more alive.

* * * * *

“ Some fiery muse with heavenly heat inflamed,
 Mount Drake likewise above the azured sky ;
 Be not the eagle Jove’s thunder-bearer named,
 Let Drake possess that glorious dignity,
 Or rather let himself the thunderer be,
 And make the world his majesty to wonder,
 For who more fit than Drake to rule the thunder ?

* * * * *

“ Such as the Hyperborean dragon was,
 That bare the enchanting daughter of the sun,
 On sealed crest of triple-plated brass,
 When through Campania’s coast he used to run,
 And ceased not ranging till his course were done ;
 But with irrefragable force and might,
 Made obstant lets give way unto his flight :

“ Such was our dragon, when he list to soar
 And circuit Amphitrite’s watery bower ;
 The rampant lion, and the tusked boar,
 The ravenous tiger born still to devour,
 To bar him passage never had the power :
 Whole herds and hosts could never make him stay,
 His only sight sufficed to make him way.

“ Forth of his nostrils burning flakes of fire,
 As from an oven’s gaping mouth, did flame ;
 Wherewith he wasted in his raging ire
 All that opposed themselves against the same ;
 All the sea-monsters trembled at his name :
 And when it pleased him progress through the sea,
 His fame was herald to proclaim him way.”

* * * * *

Nothing in Spanish hyperbole exceeds the extravagance of this English poet. At Drake’s approach, he says, the Pyrenees veiled their heads with mist. The Ebro wished he had still kept underground, thrice hid himself in fear, and could nowhere be found, and thrice running away in fear, and not knowing where to run, flooded all the land.

“ Oft did the surges, plough'd up by his ship
 Seem to overwhelm the Cassiterides :
 While the Cantabrian ocean sea nymphs skip,
 Together with the fair Nereïdes,
 And all the lovely Oceanitides,
 Dancing about to have a sight of Drake,
 Or of his ship a lovely kiss to take.

“ As oft as near the Gades both he sail'd,
 And by Cape Sacer's sky-topp'd promontory,
 Their heads, like dappers, under waves they veil'd,
 The Herculean main itself seem'd to be sorry,
 Grieving it should such ponderous forces carry ;
 For though it could bear him who bare the sky,
 It could not Drake, for Drake was more than he.”

He is compared to Archytas and Archimedes for his devices, for which he was no less formidable than for his valour : —

“ Making their hulks to caper in the skies,
 And quiver in the air their argosies :
 So by a proper sleight he knew full well
 To send their ships to heaven, their souls to hell ;”

and to hell he sent them in such myriads,

“ That Charon cursed their coming on so fast,
 And knew not how so many could be past.”

But when the poet comes to the death of his hero, and “ pours out inky tears from his ebon pen,” the vulture anguish seizes on his maw and sorrow on his heart, and between them both, poor he can neither live nor die ; so that he exclaims, —

“ O Death, enoused in hell's profundities,
 Now exercise on me thy tyranny,
 Anatomise me into atomies,
 Set period to my full fallen ecstasy,
 Prolong no longer this long tragedy ;
 O Death, some ease unto my sorrow send,
 For death, they say, doth grief and sorrow end.”

He finds consolation, however, in the usual way, by reflecting,

“ — since that he from us is gone to bliss,
We do lament our own mishap, not his.

“ The fairest plot in all the Elysian field,
By Jove's command is unto him assign'd ;
And heaven's eternal summer-house doth yield
A paradise unto his soul refined,
For sacred contemplation of the mind ;
And as of men to gods he was the nearest,
So now to Jove of gods he is the dearest.

* * * * *

“ And that dear body held in Neptune's womb,
By Jove shall be translated to the sky ;
The sea no more, heaven then shall be his tomb,
Where he a new-made star eternally
Shall shine transparent to spectators' eye,
A fearful comet in the sight of Spain,
But shall to us a radiant light remain.

“ He, who alive to them a dragon was,
Shall be a dragon unto them again ;
For with his death his terror shall not pass,
But still amid the air he shall remain,
A dreadful meteor in the eye of Spain ;
And as a fiery dragon shall portend
England's success, and Spain's disastrous end.

“ Known to the heavens by honour long before,
Now by the presence of the immortal soul,
O new-made saint (for now a man no more),
Admit my tender infant muse t' enrol
Thy name in honour's everlasting scroll :
What though thy praises cannot live by me,
Yet may I hope to live by praising thee.

“ And may thy praises live awhile by me,
Though praising thus, I do but stain thy praise ;
And I awhile may live by praising thee,
Until some heavenly muse begin to raise
Thy fame from grave to live eternal days ;
If ominous birds beguile not with their song,
I augurise this shall be done ere long.

“ Phœbus himself shall chronicle thy fame,
 And of a radiant sunbeam make the pen ;
 The ink, the milk whence *via lactea* came,
 Th’ empyrean heaven the volume shall be then,
 To register this miracle of men ;
 The sun and moon, the letters capital ;
 The stars, the commas and the periods all.

“ Jove’s silver footstool shall be library
 That shall these acts and monuments contain ;
 Which that they may to after ages tarry,
 And as a true memorial still remain,
 Eternity is the adamantine chain.
 And that the heavens still on Drake’s praise may look,
 The gods shall read, and saints peruse the book.”

Thus the poem ends. It would have been a worthy example of national and critical justice if Lope de Vega had been condemned to translate Charles Fitz-Geoffrey’s poem into Spanish, and Charles Fitz-Geoffrey Lope de Vega’s into English. Lope’s is far the most valuable ; that is, independently of any poetical merits or demerits, something is to be learnt from it ; whereas Fitz-Geoffrey’s contains scarcely any information upon what it professes to relate — the life and death of the hero. I have found nothing in it which adds to our knowledge of Drake, except the passage already quoted, in which he is praised for his inventive talents as an engineer ; and another of more questionable probability, which says that he sometimes escaped from the Spaniards by a seasonable and well-applied expenditure of money : —

“ Sometime, when number virtue did surprise
 (As virtue sometime is surprised by number),
 His policy could soon a way devise
 To fly their forces that might bring him under ;
 And how he could escape, it made them wonder :
 For of their Indian gold he made him wings,
 And (like a phœnix) safely from them flings.”

There is nothing recorded of sir Francis Drake to which this can be applied.

Another poet ascribes great skill to him in engineering, but by no means in a complimentary way. The Jesuit Nicolo Partenio Giannettasio makes him worship the devil, and go with his fleet to Iceland to consult him on Mount Hecla, into

which volcano the devil had removed his court when he went to take possession of the north: there Drake sacrifices a redolent he-goat, and he and all his company drink of the blood; after which the devil, having been thus propitiated, teaches him how to construct a fireship.

—— “sic horrida primum
Ignivomas, inventa, vates niger extudit Orcus.”
Naumach. i. 16—18.

For most of the popular traditions concerning sir Francis Drake I am obliged to my friend Mrs. Bray, to whom I hope Devonshire and Cornwall may one day be beholden for the lives of their worthies.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

LONDON :
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-Street-Square.

THE
CABINET OF BIOGRAPHY.

CONDUCTED BY THE
REV. DIONYSIUS LARDNER, LL. D. F. R. S. L. & E.
M. R. I. A. F. R. A. S. F. L. S. F. Z. S. Hon. F. C. P. S. & c. & c.

ASSISTED BY
EMINENT LITERARY AND SCIENTIFIC MEN.

THE BRITISH ADMIRALS.

WITH AN INTRODUCTORY VIEW
OF THE
NAVAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

BY
ROBERT SOUTHEY, LL. D.
POET LAUREATE.

VOL. III.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR
LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, GREEN, & LONGMAN,
PATERNOSTER-ROW ;
AND JOHN TAYLOR,
UPPER GOWER STREET.

1834.

LONDON :
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-Street-Square.

INDEX.

A.

- Aaroun-al-Raschid, ii. 50.
Abbo, abbot of Fleury, ii. 176.
Abelard, Peter, establishes a school for dialectics at St. Geneviève; his union with the beautiful Heloise, ii. 268. Enters the abbey of St. Denys; his work on the Trinity condemned to the flames by the council of Soissons, 269. An abstract of his opinions; the first book of his Introduction to Divine Science, 270. His works condemned by St. Bernard and the council of Sens, 276. His death, 277.
Aboubeker, successor of Mahomet, i. 340.
Abyton, bishop of Bâle, ii. 129.
Acacius, patriarch of Constantinople, i. 289. Deposition of, in the court of the bishop of Rome, i. 283. Renders himself odious to Rome by his support of the emperor Zeno and the famous henoticon, ii. 12.
Acephali, a branch of the Eutychnian sect, i. 298.
Acton, sir Roger, burnt alive, ii. 325.
Adalbert, marquis of Tuscany, ii. 161. Driven from Italy by the emperor Otho, 164.
Adalvaldus, king of the Lombards, ii. 26.
Adamites, i. 89.
Adrian, emperor, successor of Trajan; his conduct towards the Christians, i. 64.
Adrian I., pope, his letter in favour of image worship, ii. 49. His character, 72. Applies to Charlemagne for his assistance in suppressing the encroachments of the archbishop of Ravenna, 75. His reply to the Caroline books on the worship of images, 84.
Adrian IV., pope, election of, ii. 244. His contention with Frederick Barbarossa, 245. His death, 249.
Adrian V., pope, ii. 286.
Ælia, a town built by the Emperor Adrian on the ancient site of Jerusalem, i. 29.
Æthiopians, i. 18.
Ætians, or Eunomians, i. 192.
Agapetus, a disciple of Marcellinus, i. 234.
Agapetus II., pope, ii. 163.
Agatho, pope, assembles the western bishops to discuss and confirm the decrees of Martin I., i. 365. Declared by the council of Constantinople to be the first bishop of the universal church, 367.
Agathon, pope, pontificate of, ii. 28.
Agelius, i. 186.
Aix-la-Chapelle, a council held at, to decide the controversy respecting the procession of the Holy Ghost from the Son as well as the Father, ii. 145.
Alcuin deputed by the princes and bishops of England to report their sentiments to the French king on the Nicene decrees, ii. 78.
Alexander, bishop of Alexandria, anathematizes Arius and his followers, i. 144.
Alexander I., pope, brother and successor of Leo VI., ii. 156.
Alexander II., pope, his character, ii. 193. Death of, 194.
Alexander III., pope, ii. 249. A decree of deposition passed against him at Pavia, 250. His death, 251.
Alexander IV., pope, his unpopularity and death, ii. 285.
Alexandria, capture of, after a siege of fourteen months, by Omar, i. 340.

- Alexis**, the patriarch, his death, i. 341.
- Alexius I.**, the Greek emperor, ii. 231. Policy of; character of, 253.
- Alexius II.**, ii. 255. Murder of, by order of Andronicus, 257.
- Alexius III.**, ii. 257. His correspondence with Pope Innocent III., 257.
- Alfred**, king of England, his zeal for learning, ii. 253.
- Amalarius**, deacon of Treves, ii. 138.
- Ambrose**, bishop of Milan, i. 180. His treatise on the divinity of the Holy Ghost, written at the request of Gratian, 183. His fortitude and popularity, 184. Anecdote of, 187. A memorable instance of his virtue and magnanimity, 188. His letter and declaration to the emperor on hearing of the massacre at Thessalonica, 189. His works, 214. His character, 215.
- Amron**, general of Omar's army, i. 341.
- Anacletus II.**, pope, ii. 243.
- Ananias and Sapphira**, death of, i. 5.
- Anastasius**, successor of Zeno, i. 253.
- Anastasius**, the Presbyter, his controversy with the church for calling Mary the mother of God, in which he supports his opinion, that "Mary was a woman, and God cannot be born of a woman," i. 258.
- Anastasius**, bishop of Antioch, his instructions respecting the proper manner of resisting heresy, i. 328.
- Anastasius I.**, emperor, his zealous attachment to the Eutychians, i. 298. His marriage with Ariadne; his sectarian zeal, 299. Obligated to promise toleration to his orthodox subjects, 299. His death, 300.
- Anastasius II.**, deposition of, ii. 33.
- Anastasius**, the librarian, his Lives of the pontiffs, ii. 153.
- Anastasius III.**, pope, his piety and beneficence, ii. 161.
- Andronicus**, usurpation of; murdered by the mob, ii. 257.
- Andronicus II.** severs the union between the Eastern and Western churches, ii. 291.
- Anne**, wife of Richard II. of England, her attachment to the reformed religion, ii. 331.
- Anselm**, bishop of Lucca, ii. 198.
- Anselm**, archbishop of Canterbury, ii. 237.
- Anselm**, bishop of Havelberg, ii. 254.
- Anthropomorphites**, the sect of, i. 284.
- Antioch**, persecution of the Christians at, i. 177. Destruction of by an earthquake in the year 527, 300.
- Antoninus Pius**, successor of Adrian; his address to the magistracy of Asia, i. 65. Reflections on his character, 67.
- Apocryphal books**, a series of spurious productions, claiming the most sacred origin, i. 48.
- Apollinarius**, a learned Syrian; his version of the ancient Jewish history in Homeric verse, and other works, i. 177.
- Apollinarius**, bishop of Laodicea, his opinion respecting the person of Christ, i. 192.
- Apollonius of Tyana**, i. 38.
- Apostles**, labours of the, i. 17.
- Apostles' creed**, the origin of the; opinions respecting the immediate apostolic origin of, i. 50.
- Apostolical constitution** falsely attributed to Clemens Romanus, i. 43.
- Aquila**, governor of Elia Capitolina, i. 65.
- Aquinas**, Thomas, ii. 293.
- Arcadius**, his character, i. 242. Corruption of manners during his reign, 243. Placed by his father under the guardianship of Rufinus, 244. His imbecility, 245. Troubles of the empire during his reign, 245. Grants an order for the further removal of Chrysostom to Pytius, 251.
- Arezzo**, bishop of, hanged, ii. 284.
- Arian heresy**, i. 143. The main tenet of the, 191. Opposition of the Roman pontiffs to, ii. 6.
- Aristides**, an Athenian philosopher; his apology to the emperor Adrian on behalf of the Christians, i. 64.
- Aristotle**, ii. 86.
- Arnold of Brescia**, sedition of, ii. 244.
- Arius**, a native of Libya, the celebrated author of the Arian heresy, i. 143. Obtains a powerful advocate in Eusebius, bishop of Nicomedia, 144. Sent into exile, his works condemned as blasphemous, and publicly burnt, 151. His death, 158.

- Asceticism, origin and progress of, i. 220.
- Astolfo, king of the Lombards, ii. 63. His death, 71.
- Athanasius, deacon of Alexandria, i. 149. Summoned before the synod at Tyre; accusations brought against him by the Arians, 159. His trial and acquittal, 160. Demands another trial; is accused of a political offence, 162. Is banished to Treves in Gaul, 162. Restored to his bishopric by Constantine II., 163. Flies to Rome on the death of Constantine, 164. Is restored to his former dignity by Constans, 165. His letter to Dracontius, 165. Is attacked in the cathedral by a body of 5000 soldiers under the command of Syrianus, duke of Egypt, 167. Escapes and takes refuge in the deserts of Thebais, 167. His secret visits to Alexandria during the six years he passed in the desert, 168. Returns to his diocese, and is again expelled by the emperor Julian, 169. His death, in 373, 170. His character, 171.
- Athanasius, chief of the jacobites, obtains the patriarchy of Antioch, i. 355.
- Atto, bishop of Vercelli, a zealous and powerful advocate for the church and its canons, ii. 175.
- Audians, heresy of the, i. 181.
- Augustine, abbot of one of the monasteries of Mount Sinai, i. 330. Sent by Gregory to England for the conversion of that country, 331.
- Avignon, the papal court established at, by Clement V., ii. 303.
- B.**
- Babylas, i. 177.
- Bacon, Roger, ii. 293.
- Badly, Thomas, a tailor, martyrdom of, ii. 313.
- Baldwin, count of Flanders, his imprisonment and death, ii. 290.
- Barchochebas, rebellion of the Jews under him, i. 65.
- Bardanes Philippicus, the Armenian emperor, deprived of his sight and deposed, ii. 33.
- Bardas, uncle to Michael III., his death, ii. 119.
- Barnabas preaches with St. Paul at Antioch, i. 11. Separates from him, and proceeds with St. Mark to Cyprus, 13. His epistle; its claims to authenticity, 46.
- Barses, bishop of Edessa, banishment of, i. 181.
- Barulas, a child, martyrdom of, i. 128.
- Basil, employed in the defence of the church at Antioch, i. 177. Character of his writings, 216.
- Basil, bishop of Ancyra, ii. 54.
- Basil, the emperor, ii. 120.
- Basilicus, his short and tyrannical reign, i. 252.
- Basilides, one of the primitive schismatics, i. 88. His doctrines differently viewed by different scholars, 89.
- Basilius, ii. 277.
- Basle, synod of, ii. 349.
- Beatrice, duchess, ii. 205.
- Bede, the venerable, his birth and education, ii. 86. His character and death, 87.
- Belisarius, ii. 18.
- Benedict II., pope, ii. 28.
- Benedict III., pope, ii. 106.
- Benedict IV., pope, ii. 161.
- Benedict V., pope, his desecration by Leo VIII., ii. 167. His exile and death, 168.
- Benedict VI., pope, assassinated by cardinal Boniface, ii. 170.
- Benedict VII., pope, ii. 170.
- Benedict VIII., pope, obtains the renewal of the imperial grant, by which the popes are endowed with sovereign power and dignity, ii. 182.
- Benedict IX., pope, raised to the papal chair at twelve years old, ii. 182. His penitence and voluntary abdication, 184.
- Benedict XI., pope, ii. 303.
- Benedict XII., pope, ii. 304.
- Benedict XIII., pope, ii. 305.
- Berenger, duke of Friuli, his consecration at Rome as emperor, ii. 160.
- Berenger, a monk of Tours, and archdeacon of Angers, his doctrines and opinions, ii. 233. His death, 235.
- Bertha, daughter of Caribert, king of France, her marriage with Ethelbert, king of Kent, i. 330.
- Bertold, duke of Carinthia, ii. 205.
- Bertram, a monk, opposes the doctrine of the real presence in the Eucharist, ii. 131. His exposition of the doctrine of predestination, ii. 137.
- Blandina, a female slave, martyrdom of, i. 88.

Boethius, a statesman and scholar ; his death, i. 325.
Boniface II., pope, passes a decree that the reigning pontiff should nominate his successor, ii. 17. Obligated to burn the decree in the presence of his assembled clergy, 18. Pronounces a formal anathema on the departed soul of his rival Dioscurus, 18.
Boniface III., pope, assumes the title of universal bishop, ii. 24.
Boniface IV., pope, ii. 25.
Boniface V., pope, ii. 26.
Boniface VI., pope, ii. 170. His death, 171.
Boniface VIII., pope, his right to the papacy disputed, ii. 289. His ambition and death, 303.
Boniface IX., pope, ii. 305.
Boniface, archbishop of Mentz, the apostle of the Germans, ii. 90. His character and death, 95.
Bothenus, general in command of the garrison at Thessalonica, murder of, i. 188.
Bracciolini, Poggio, the celebrated Florentine, his explicit testimony to the heroic conduct of Jerome of Prague, ii. 343.
Bradwardine, archbishop of Canterbury, ii. 306.
Bruno of Cologne, institutes the monastery of Chartreuse, ii. 238.

C.

Cadalous, bishop of Parma, ii. 189. His death, 190.
Calixtines, the sect of the, ii. 346.
Calliopas, exarch of Italy, i. 361.
Callistus II., pope, ii. 243.
Callistus III., pope, ii. 349.
Candidian, count, i. 261.
Caroline books on the worship of images, supposed to be written by Charlemagne, ii. 78.
Carpocrates and **Valentine**, the Egyptian authors of heresies, i. 93.
Cassian, monk, his opinions, i. 295.
Cassiodorus, a distinguished statesman and scholar, i. 325.
Castelnau, Pierre de, archdeacon of Maguelonne, ii. 298.
Cathari, the, a mixture of Gnostic or Manichæan doctrines, ii. 277.
Cedrenus, the historian, ii. 237.
Celestine, pope, i. 259.
Celestine III., pope, ii. 252.
Celestine IV., pope, ii. 282.
Celestine V., pope, his singular election, ii. 288. His death, 289.

Celestius, associate and companion of Pelagius, i. 287. Excommunicated at Carthage, 288.
Cencio, son of Alberic, prefect of Rome, insurrection of, ii. 202.
Cerdon, his doctrine, i. 90.
Cerinthus, the heretic, i. 40.
Chalcedon, the council of, i. 278. Proceedings of, 280.
Charlemagne, his character, ii. 73. Visits Rome, 75. Establishes schools in various parts of his dominions, 76. His enlightened conduct in the controversy of the Iconoclasts, 78. Crowned at Rome by the pope, 98. His questions to the clergy, 99. His retirement and death, 101.
Charles Martel, ii. 94.
Charles the Bald, ii. 138.
Charles of Anjou, crowned king of Sicily, ii. 286.
Charibert, king of France, i. 330.
Chartreuse, the monastery of, founded by Bruno of Cologne, ii. 238.
Christianity, general causes of the opposition to, i. 95. False view of, 297.
Christians, first persecution of the, i. 20. After the destruction of Jerusalem they remove to Pella, 29. Persecution of the, during the reign of Trajan, 58. Gallic persecutions of the, 82. They enjoy twenty-four years of uninterrupted tranquillity after the death of Severus, 103. Their sufferings during the Decian persecution, 107. Ruin of numerous Roman Christians by the publication of the edict of Valerian, 112. Their fortitude under the most terrible trials, 115. Their sufferings under Maximian, 125. Persecution of the, in Persia, 255.
Christolphus, pope, deposition of, ii. 161.
Chrodebert, archbishop of Tours, his decision respecting the true object and nature of penitence, i. 347.
Church, the Christian, foundation of, i. 2. Extension and increase of, 4. Increase of the disciples of, 6. Persecution of, at Jerusalem, 6. First admission of the Gentiles into, 10. Persecution of, 11. General tranquillity restored to, under the emperor Nerva, 31. Institutions of rules of discipline in, 32. Rites of the primitive church, 32. No precise account

- how the public service of the congregations were conducted, 34. Introduction of heresies into, 36. Tranquillity restored to it, under Adrian, 64. Oppressions renewed against, by Marcus Aurelius, 67. Internal state of, at the close of the second century, 85. Government and general service of, 86. Penance added to the rites of, 87. Heresies in, 88. Restored to peace by the death of Severus, 103. Remarks on the sacramental ceremonies introduced into the Roman church in the sixth century, by which the simplicity of a Christian sacrament is violated, 115. Growing corruption of its members, 121. Persecution of, under Diocletian, 122. State of, at the time of the conversion of Constantine, 138. Causes of the disputes in, 141. Trouble and confusion of, during the Arian controversy, 145. The faith of, established at the council of Nice, 150. Methods which the fathers employed to destroy the force of the edict issued by the emperor Julian, 176. Arian persecution of, 181. Schism in, 181. Numerous heresies in, 199. Sufferings of, during the existence of the Donatist heresy, 210. Vandal persecutions of, 211. Metropolitan bishops appointed, and provincial synods held twice a year, 218. Various rites and ceremonies introduced into, 219. Influence of the clergy diminished, 243. Cause of this change, 244. Troubles of, during the reign of Arcadius, 245. Tranquillity partially restored, 266. State of the Eastern and Western churches, 277. Increase of papal authority, 283. Multiplying dissensions in, 301. New ceremonies introduced into, by pope Gregory, 311. Increase of papal authority, 333. State of, in the East, 335. Important effect of Mahometanism upon, 339. Degeneration of, in matters of discipline, 344. State of, at the commencement of the eighth century, ii. 1. Pomp and luxury of the clergy, 8. Introduction of music and singing into the service of, ascribed to pope Vitalian, 27. Effect of papal corruptions, 30. General state of, at the close of the eighth century; contrast between the Eastern and Western churches, 93. Causes of the troubles which agitate it, 126. Progress of the gospel no proof of the prosperity of, 155. Licentiousness of the clergy in the Western church, 160. Ceremony of the consecration of Church bells first instituted, 169. Evil consequences of the power and wealth acquired by, 172. Increased number of ceremonies in, 178. Salutory laws established, 188. Schism in the Romish church, 305.
- Cicero, his opinion with respect to foreign gods, i. 55.
- Circumcelliones, the, i. 202.
- Claudius of Turin, ii. 150.
- Clemens Romanus, bishop of Rome, i. 41. His epistle to the Corinthians, one of the earliest uninspired compositions on the state of the doctrine and discipline of the church, 43.
- Clement II., pope, ii. 183.
- Clement III., pope, ii. 252.
- Clement IV., pope, his letters on his elevation, ii. 286.
- Clement V., pope, establishes the papal court at Avignon, ii. 303. His death, 304.
- Clement VI., pope, ii. 304.
- Clement VII., pope, ii. 305.
- Clermont, council of, ii. 313.
- Cobham, lord, the acknowledged head of the Lollards, ii. 313. His noble reply to the king, when he exhorted him to renounce his principles, 315. Draws up a confession of his faith, entitled "The Christian Belief of Lord Cobham," which he delivers to the king, 316. Is committed to the Tower; his trial, 319. Sentence pronounced against him by the archbishop; his reply, 323. Escapes from the Tower, 324. Apprehension and execution of, 325.
- College of cardinals instituted, ii. 25.
- Commodus, son and successor of Marcus Aurelius; murder of, i. 84.
- Comnenus, John, attempts to cement a union between the Greek and Latin churches, ii. 253.
- Conon, pope, ii. 29.
- Conrad, emperor, ii. 182.
- Constance, the council of, ii. 329. Proceedings of, against John Huss, 330.
- Constans, emperor of Italy, i. 164. His death, 165.

- Constans**, son and successor of Constantine; his death, i. 336.
Constans, the emperor, i. 358. His death, 365.
Constantine, the emperor, i. 133. Account of his conversion, 124. Effects of his conversion, 186. Endeavours, by his advice and exhortation, to heal the schism in the church, 146. His address to the council of Nice, 148. His exertions for the conversion of his subjects, 153. His death, 156.
Constantine II., his death, i. 163.
Constantine, son and successor of Heraclius; his death, i. 336.
Constantine Pogonatus, his pacific measures with respect to the church, i. 336. Assembles a general council for the purpose of condemning the heresy of the Monothelites, 365.
Constantine, an obscure citizen of Mananalis, founder of the sect of the Paulicians, i. 369.
Constantine Copronymus, his character, ii. 37.
Constantine, a native of Syria, elected pope, ii. 60. His sufferings, 70.
Constantine Porphyrogenitus, ii. 156. His death, 157.
Constantine Monomachus, emperor of Greece, ii. 228.
Constantinople taken by the Latins, ii. 290. Retaken by Michael Palæologus, 291.
Constantius, the emperor, i. 164. His death, 165.
Corduba, the bishop of, i. 173.
Cornelius, the first Gentile convert, i. 9.
Cornelius, bishop of Rome, i. 133.
Crescentius, the senator, ii. 171. Execution of, 172.
Crusades, origin of the, ii. 220.
Cyrillus, martyrdom of, i. 118.
Cyril, bishop of Alexandria, i. 259. His controversy with Nestorius, 260. Chosen president of the council of Ephesus, 261. Deprived of his bishopric by the emperor Theodosius, 263.
Cyprian, bishop of Carthage, one of the most distinguished of the early Christian writers, i. 109. His trial, 110. Martyrdom of, 114.
Cyrus, patriarch of Alexandria, i. 355.
- D.**
- Damasus I.**, pope, ii. 8.
Damasus II., pope, ii. 184.
Damianus, Peter, bishop of Ostia, ii. 237.
Dante and Petrarch, ii. 306.
Decius, the emperor, his persecutions of the Christians, i. 103.
Dengal, an Irishman, celebrated for his knowledge of astronomy, ii. 153.
Deodatus II., pope, ii. 27.
Didier, duke of Tuscany, ii. 71.
Diocletian, the emperor, his cruel persecution of the Christians usually ascribed to the persuasions of Cæsar Galerius, i. 122. Abdicates in favour of Cæsar Maximin, i. 124.
Dionysius, the Areopagite, the learned Athenian convert, i. 45.
Dioscurus, bishop of Alexandria, i. 269. Chosen president of the council of Ephesus, 275. His proceedings there declared by the council of Chalcedon unjust and iniquitous, 279. Is formally judged and deposed, 280.
Dithmar, a German monk, an admirable logician and writer of chronicles, ii. 237.
Docetæ, the, i. 40.
Domitilla, wife of Clemens, i. 30.
Dominicans, institution of the order of the, ii. 293.
Domitian, the emperor, i. 30.
Domnus I., pope, distinguished for his piety and liberality, ii. 27.
Domnus II., pope, ii. 169.
Donatists, the, origin of the sect so called, i. 202.
Donatus, founder of the sect called Donatists, i. 202.
Dositheus, patriarch of Jerusalem, ii. 258.
Drosius, a Spanish priest, the intimate and associate of Augustine, i. 288.
Dulcitus, an officer intrusted by Honorius with the execution of his laws against the Donatists, i. 209.
Duns Scotus, a Franciscan, attacks the system of Aquinas, ii. 306.
- E.**
- Easter**, disputes respecting the proper period for keeping the festival of, i. 87.
Ebionites, the, i. 40.
Egbert, archbishop of York, composes a penitential in four books, ii. 90.
Eginhard, the historian, the friend,

- and biographer of Charlemagne, ii. 153.
- Eleusius of Cyzicus, i. 186.
- Elia Capitolina, a new town erected on the spot where Jerusalem stood, i. 65.
- Eligius, bishop of Noyon, his precepts respecting penitence and the Lord's supper, i. 348.
- Elipandus, bishop of Toledo, ii. 85.
- England, conversion of, by means of Augustine and other monks sent by pope Gregory, i. 320. Missionary spirit of the church in, ii. 94.
- Ephesus, council of, to decide the Nestorian controversy; its decisions, i. 260. Second council of, for the purpose of trying Eutyches, 274.
- Epigathus, one of the sufferers in the Gallic persecutions, i. 82.
- Epiphanius, bishop of the isle of Cyprus, i. 217.
- Esaianists, i. 284.
- Ethelbert, king of Kent, i. 331. His conversion and baptism, with that of the principal nobles of his kingdom, 332.
- Ethelwolf, king of England, makes a pilgrimage to Rome; confirms the grant called Peter's pence, ii. 107.
- Eucharist, disputes on the sacrament of the, ii. 127.
- Eudoxia, the empress, i. 245.
- Eugenius, bishop of Carthage, banished by order of Huneric, i. 211.
- Eugenius, successor of pope Martin, ii. 27.
- Eugenius II., pope, ii. 102.
- Eugenius III., pope, ii. 243. His death, 244.
- Eugenius IV., pope, deposed by the council of Basle, ii. 349.
- Euphemius, patriarch of Constantinople, ii. 13. Deposition of, 15.
- Euphrasius, buried in the ruins of Antioch when that city was destroyed by an earthquake, i. 300.
- Eusebius, bishop of Nicomedia, advocates the doctrines of Arius, i. 144.
- Eusebius, bishop of Samosatis, driven into exile, i. 181.
- Eusebius, a disciple of Marcianus, i. 234.
- Eusebius, bishop of Dorylæum, i. 270. Condemned and deposed by the council of Ephesus, 275.
- Eusebians, i. 193.
- Eustathians, i. 193.
- Eustathius, the patriarch, ii. 227.
- Euthymius, bishop of Sardis, death of, ii. 115.
- Euthymius elevated to the patriarchal chair, ii. 156.
- Eutropius, i. 245.
- Eutyches, abbot of a monastery of Constantinople, i. 269. His examination and acquittal by the council of Ephesus, 275. Remarks on his conduct and doctrine, 186.
- Eutychius, the patriarch of Constantinople, recalled from banishment by Tiberius, i. 304.
- Eutychians, revival of, under the emperor Anastasius, i. 298.

F.

- Fabian, the first Roman bishop who instituted the division of parishes, ii. 5.
- Felicitas, martyrdom of, i. 101.
- Felix II., pope, his contest with Acacius, patriarch of Constantinople, ii. 12.
- Felix V., pope, ii. 349.
- Felix, archbishop of Ravenna, ii. 50.
- Felix, bishop of Urgel, tried for heresy, ii. 85.
- Ferrara, synod of, ii. 349.
- Flagellants, ii. 296.
- Flavian, bishop of Antioch, i. 185.
- Flavian, patriarch of Constantinople, i. 269. His reply to the letter sent by pope Leo to Eutyches, 274. Condemned and deposed by the council of Ephesus, 275. His death, 276.
- Flavius Clemens, i. 30.
- Florence, synod of, ii. 349.
- Florus, deacon of Lyons, his opinion on the necessity of divine grace, and on predestination, ii. 139.
- Formalists, ii. 239.
- Formosus, pope, ii. 109.
- France, growth of superstition and fanaticism in, i. 306.
- Franciscans, ii. 293.
- Fratricelli, ii. 296.
- Frederic Barbarossa, his pride and ambition, ii. 244. Crowned king of the Lombards, 245. His interview with the Roman deputies, 246. His reply to pope Adrian IV., on the latter threatening to deprive him of his crown, 247. His death, 284.
- Frederic II., founds the university of Naples, ii. 292.
- Frisons, conversion of by the English, ii. 94.

Fulgentius, one of the most distinguished of the African writers, i. 328.

G.

Gainas, a Gothic officer, at the instigation of Stilicho puts an end at once to the treason and life of Rufinus, i. 245.

Galerius obtains the consent of Diocletian to commence the persecution of the Christians, i. 123.

Gallic persecution of the Christians, i. 82.

Gamaliel, i. 14.

Gaudentius, the Donatist bishop, i. 208. His doubtful fate, 209.

Gelasius, pope, ii. 13.

Geneva plundered by the Saracens, ii. 163.

Genseric, king of the Vandals, i. 211.

Gillebert de la Porrée, ii. 277.

Gnostics, i. 195.

Goths, conversion of the, ii. 166.

Gotteschalchus, a monk, his doctrine of predestination, ii. 131. His trial, sufferings, and death, 134.

Gratian, emperor, i. 183.

Gregory of Nazianzen, i. 184. Style of his writings, 217.

Gregory the Great, his character, i. 308. Attempts the conversion of England, 309. Elected to the papal chair, his letters to the emperor's sister, lamenting his elevation, 311. His prompt measures for the conversion of England, 330. The power of the papacy strengthened by, ii. 21. His death, 24.

Gregory I., pope, his letter on the subject of image worship, ii. 40.

Gregory II., pope, a firm defender and zealous advocate of papal authority, ii. 60.

Gregory III., pope, imposes the tax of Peter's pence, ii. 61.

Gregory IV., pope, ii. 102.

Gregory V., pope, ii. 171.

Gregory VI., pope, ii. 183.

Gregory VII., pope (the celebrated Hildebrand), his early history, ii. 194. His own account of his elevation, 195. His struggles with the emperor for the right of investiture, 197. His mode of reforming the clergy, 200. His death and character, 214.

Gregory VIII., pope, ii. 243.

Gregory IX., pope, ii. 281.

Gregory X., pope, ii. 286.

Gregory XI., pope, ii. 304.

Gregory XII., pope, ii. 327.

Gualbert, John, a Florentine gentleman, founder of the celebrated convent of Vallombrosa, ii. 238.

Guelpho, duke of Bavaria, ii. 205.

Guibert, the antipope, his vigorous efforts to establish himself in his usurped dignity, ii. 219.

Guido, duke of Spoleto, ii. 160.

Guiscard, Robert, duke of Puglia, ii. 210.

Grosteste, bishop of Lincoln, ii. 306.

H.

Helena, mother of Constantine, erects a church at Jerusalem, i. 155.

Heloise, her union with Abelard, ii. 269.

Henoticon, the edict of, i. 253.

Henry IV., emperor of Germany, ii. 180. His dispute with the pope on the right of investiture, 198. Deposed by the pope, 204. His deposition confirmed by the German diet, 210. Marches with his army to Rome, 211. Attempts a compromise with Gregory, 212. Receives the imperial crown at the hands of the antipope Guibert, 213. Taken prisoner by his son; his death, 241.

Henry V., emperor of Germany; his dissimulation, ii. 241.

Henry VI., emperor of Germany, ii. 252.

Henry IV., of England; he persecutes the followers of Wickliffe, ii. 311.

Henry V. of England, ii. 313.

Henry VI. of England, ii. 325.

Henry the Monk, founder of the sect called the Henricians, ii. 277.

Heraclius, emperor, i. 135.

Heretics, controversies on the subject of, i. 194. Martyrdoms of, 197.

Hermas, the Pastor of, contemporary with the apostles; observations on his writings, i. 41.

Herod Agrippa, governor of Judea, his death, i. 41.

Hilary, bishop of Arles, his resistance to the decisions of Leo the Great, ii. 11.

Hildebrand (vide Gregory VII.), ii. 186.

Hincmar de Laon, archbishop of Rheims, ii. 130. Summons a

council to try Gotteschalchus, 134. Publishes his four propositions, setting forth the main branches of his opinion of predestination, 141. His reply to the decisions of the council of Valance, 144.

Honorius I., pope, anathematised for heresy; his death, ii. 26.

Honorius II., pope, ii. 243.

Honorius III., pope, ii. 281.

Honorius IV., pope, ii. 287.

Hormisdas, pope, i. 299.

Hugh, king of Lombardy, i. 162.

Hugh, bishop of Dia, ii. 198.

Humbert, cardinal, ii. 229.

Huneric, king of the Vandals, i. 211.

Huss, John, his eloquence and learning, ii. 331. Proceedings against him at the council of Constance, 332. Imprisoned in the Franciscan monastery, 333. His trial, 335. Martyrdom of, 338.

I.

Iberians, conversion of, i. 156.

Iconoclasts, excesses committed by the, ii. 45.

Idumeans, i. 27.

Ignatius, bishop of Antioch, i. 60. His martyrdom, 64.

Ignatius, the patriarch, deposition and sufferings of, ii. 119. Reinstated in the patriarchal seat, 120.

Ildefonse, author of a treatise entitled "De Cognitione Baptismi," i. 353.

Image worship established, ii. 55.

Indulgences, sale of, ii. 278.

Innocent I., pope, ii. 9.

Innocent II., pope, ii. 243.

Innocent III., pope, his correspondence with the Greek emperor, ii. 258. His ambition, 279. His struggle with king John of England, 280. His death, 281.

Innocent IV., pope, ii. 282. His retreat to Lyons, 283. Attempted assassination of, 284. His death, 285.

Innocent V., pope, ii. 286.

Innocent VII., pope, ii. 326.

Innocent VIII., pope, ii. 349.

Inquisition, establishment of the, in 1229, ii. 298.

Ireland, learning and purity of the church in, ii. 96.

Irenæus, bishop of Lyons, i. 75. Remarks on his writings, 213.

Irenæus, count, i. 263.

Irene, the empress, her character and usurpation, i. 37. Policy of, 51.

Isaac Comnenus, emperor, ii. 230.

Italy invaded by the Lombards, ii. 19.

J.

Jacobins, i. 305.

Jerome of Prague, i. 289. His manner of life, 290. His arrest and trial, 340. His martyrdom, 343.

Jerusalem, fall of, i. 29. Delivered by the crusaders, ii. 232.

Jews, i. 27.

Joan, the papess, ii. 104.

Johannes Scotus Erigena, a native of Ireland, opponent of Paschasius, ii. 131. His arguments on predestination, 138. Accepts the invitation of king Alfred to visit England, 152. His death, 153.

John, bishop of Antioch, i. 261. His anathemas against Cyril and his party, 262. His efficient measures for promoting a reconciliation between the contending parties in the church, 266.

John, bishop of Jerusalem, his exertions in behalf of Pelagius, i. 288.

John IV., pope, i. 358. Visits Constantinople, ii. 17. His death, 18.

John V., pope, ii. 28.

John VI., pope, ii. 59.

John VIII., pope, ii. 109.

John IX., pope, ii. 160.

John X., pope, ii. 161. His death, 162.

John XI., pope, ii. 162.

John XII., pope, ii. 164. Assassination of, 167.

John XIII., pope, ii. 168.

John XIV., pope, ii. 171.

John XV., pope, ii. 171.

John XVI., pope, ii. 180.

John XVII., pope, ii. 180.

John XIX., pope, ii. 182.

John XXI., pope, death of, ii. 286.

John XXII., pope, his heretical opinions, ii. 304.

John XXIII., pope, his haughty and avaricious conduct; driven from Rome by the king of Naples, ii. 329. Flight of, from Constance, 333. Resigns the papal crown, 349.

John Zimisceus, emperor, assassination of, 158.

Josephus, his remarks on the destruction of Jerusalem, i. 28.

Jourdain, successor of St. Dominic, ii. 294.
 Jovian, emperor, his sudden death, i. 179.
 Julian, the emperor, prohibits the Christians from the study of the liberal arts, i. 169. Adheres to the old religion of paganism; his letters to the philosopher Maximus, 175. His persecutions of the Christians at Antioch, 177. His efforts to restore the oracle in the grove of Daphne; his death, 178.
 Julian, archbishop of Toledo, i. 350. Remarks on his writings, 352.
 Julius, ii. 7.
 Jurieu, the Calvinist historian, i. 194. His opinion of the martyrdom of heretics, 195.
 Justin Martyr; his early life and education, i. 70. His conversion to Christianity, 72. His doctrines, 74.
 Justin the emperor, successor of Anastasius, i. 300. His death, 301.
 Justin, emperor, successor of Justinian; his infamous reign, i. 303.
 Justina; her attempts to restore the Arian ascendancy, i. 185.
 Justinian, the emperor; his efforts to establish regularity and discipline in the church, i. 301. His character, 302.
 Justinian II., his vices and luxury, i. 336. His exile and re-establishment on the throne, 337. His death, ii. 32.

L.

Lactantius, the most eloquent of the Latin fathers; his character, i. 218.
 Ladislaus, king of Naples, ii. 329.
 Lambert, the emperor, ii. 161.
 Lando, pope; his death, ii. 161.
 Lanfranc, archbishop of Canterbury, ii. 236.
 Laurentius, the Roman deacon, i. 115. Martyrdom of, 117.
 Leo, successor of Pulcheria and Marcian, i. 252.
 Leo, pope, the founder of papal greatness and dominion, his reply to the letters of Eutyches, i. 274. Finds a new and powerful coadjutor in the emperor Marcian, 277. His epistle added to the creeds of Nice and Ephesus, 278. His letters to Flavian, expounding the

doctrines of the church, 279. His power, ii. 10.
 Leo II., pope, his piety and eloquence, ii. 28.
 Leo III., pope, ii. 97.
 Leo IV., his character and death, ii. 103.
 Leo V., pope, ii. 161.
 Leo VI., pope, ii. 162.
 Leo VII., pope, ii. 162.
 Leo VIII., pope, ii. 166. His death, 168.
 Leo IX., pope, ii. 184. His death, 185.
 Leo I., the emperor; his designing and intolerant policy, ii. 34.
 Leo II., the emperor, surnamed Chazan, ii. 36. His short reign, 37.
 Leo III. the emperor, ii. 42. Issues a decree condemning the worship of images, 43.
 Leo IV., the emperor, his character, ii. 47. His death, 48.
 Leo V. the emperor, ii. 112. Assassination of, 114.
 Leo VI., the emperor, ii. 124. His prudent government, 125. His death, 156.
 Leonidas, a citizen of Alexandria, martyrdom of, i. 104.
 Liberius, ii. 7.
 Liberius, bishop of Rome, i. 172.
 Lodi, the bishop of, ii. 335.
 Lollards, persecution of the, ii. 311.
 Lombards; they invade Italy, ii. 19.
 Louis, king of Aquitaine, ii. 75. Succeeds his father Charlemagne, 102.
 Louis, king of Provence, ii. 160.
 Lotharius, son of Louis, king of France, ii. 102.
 Lucifer of Cagliari, i. 193.
 Lucius III., pope, ii. 250. Expelled from Rome, 251. Fixes his residence at Verona; his death, 252.
 Luitprand, secretary to Berenger II., his writings, ii. 174.
 Lupus, abbot of Ferrara; his letters to Hincmar, on the doctrine of predestination, ii. 136.

M.

Macarius of Antioch defends the doctrine of the Monothelites, i. 366. Deposition of, 367.
 Macedonians, a branch of the semi-Arians, i. 192.
 Macedonius, bishop of Constantinople, founder of the Pneumatomachians, i. 192.
 Macesius, an Irishman, celebrated

- for his mystical opinion that one intelligent principle inspired the whole human race, ii. 153.
- Mæcenas**, in Dio Cassius, his opinion of the Christians, i. 55.
- Mahomet**, his character, i. 337. Commencement of his career, 338. His success; his death in 632, 339.
- Mahometanism**, i. 339.
- Mahometans** driven from Constantinople, ii. 33.
- Maimbourg**, his controversy on the martyrdom of heretics, i. 194. His apologists, 195.
- Manichees**, the most celebrated of all the ancient heresies; its origin, i. 91.
- Manicheans**, persecution of, ii. 147.
- Manes**, a Persian and slave by birth, founder of the sect of the Manichees; his learning and superior abilities; his doctrines, i. 92.
- Manuel Comnenus**, emperor; his triumph over the Persians, ii. 254. Renews the attempt to unite the Greek and Latin churches; death of, 255.
- Marcellinus**, president of the tribune at the meeting at Carthage; his sentence against the Donatists confirmed by the emperor, i. 206.
- Marcian**, emperor, i. 277. His address to the fathers of the council of Chalcedon, i. 280. His death, 281.
- Marcianus**, his hermitage, i. 233. His rigid asceticism, 234. Stories related of, in proof of his sanctity, 235. Anecdote of, 236. Visited by Avitus the anchorite; their conversation, 237. Reception of his sister and her son, 238.
- Marcion**, founder of the Marcionites, i. 90. His doctrines, 90.
- Marcionites**, i. 195.
- Marcosians**, i. 89.
- Marcus Aurelius**, his character: persecutes the Christians, i. 69. A change takes place in his mind in favour of the Christians, 79. Renews his persecution of the Christians, 81.
- Marozia**, daughter of Theodora, ii. 161.
- Martin I.**, pope, calls a council, and condemns the principles of the Monothelites, i. 359. Collision between him and the emperor, 360. His sufferings, 361. His trial, continued sufferings, and death, 362.
- Martin II.**, pope, ii. 26.
- Martin III.**, pope, ii. 163.
- Martin IV.**, pope, ii. 286.
- Martin V.**, ii. 365.
- Maurice**, emperor, successor of Tiberius, i. 304. His murder, 335.
- Mauritius**, commander of the Theban legion, refuses to lead his army against the Christians of Gaul, i. 125.
- Maximian**; his ferocious conduct to the Christians, i. 125.
- Maximin**, emperor, his persecution of the Christians, i. 103.
- Maximus**, surnamed the confessor, i. 353.
- Maximus**, secretary to the emperor Heraclius, a native of Constantinople, a zealous defender of orthodoxy; his piety and learning, i. 364. His trial, sufferings, and death, 365.
- Medes**, i. 18.
- Meletius**, an Egyptian bishop, i. 143. Deprived of his authority, 157.
- Meletius**, bishop of Antioch, banishment of, i. 181. Chosen president of the synod at Constance, 184.
- Meletius**, bishop of Lycopolis, i. 194.
- Memnon**, bishop of Ephesus, i. 261.
- Mesalians**, the doctrines of, i. 181.
- Metaphrastes**, Simcon, a native of Constantinople, author of the Lives of the Saints, ii. 177.
- Methodius**, resolution and sufferings of, ii. 116.
- Michael I.**, emperor, ii. 11.
- Michael II.**, the Stammerer, his elevation to the imperial throne; his character; his persecution of the image worshippers, ii. 114.
- Michael III.**, ascends the imperial throne, ii. 118. His death, 119.
- Michael the Angel**, accession of, to the imperial throne; dethronement of, ii. 257.
- Michael the Thessalonian**, the Greek emperor, ii. 228.
- Michael Cerularius**, the patriarch, his controversy on the use of unleavened bread in the Eucharist, ii. 228. Banishment of; death of, 231. Character of, 255.
- Michael Palæologus**, ii. 291.
- Monachism**, origin and progress of, i. 220.
- Monastic institutions**, increasing passion for; rule of St. Benedict concerning an answer to the argument commonly used in favour

of, i. 323. Of Mount Sinai, 329.
 Rapid increase of, ii. 277.
 Monastic orders, increasing power, wealth, and influence of, ii. 300.
 Mongus, deposition of, i. 283.
 Monophysites, i. 284.
 Monothelism, rise and progress of, i. 253. Heresy of, condemned, 367.
 Montanists, origin of, i. 90.
 Montanus, a native of Ardaba in Mysia, founder of the Montanists; his doctrine, i. 91.
 Moschus, Joannes, author of the Spiritual Meadow; his journies through the East, i. 345.
 Motassem, caliph, the Saracen warrior, ii. 117.
 Mysticism, ii. 278.

N.

Naples, kingdom of, establishment of the, ii. 189.
 Nazarenes, i. 40.
 Nazianzen, i. 177.
 Nectarius, bishop of the Novatians, i. 186.
 Nero, emperor, his persecution of the Christians, i. 22. His barbarity in putting the Christians to death, 25. His death, 26.
 Nerva, successor of Domitian, rescinds the edicts against the Christians, i. 30.
 Nestorianism, spread of, in Persia, i. 305.
 Nestorius, a native of Syria, bishop of Constantinople; his despotism and abilities, i. 257. Becomes a monk; his controversy; his doctrines condemned, 259. Declared by the synod of Ephesus a blasphemer; deposition of; expelled the priesthood; appeals to the emperor, 261. His condemnation pronounced unjust; banishment of, 265. Death of; the basis on which his controversy primarily rested, 267. Remarks on his conduct and doctrine, 285.
 Nice, council the first, and most celebrated, i. 146. Canons of, 157. The decisions of, confirmed, 185. The supremacy of the Roman pontiff and the worship of images established at a council held at, ii. 55. The declaration of faith, 55.
 Nicene creed, drawn up and subscribed to at Nice, i. 150.
 Nicephorus, patriarch of Constantinople, ii. 111.
 Nicephorus, emperor, ii. 147.

Nicephorus Phocas, victories and death of, ii. 157.
 Nicetas, ii. 113.
 Nicetas Pectoratus, a monk of Studia, his controversy with cardinal Humbert; he recants his opinions, ii. 229.
 Nicholas I., pope, pride and ambition of, ii. 107. Death of, 120.
 Nicholas II., pope, election of, ii. 187. Death of, in 1061, 189.
 Nicholas III., pope, ii. 286.
 Nicholas, patriarch, exile of, ii. 156.
 Nicolaitains, i. 40. 88. 200.
 Noetians, i. 132.
 Nominalists, ii. 239.
 Normans, victory over the Romans, ii. 185. The return of, to their allegiance, 189.
 Nestorians, i. 197.
 Notingus, bishop of Vienna, ii. 131.
 Novations, i. 132. 182.
 Novatus, a Roman presbyter; separation of, from the church, i. 133.

O.

Odoacer, the Gothic monarch, ii. 16.
 Omar, successor of Aboubeker, expels the Romans from Egypt, i. 340. Takes possession of Alexandria, 340.
 Omar, caliph, ii. 54.
 Ophians, i. 89.
 Optatus, bishop of Milevi, his work against the Donalists, i. 203.
 Origen, born in Egypt, i. 104. The greatest Christian philosopher; his works on the interpretation of Scripture, 104. His death, 105.
 Origenists, i. 301.
 Otho, emperor, receives the imperial crown and investiture at Rome. His moderation and virtue, ii. 164. Interferes in the election of popes, 168. Restores to the church the territories that had been granted by Charlemagne, 169.
 Otho III., ii. 170.

P.

Papias, celebrated for having originated the doctrine of Christ's temporal reign on earth; an account of his writings by Eusebius, i. 47.
 Paris and Bologna, the schools of,

- first assume the name of universities, ii. 292.
- Paris, the council of; the French withdraw their obedience from the pope, ii. 306.
- Parthians, i. 18.
- Pascal II., elevation of, to the pontifical chair, ii. 240. Requires Henry V. to renounce the right of investiture; imprisonment of; death of, 242.
- Paschasius Radbert, a native of France, his work on the real presence in the Eucharist, ii. 129. His doctrine opposed by Bertram and Scotus Erigena, 131.
- Paternus, governor of Carthage, i. 110.
- Paterius, his commentary on the Old and New Testament, i. 353.
- Patricius Florentius, i. 271.
- Paul, an Egyptian, flies to the desert, i. 106. The first Christian hermit; his manner of life, 221.
- Paul of Samosata, bishop of Antioch; heresy of, i. 133.
- Paul I., pope, death of, ii. 71.
- Paul II., ii. 349.
- Paulicians, origin of, i. 369. Progress of, ii. 147. Persecution of; a view of their doctrines, ii. 148.
- Pelagius, bishop of Laodicea, banishment of, i. 181.
- Pelagius, a monk, native of Wales, doctrines of; associates himself with Celestius, i. 287. Arraigned at Diospolis for his opinions, and acquitted, 288. His doctrines opposed by Jerome and Augustine, 289. His cause espoused by pope Zosimus, 294. Afterwards anathematised by pope Zosimus, 295.
- Pelagius, pope, hated by the clergy; his death, ii. 19.
- Pepin, king of France, son of Charlemagne; baptised and consecrated king of Italy, ii. 75.
- Persia, persecution of the Christians in, origin of, i. 255.
- Pertinax, emperor, i. 84.
- Peter the Fuller, raised to the bishopric of Antioch; his character, i. 282. Rejects the decrees of the council of Chalcedon; condemned and deposed in the court of the bishop of Rome for the fifth time, i. 283.
- Peter, bishop of Florence, simony of, ii. 190. Sacrilegious burning of a monastery by, 191. Deposition of, 193.
- Peter the monk, submits to the ordeal of fire to prove the guilt of the bishop of Florence, ii. 192. Elevation of, to the rank of cardinal, 193.
- Peter the hermit, the first preacher of the crusades; his address to the council at Clermont, ii. 224.
- Peter the Lombard, a celebrated theologian, his "Book of Sentences," ii. 267.
- Peter de Bruys, founder of the Petrobrussians, ii. 277.
- Petrus Siculus, the historian, ii. 153.
- Philip, preaching of, in Samaria; his miracles; converts an Ethiopian eunuch, i. 6.
- Philip I. of France, excommunication of, by pope Urban, ii. 227.
- Philip the Fair, ii. 303.
- Philippi and Thessalonica, churches formed at, i. 13.
- Phocas, emperor, deposed and put to death by Heraclius the exarch of Africa, i. 335.
- Photinus, bishop of Sirmium, heresy of, i. 193.
- Photius, patriarch, his falsehood and cunning, ii. 118. Summoned before a general council; his deposition, 120. His writings burnt, 122. He fabricates a genealogy of the emperor Basil, 123. His recall to Constantinople; again raised to the patriarchal dignity, 124. Banishment of, to Armenia, 125.
- Pilgrimages, ii. 106. To Jerusalem, 221.
- Pisa, council at, pronounces the two papal pretenders, Gregory XII. and Benedict, schismatics and blasphemers, ii. 328.
- Pius II. pope, ii. 349.
- Placentia, council of, ii. 219.
- Pliny the younger, his letter to the emperor Trajan concerning the Christians, i. 56.
- Pneumatomachians, the doctrine of, i. 192.
- Polycarp, martyrdom of, i. 77.
- Potamo, bishop of Heraclea, i. 159.
- Pothinus, bishop of Lyons, suffers in the Gallic persecution, i. 82.
- Predestination, controversy of; remarks on, ii. 144.
- Priscillian, his doctrines, condemnation, and death, i. 213.
- Proterius, bishop of Alexandria, i. 281. Assassination of, in the church while officiating at the sacrament, 282.
- Prudentius, bishop of Troyes, ii. 139. His exposition of the doctrine of predestination, 139.
- Pulcheria, i. 251.

Pyrrhus, successor of Sergius, i. 358.
Unpopularity of; deposition of;
retirement of into Africa, i. 358.

Q.

Quadratus, the first Christian apolo-
gist, i. 64.
Quintien, i. 108.

R.

Rabanus, archbishop of Mentz,
ii. 131. His treatise on the doc-
trine of predestination, 132. His
letter to Hincmar, archbishop of
Rheims, 133.
Raimond, prince of Antioch, the
celebrated crusader, ii. 256.
Rainier, a Cistercian monk, employ-
ed by the pope in persecutions
against the Waldenses, ii. 298.
Raoul, a Norman baron, ii. 181.
Ratherius, bishop of Verona, char-
acter of his writings, ii. 175.
Ravenna, the church of, perma-
nently incorporated with that of
Rome, ii. 27.
Raymond of Toulouse, ii. 298.
Realists, ii. 239.
Recognitiones Clementis, i. 43.
Remigius, bishop of Lyons, pub-
lishes a treatise called "A Cen-
sure of the Articles of Quincy,"
in answer to Hincmar's proposi-
tions, ii. 142.
Rodolf, duke of Suabia, elected
emperor by the German diet; his
wars with Henry IV., ii. 210.
His defeat and death, 211.
Romans, the tolerance of, towards
the Christians, i. 21.
Romanus, son and successor of
Constantine Porphyrogenitus, ii.
157. His death, 158.
Romanus Argyrus, the Greek em-
peror; his violent death, ii. 228.
Rome, the burning of, ascribed by
Nero to the Christians, i. 22. Sack
of by the Goths in 410, 287.
Its importance as an ecclesiastical
station, ii. 2.
Rufinus, guardian of Arcadius; his
treason and death, i. 245.

S.

Sabellians, i. 132.
Sabinian, pope, successor of Gre-
gory the Great, sudden death of,
ii. 24.
St. Agatha, a noble Sicilian lady,
her sufferings and cruel death,
i. 108.

St. Andrew, i. 16.

St. Anthony, patriarch of monks,
born at Coma in Egypt, about the
year 251; his gentleness, i. 221.
Self-denial and austerity of, 222.
A monastery founded by; his
death, 223. His opinion re-
specting the future fate of mo-
nastic institutions, 224.

St. Augustine, his opinion of the
martyrdom of heretics, i. 194. Op-
poses the Donatists at an assem-
bly at Carthage; the eloquence,
mildness, and charity with which
he propounds his sentiments,
205. Birth of, at Tagosta in
Numidia, about the year 354;
Visits Rome: appointed to the
professorship of rhetoric at Milan;
conversion of from the Mani-
chean errors; becomes one of the
most biblical writers; appointed
coadjutor to the bishop of Hippo,
i. 289. His controversy with Pe-
lagius; his doctrine, 290. Re-
marks on his doctrine, 292. In-
creasing labours of, in exposing
the errors of Pelagius and Celes-
tius, 294. Characteristics of his
system, 296.

St. Bartholomew, i. 17.

St. Benedict, early life of, i. 318. His
manner of life; becomes the abbot
of a monastery; a tradition re-
specting, 319. Founds several mo-
nasteries in various parts of Italy;
his interview with Totila, the
Gothic king, 320. He predicts
his own death, 321. His death, in
the year 543; the rule of, i. 321.

St. Bernard, his letters, ii. 243.
Born at Fontaine, in Burgundy;
his rank; early life of, 259.
Retires to the monastery of Cis-
teaux; consecrated abbot of
Clairval; his virtue and wisdom;
his address to the duke of Gui-
enne; his censures on the monks,
260.

St. Chrysostom, sermons of, i. 242.
Appointment of, to the see of
Constantinople; his popularity,
246. His piety and fortitude;
his deposition, 247. His ex-
pulsion from his church; banish-
ment of, to Bithynia; his re-
stitution; enthusiasm of the
people, 248. Again ordered into
exile; his stratagem to escape
the watchful affection of his
people; fatal consequences at-
tending his departure into exile,
249. His solitude and priva-
tions; his extensive plans for

- the reformation of the church, 250. Death of, 251.
- St. Dominic**, the celebrated founder of the order of the Dominicans, a native of Castile, ii. 293. Reports circulated respecting his miraculous power, 294.
- St. Dunstan**, ii. 178.
- St. Francis**, born at Assisi, in Umbria; his parentage and early life; founder of the celebrated order of the Franciscans, ii. 295.
- St. Geneviève**, i. 306.
- St. James**, president and bishop of the church at Jerusalem, i. 13.
- St. John**, residence of, at Ephesus, i. 17. Restoration of, from his banishment at Patmos, by the emperor Nerva, i. 30.
- St. John Climacus**, a monk of Mount Sinai, his work, entitled "The Scale, or Climax," i. 328.
- St. John Damascene**, a celebrated writer, born at Damascus; his character, ii. 91. His treatises against the Iconoclasts, 92.
- St. Jude**, i. 17.
- St. Mark** establishes the church at Alexandria, i. 17.
- St. Nile**, the hermit of Sinai, a native of Constantinople; his poverty; an anecdote related of one of the hermits of Sinai, supposed to refer to him, i. 231. His polemical powers; espouses the cause of Chrysostom; his letter to the emperor Arcadius, 232. His escape when the Saracens invade Sinai; his son taken prisoner, 233. Discovers the fate of his son; return of to Mount Sinai, 233.
- St. Pachomius** erects monasteries in Egypt, i. 221.
- St. Patrick**, conversion of Ireland by; establishes a metropolitan church at Armagh, i. 254.
- St. Paul of Tarsus**, his character, i. 7. Miraculous conversion of, 8. Labours of, at Antioch, 11. Labours and journeys of, 13. Visits Athens, 14. Carried prisoner to Rome; liberation of, 17. He is supposed to have suffered crucifixion during the persecution of Nero, 26. His instructions to the church at Corinth, 34.
- St. Peter**, preaching of, imprisonment, and miraculous deliverance of, i. 5. Vision of, 11. His address to the assembly at Jerusalem, 12. Death of, 26. Did he visit Rome? ii. 3.
- St. Severin**, i. 306.
- St. Simon the Canaanite**, i. 17.
- St. Theodore of Jerusalem**, sufferings of, ii. 115.
- St. Theophanes**, sufferings of, ii. 115.
- St. Thomas**, i. 17.
- Sapricius and Nicephorus**, citizens of Antioch, anecdote related of, illustrative of the little estimation in which Christians held their lives, i. 119.
- Saracens**, the success of, ii. 34. Conquests of, 102. Establishment of, in the Eastern empire, 110. Learning and philosophy patronised by their sovereigns, 110. Invasion of Tuscany by; defeat of, by pope Benedict VIII., 181.
- Sarmatians**, the conversion of, i. 156.
- Sautre, William**, rector of Osithes in London, the first English martyr, ii. 312.
- Scripture**, commentators on, i. 353.
- Scotists**, ii. 306.
- Semi-Arians**, doctrine of, i. 192.
- Serenius Granianus**, proconsul of Asia, his letter to the emperor Adrian in behalf of the Christians, i. 64.
- Sergius**, patriarch of Constantinople, his doctrine that of Monothelism, i. 354. His formulary; his letter to pope Honorius on Monothelism, 355. Author of the Ecthesis, 357. His death, 358.
- Sergius I.**, pope, exile of, ii. 29. His death, 59.
- Sergius II.**, pope, death of, ii. 103.
- Sergius III.**, pope, infamy and death of, ii. 161.
- Sergius IV.**, pope, ii. 180.
- Seval**, archbishop of York, resists the encroachments of the Italian clergy, ii. 285.
- Severian**, pope, ii. 357.
- Severinus**, pope, ii. 26.
- Severus**, emperor, i. 84. Persecution of the Christians under, i. 96. Death of, 103.
- Sextus IV.**, pope, ii. 349.
- Sicilian Vespers**, ii. 287.
- Silverian**, pope, deposition of, by Belisarius; his exile and death, ii. 19.
- Silvester II.**, pope, ii. 180.
- Simeon**, second bishop of Jerusalem, martyrdom of, i. 58.
- Simeon the younger**, a writer celebrated for his asceticism, particularly exhibited in one of his discourses on prayer, ii. 237.
- Simon**, Basilides, Menander, Sa-

- turninus, and Carpocritus, primitive schismatics, i. 88.
- Simon Magus, i. 38.
- Simony, ii. 180.
- Sisinius, pope, ii. 60.
- Sixtus, bishop of Rome, martyrdom of, i. 116.
- Sopater, the philosopher, i. 162.
- Sophronius, a monk of Syria, his exertions to stop the progress of Monothelism, i. 355. Appointed bishop of Jerusalem; his letter to Sergius, containing a confession of his faith; his address to the bishop of Dora on Mount Calvary, i. 357.
- Spain, establishment of the Saracens in, ii. 94.
- Stephen, bishop of Dora, his petition to the pope against Monothelism, i. 360.
- Stephen II., pope, implores the assistance of Pepin, king of France, against the Lombards, ii. 64. His reception at the French court, 65. Again appeals to Pepin; his sacrilegious letter to Pepin, 66. His death, 71.
- Stephen III., pope, ii. 72.
- Stephen IV., pope, his visit to Louis at Rheims, ii. 102.
- Stephen VI., pope, disinters and arraigns the corpse of his predecessor, Formosus, ii. 109. Death of, 160.
- Stephen VII., his death, ii. 163.
- Stephen IX., pope, simony of, ii. 186.
- Stephen, patriarch, death of, ii. 125.
- Stephen the Monk, martyrdom of, ii. 45.
- Stylites, Simeon, a native of Cilicia, his parentage; his austerities, i. 226. His extraordinary fasts, 227. His cell becomes the resort of the pious from distant lands, 228. Erects a column, on which he passes the remainder of his days, 229. His death; his character, 230.
- Studites Theodore, ii. 115.
- Symmachus, his election to the pontifical chair disputed, ii. 15.
- Sylvester I., pope, ii. 7.
- Sylvester II., pope, a mathematician and classical scholar, ii. 175.
- T.
- Tabellians, i. 49.
- Taborites, ii. 346.
- Tacitus, his erroneous opinion of the Christians, i. 25.
- Taio, bishop of Saragossa, his abstracts, i. 352.
- Taylor, William, burnt, ii. 325.
- Tertullian, native of Africa, his defence of the Montanists; remarks on his works, i. 213.
- Thaumatergus, Macarius, ii. 113.
- Theban legion, decimation of; execution of the second decimation of, i. 125. Their remonstrance to the emperor; their immediate and entire destruction, i. 126.
- Theodora, empress, governs the empire during the minority of her son Michael III.; her attachment to the image worshippers, ii. 118. Persecutes the Paulicians, 148. Her guilt and intrigues, 161.
- Theodora, daughter to the empress, ii. 161.
- Theodore, pope, ii. 26.
- Theodore, Iconoclast, bishop of Mysa; he recants, ii. 54.
- Theodore Balsamon, the patriarch of Antioch, ii. 258.
- Theodoric the Goth, ii. 16. An Arian; chooses a new pope on his own authority, 17.
- Theodosia, i. 231.
- Theodorus, a Greek monk, archbishop of Canterbury, i. 342. The penitential of, 343.
- Theodosius, emperor, i. 184. His extensive plans for the support of the church, 185. Liberal policy of, 186. His cruelty, 189. His repentance, 189. His edicts against the Arians, 190.
- Theodosius the younger, accession of, i. 251. Issues letters, summoning the chiefs of the church to assemble at Ephesus on the feast of Pentecost, 260. His answer to Cyril and Nestorius, 262. Further efforts of, for the tranquillity of the church, 264.
- Theodosius III. abdicates the throne and enters a monastery, ii. 33.
- Theodosius the Iconoclast, bishop, recants, ii. 54. His address to the assembly of Nice, 54.
- Theodulphus, bishop of Orleans, ii. 129.
- Theopaschites, believers in the sufferings of God, a title assumed by the followers of Peter the Fuller, i. 283.
- Theophanes, ii. 113.
- Theophania, empress, ii. 158.
- Theophanes, the Greek historian, ii. 237.
- Theophilus, bishop of Alexandria, i. 247.

Theophilus, emperor, his war with the Bulgarians; his defeat and death, ii. 111.

Theophilus, son and successor of Michael, his cruelty in his persecution of image worshippers, ii. 115. His war with the Saracens, 117.

Theophilactes, son of Romanus Leucapenes, elevated to the patriarchal chair, ii. 157. Death of, 157.

Theophilactes, a commentator on Scripture, ii. 237.

Thessalonica, the inhabitants of, massacred by order of the emperor Theodosius, i. 188.

Thomists, partisans of Thomas Aquinas, ii. 306.

Tiberius Cæsar, his character, i. 303.

Tiresias, patriarch, sends letters to pope Adrian with respect to image worship, ii. 49. Opens the council of Nice, 54.

Titus commands the army in Judea, i. 28. Takes possession of Jerusalem, 29.

Totona, a nobleman of wealth and influence; forms the design of elevating his brother Constantine to the papal chair, ii. 71.

Trajan, emperor, his hostility towards the Christians, i. 54. His answer to Pliny, i. 57.

Transubstantiation, ii. 128.

Trullo, council of, met in 692, i. 368.

Trypho, a monk, elevated to the patriarchal chair, ii. 157.

Turks, ii. 118.

Tuscany, invasion of, by the Saracens, ii. 181.

U.

United Brethren, or Moravians, formation of the church of, in 1457, ii. 347.

Urban II., pope, ii. 219. His address to the council of Clermont, on the subject of the crusades, 224. Death of, 227.

Urban III., pope, ii. 252.

Urban IV., pope, ii. 285.

Urban VI., pope, death of, ii. 365.

Urgaret, William de, the distinguished counsellor of Philip the Fair, ii. 303.

Ursinus, pope, ii. 8.

V.

Valance, council of, the six canons of, confirmed by the councils of

Africa and Orange, and professed by the bishops of the apostolic see, ii. 143. An account of the decisions of, presented to Charles the Bald, 143.

Valens, emperor, a bigoted Arian; enormities committed by the sectarists under his auspices, i. 180. By the persuasions of his wife, receives baptism from Eudoxius, the Arian bishop of Constantinople; his zeal in support of his new creed, 181. Orders the murder of eighty Christian bishops, 182. Death of, in 378, 183.

Valentinian, emperor, i. 170. Death of, in 373, 183.

Valerian, emperor, commences an attack on the church, i. 108. His edict against the Christians, 111.

Vallombrosa, the celebrated convent of, founded by John Gualbert, a Florentine gentleman, ii. 283.

Vandal persecution, i. 211.

Vercelli, the church of, endowed with the complete public authority of the city; the first instance of such a grant, ii. 172.

Vespasian sent by Nero to Judea with a powerful army, i. 27. Recall of to Rome on the death of Nero, 287.

Victor I., pope, ii. 7.

Victor II., pope, ii. 186.

Victor III., pope, ii. 219.

Victor IV., pope, ii. 250.

Vigilius, pope, his opposition to the edict of Justinian; refuses to submit to the condemnation of the three chapters, i. 302.

Vigilius, a Roman deacon, elected pope, ii. 18. His death, 19.

Vitalian, a Gothic chief, obliges the emperor Anastasius to promise toleration to his orthodox subjects, i. 299.

Vitalian, pope, a strict disciplinarian; the introduction of music and singing into the service of the church ascribed to, ii. 27.

Vivia Perpetua, her narrative, written by herself, i. 97. Martyrdom of, 101.

W.

Waldenses, persecution of, in Toulouse, ii. 298. Crusades undertaken against, 302.

Waldo, Peter, founder of the Waldenses, ii. 297.

Wenceslaus, king of Bohemia, ii. 331.

Wickliffe, the celebrated reformer, birth of; his devoted attachment to the philosophical system of Thomas Aquinas, ii. 307. His vigorous attack against the corruptions of the Franciscans; deprived of his wardenship of Canterbury hall, ii. 307. His popularity; obtains the rectory of Lutterworth; persecution of, by the clergy; protected by the duke of Lancaster, 308. His system of theology, 309. Again charged with heresy; translates the Scriptures into English, 309. Death of, in 1387, 310. Circulation of his writings in Bohemia, 331. His writings condemned to the flames by the archbishop of Prague, 331.

X.

Xystus, bishop of Rome, death of, i. 112.

Z.

Zachary, pope, his character, ii. 62.

Zeno, a celebrated anchorite, a native of Pontus; his character, i. 238. Capture of Basilicus by; passes the Henoticon in 482, 252.

Zeno, son-in-law and successor of Leo, his vices; abdication of, i. 252.

Zisca, John, the Bohemian leader, ii. 346.

Zoe, empress, ii. 228.

Zosimus, pope, declares Pelagius and Celestius unjustly accused by the council of Carthage, i. 294. His policy; pronounces an anathema against Pelagius and his associate, i. 295.

THE END.

LONDON :
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-Street-Square.

1.

